



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

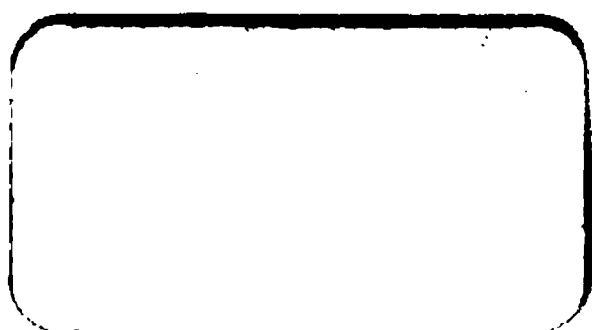
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>













12L  
40Y  
-Co 2  
v. 1



**A DIGEST**  
**OF**  
**The Laws of England**  
**RESPECTING**  
***REAL PROPERTY.***

**VOL. I.**



A DIGEST  
OF  
**The Laws of England**  
RESPECTING  
*REAL PROPERTY.*

VOL. I.





A  
**DIGEST**  
OF  
**The Laws of England**  
RESPECTING  
**REAL PROPERTY.**

---

BY WILLIAM CRUISE,  
OF LINCOLN'S INN, ESQ. BARRISTER AT LAW.

---

THE SECOND EDITION, REVISED AND ENLARGED.

VOLUME THE FIRST,

CONTAINING

A PRELIMINARY DISSERTATION ON TENURES.

Title 1. ESTATE IN FEE-  
SIMPLE.  
2. ESTATE IN TAIL.  
3. ESTATE FOR LIFE.  
4. ESTATE TAIL AFTER  
POSSIBILITY.  
5. CURTESY.  
6. DOWER.

Title 7. JOINTURE.  
8. ESTATE FOR YEARS.  
9. ESTATE AT WILL,  
AND AT SUFFER-  
ANCE.  
10. COPYHOLD.  
11. USE.  
12. TRUST.

---

LONDON:

PRINTED BY A. STRAHAN,  
LAW-PRINTER TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY;  
FOR J. BUTTERWORTH AND SON, FLEET-STREET,  
AND  
J. COOKE, DUBLIN.

1818.



TO

THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

JOHN LORD ELDON,

*BARON OF ELDON,*

IN THE COUNTY PALATINE OF DURHAM,

LORD HIGH CHANCELLOR OF GREAT BRITAIN,

THIS WORK

IS

WITH HIS LORDSHIP'S PERMISSION,

RESPECTFULLY DEDICATED.



**PREFACE**

**TO**

**THE FIRST EDITION.**

---

**A**LTHOUGH the Law of Real Property forms the most extensive and abstruse branch of our jurisprudence, yet no attempt has hitherto been made to reduce it to a distinct and comprehensive system. A Digest of this part of the Law is therefore here offered to the Profession ; in which, a systematic distribution is framed of the general principles of each title ; supported by abridgements of the cases, in which those principles have been established, or confirmed.

It is but of late years that this mode of treating legal subjects has been adopted. Our abridgements and treatises on particular titles of the law, formerly contained little more than a collection of the adjudged cases, that had been determined on each

title ; disposed without much method, and without establishing or deducing any general principles.

There was, however, one eminent exception ; the excellent Essay on Contingent Remainders by the late Mr. Fearne. The perusal of that admirable work, first suggested to the Author the idea of attempting to form a methodical arrangement of the general principles of the Law of Real Property. And upwards of twenty years since, he submitted to the profession his Essay on Fines, written avowedly on that plan.

The favourable reception with which the Profession honoured that attempt, encouraged him to proceed in discussing all the other titles belonging to this part of the law in the same manner. In the prosecution of this work he became every day more sensible, that the true mode of treating legal subjects, as well as other branches of science, is by a systematic distribution of abstract principles, illustrated and supported by adjudged cases. In this idea he was fully confirmed by the authority of the late Sir William Jones ; who has truly said, “ If law be a science, and

really deserve so sublime a name, it must be founded on principle, and claim an exalted rank in the empire of reason. But if it be merely an unconnected series of decrees and ordinances, its use may remain, though its dignity be lessened; and he will become the greatest lawyer who has the strongest habitual or artificial memory\*.”

Although the portion of time which the author has been able to spare from the avocations of his profession, has, for several years, been employed in the execution of this work, yet he is conscious that many omissions, and, he fears, errors, may be discovered in it. But such must be the case in every attempt of this nature. Those, who are most conversant in our law, will be most sensible of the impossibility of attaining, or even approaching to perfection. Such indeed is the condition of human knowledge, that the same observation is applicable to almost every branch of science.

A late learned and reverend prelate has justly remarked, that “ a system arising

---

\* Law of Bailments.

from the collection and arrangement of a multitude of minute particulars, which often elude the most careful search; and sometimes escape observation, when they are most obvious, must always stand in need of improvement \*.”

---

THE favourable reception which this Work has met with from the Profession, induced the Author to add to the present edition a Preliminary Dissertation on Tenures; together with a Chapter on the Statute of Frauds. And also to use his utmost endeavours, by a careful revision and correction of the whole, and by the addition of many new cases, to render it more complete.

---

\* Preface to Doctor Lowth's Grammar.



## ANALYSIS OF THE DIGEST.

- REAL PROPERTY.**
- 1. Several Kinds.
    - Tenures by which it is held.
      - 1. Corporeal or Land:
        - Estates therein.
          - 1. Quantity of Interest.
            - 1. Freehold.
              - 1. Estate in Fee Simple.
              - 2. Estate in Tail.
              - 3. Estate for Life.
              - 4. Estate Tail after Possibility, &c.
              - 5. Curtesy.
              - 6. Dower.
              - 7. Jointure.
            - 2. Less than Freehold.
              - 1. Estate for Years.
              - 2. Estate at Will, and at Sufferance.
            - 3. Customary.
              - Copyhold.
            - 4. Equitable.
              - 1. Use.
              - 2. Trust.
            - 5. Upon Condition.
            - 6. As a Pledge or Security.
              - 1. Estate by Statute Merchant, &c.
              - 2. Mortgage.
          - 2. Time of Enjoyment.
            - 1. Possession.
            - 2. Remainder.
            - 3. Reversion.
          - 3. Number and Connexion of the Tenants.
            - 1. Severalty.
            - 2. Joint-tenancy.
            - 3. Coparcenary.
            - 4. Common.
        - 2. Incorporeal.
          - 1. Advowson.
          - 2. Tithes.
          - 3. Common.
          - 4. Ways.
          - 5. Offices.
          - 6. Dignities.
          - 7. Franchises.
          - 8. Rents.
    - 2. Title thereto.
      - 1. Descent.
      - 2. Purchase.
        - 1. Escheat.
        - 2. Prescription.
        - 3. Alienation.
          - 1. Deed.
          - 2. Matter of Record.
            - 1. Private Act.
            - 2. King's Grant.
            - 3. Fine.
            - 4. Recovery.
          - 3. Special Custom.
          - 4. Devise.



## TABLE OF THE TITLES.

---

VOL. I.		VOL. III.	
Title 1.	Estate in Fee Simple.	Title 21.	Advowson.
2.	Estate Tail.	22.	Tithes.
3.	Estate for Life.	23.	Commons.
4.	Estate Tail after Possibility.	24.	Ways.
5.	Curtesy.	25.	Offices.
6.	Dower.	26.	Dignitaries.
7.	Jointure.	27.	Franchises.
8.	Estate for Years.	28.	Rents.
9.	Estate at Will, &c.	29.	Descent.
10.	Copyhold.	30.	Escheat.
11.	Use.	31.	Prescription.
12.	Trust.		
VOL. II.		VOL. IV.	
13.	Estate on Condition.	32.	Deeds.
14.	Estate by Statute Merchant, &c.		
15.	Mortgage.	VOL. V.	
16.	Remainder.	33.	Private Acts.
17.	Reversion.	34.	King's Grants.
18.	Joint-tenancy.	35.	Fines.
19.	Coparcenary.	36.	Recoveries.
20.	Tenancy in Common.	37.	Alienation by Custom.
		VOL. VI.	
		38.	Devise.



---

# C O N T E N T S

OF THE

## FIRST VOLUME.

---

### PRELIMINARY DISSERTATION ON TENURES.

#### CHAP. I.

##### *Of the Feudal Law.*

	Page
I. SOURCES of the English Law	I
13. Origin of Feuds	4
32. Definition of	10
36. Different Kinds	11
41. Investiture	12
47. Oath of Fidelity	14
52. Duties of the Lord and Vassal	15
55. Feudal Aids	16
56. Estate of the Vassal	id.
58. Was unalienable	17
60. Subinfeudation	id.
62. Estate of the Lord	18
64. His Obligation on Eviction	id.
67. Descent of Feuds	19
75. Feudum Talliatum	21
77. Investiture upon a Descent	id.
78. Relief	22
79. Escheat	id.

	Page
80. Feudal Forfeitures	22
86. The Lord might forfeit his Seigniorship	23
87. Feudal Jurisdiction	id.

## CHAP. II.

*Of the Ancient English Tenures.*

1. Introduction of Feuds	26
5. Division of Tenures	27
7. Tenure in Capite	29
14. Statute of Quia Emptores	30
15. Homage	31
17. Fealty	32
19. Tenure by Knight Service	id.
23. Incidents to it	33
24. Aids	id.
28. Reliefs	34
31. Primer Seisin	35
34. Wardship	id.
37. Marriage	36
39. Fines for Alienation	37
40. Escheat	id.
41. Tenure by Grand Serjeanty	id.
44. Abolition of Military Tenures	38

## CHAP. III.

*Of the Modern English Tenures.*

1. Tenure in Socage	39
5. By Petit Serjeanty	40
8. In Burgage	41
11. In ancient Demesne	id.
12. In Gavelkind	43
20. Incidents to these Tenures	id.
28. Changes in Socage by Stat. 12 Charles II.	45
32. Origin and Nature of Manors	47
38. Of Courts Baron	49

	Page
41. Superior and Inferior Manors	50
45. How Manors are destroyed	51
50. Tenure in Villenage	52
51. Copyholds	53
57. Free Copyholds	54
60. Tenure in Frankalmoign	55

## TITLE I.

### ESTATE IN FEE SIMPLE.

1. Of Real Property	57
2. Land	58
6. Money to be laid out in Land	id.
7. Heir Looms and Charters	59
10. Incorporeal Property	id.
11. Of Estates in Land	id.
13. Estates of Freehold	60
23. Of Seisin	63
31. Abatement	65
33. Disseisin	id.
36. Abeyance of the Freehold	66
39. Who may have Freehold Estates	67
42. Estates in Fee Simple	68
47. Abeyance of the Fee	69
49. All other Estates merge in the Fee	70
52. Incidents to a Fee	71
53. Alienable	id.
55. Descendible to Heirs General	id.
56. Subject to Curtesy and Dower	72
57. Liable to Debts	id.
63. Of Crown Debts	74
67. How contracted	75
72. Bind the Lands when contracted	76
75. Into whose Hands soever they pass	77
76. How discharged	76
77. Estates in Fee forfeited for Treason	78
80. And for Disclaimer	id.
81. Qualified Fees	id.

## TITLE II.

### ESTATE TAIL.

#### CHAP. I.

##### *Of the Origin and Nature of Estates Tail.*

	Page
1. Of conditional Fees - - -	80
8. Statute <i>De Donis</i> - - -	83
12. Description of an Estate Tail - - -	85
13. Tail General and Special - - -	id.
14. Tail Male and Female - - -	86
17. Estates in Frank Marriage - - -	id.
19. Estates Tail are held of the Donor - - -	87
22. Modes of creating an Estate Tail - - -	88
23. What may be entailed - - -	id.
30. Who may be Tenants in Tail - - -	90
31. Incidents to Estates Tail - - -	id.
32. Power to commit Waste - - -	id.
37. Subject to Curtesy and Dower - - -	91
38. But not to Merger - - -	id.
40. Tenant in Tail has a Right to the Title Deeds - - -	92
41. Is not bound to pay off Incumbrances - - -	id.

#### CHAP. II.

##### *Of the Power of Tenant in Tail over his Estate, and the Modes of barring it.*

1. Can only alien for his own Life - - -	94
4. His Alienation not absolutely void - - -	95
6. Sometimes a Discontinuance - - -	id.
9. Sometimes voidable by Entry - - -	96
11. Creates a base Fee - - -	96
13. Cannot create an Estate to commence after his Death - - -	97
19. The Issue not bound by his Ancestor's Contracts - - -	101
26. Unless he confirms them - - -	102
28. Nor subject to his Debts - - -	103
29. Except Crown Debts - - -	id.



# CONTENTS.

xix

	Page
34. Tenants in Tail may make Leases	106
35. Are subject to the Bankrupt Laws	id.
37. And to Forfeiture for Treason	107
43. But not for Felony	109
44. Modes of barring Estates Tail	id.
50. And Money entailed	111

## TITLE III.

### ESTATE FOR LIFE.

#### CHAP. I.

*Of the Nature of an Estate for Life, and its Incidents.*

1. Description of	113
2. How created	114
10. Held of the Grantor	115
11. Not entailable	id.
15. Subject to Merger	117
17. Tenants for Life entitled to Estovers	id.
23. And to Emblements	118
28. May pray in Aid	120
29. Not bound to pay off Incumbrances	id.
30. But must keep down the Interest	id.
31. May alien their Estates	id.
33. When they may keep the Title Deeds	121
36. What Acts create a Forfeiture	122
46. Of General Occupancy	124
49. Estates <i>pour autre vie</i> vest in Executors	id.
52. Of Special Occupancy	125
57. Ecclesiastical Persons are <i>quasi</i> Tenants for Life	127

#### CHAP. II.

*Of Waste by Tenants for Life.*

2. Different Kinds of Waste	129
3. Felling Timber	130
13. Pulling down Houses	132

	Page
16. Opening Pits or Mines	132
20. Changing the Course of Husbandry	133
22. Destruction of Heir Looms	id.
23. Permissive Waste	134
27. Of the Action for Waste	id.
35. Waste restrained in Equity	136
42. The Timber belongs to the Person entitled to the Inheritance	138
50. May be cut down by Order of the Court of Chancery	142
55. Of the Clause, without Impeachment of Waste	144
62. How far restrained in Equity	146
70. Is annexed to the Privy of Estate	148
71. Of partial Powers to commit Waste	id.
74. Of Waste by Ecclesiastics	149
83. Of Accidents by Fire	152

## TITLE IV.

### ESTATE TAIL AFTER POSSIBILITY OF ISSUE EXTINCT.

1. How it arises	153
8. It has some Qualities of an Estate Tail	155
9. But is in Fact only an Estate for Life	id.
10. This Tenant has the Property of the Timber	id.
12. But is restrained from malicious Waste	156
16. His Privileges not grantable over	157

## TITLE V.

### CURTESY.

#### CHAP. I.

#### *Origin of Estates by the Curtesy, and Circumstances required to their Existence.*

1. Origin of Curtesy	158
3. Description of	159

## CONTENTS.

XX

	Page
5. Circumstances necessary to its Existence	159
6. 1°. Marriage	id.
8. 2°. Seisin	160
17. 3°. Issue	162
18. Who must be born alive	id.
19. In the Lifetime of the Wife	163
21. And capable of inheriting the Estate	id.
25. 4°. Death of the Wife	164
26. Curtesy in Gavelkind	id.
27. Who may be Tenants by the Curtesy	id.

## CHAP. II.

*Of what Things a Man may be Tenant by the Curtesy, and Nature of this Estate.*

1. Estates in Fee Simple	166
5. Estates Tail	167
11. Estates in Coparcenary and Common	169
12. Trust Estates	id.
13. Money to be laid out in Land	id.
15. Equities of Redemption	170
16. Incorporeal Hereditaments	id.
17. What Things are not liable to Curtesy	id.
18. Estates not of Inheritance	id.
22. Estates in Joint-tenancy	171
23. Reversions and Remainders	id.
24. Lands assigned for Dower	172
25. Copyhold Estates	id.
26. Nature of this Estate	id.
31. Forfeitable for Alienation	173
33. But not for Adultery	id.
34. This Tenant punishable for Waste	id.

## TITLE VI.

## DOWER.

## CHAP. I.

*Origin and different Kinds of Dower.*

	Page
2. Origin of Dower	175
8. Dower at Common Law	176
9. Dower by Custom	177
13. Dower <i>ad Ostium Ecclesie</i>	id.
16. Dower <i>de la Plus Belle</i>	178
17. Dower is a moral Right	id.

## CHAP. II.

*Circumstances required to give a Title to Dower, and what Persons are capable of it.*

1. Circumstances required	180
2. 1°. Marriage	id.
5. How it must be proved	181
6. Effect of Divorces	id.
11. 2°. Seisin of the Husband	182
20. Seisin of Gavelkind Lands	184
22. 3°. Death of the Husband	185
23. Who may be endowed	id.
24. Who are incapable of Dower	id.
25. Aliens	186
27. Jewesses	id.
28. Women stolen	id.

## CHAP. III.

*Of what Things Dower may be had, and Nature of this Estate.*

1. Estates in Fee-simple	187
4. Estates Tail	188
7. Qualified or base Fees	id.

# CONTENTS.

xxiii

	Page
9. Estates in Coparcenary, and in Common	189
12. Equities of Redemption of some Kind	id.
14. Where a Widow has an Election	id.
15. What Things are not liable to Dower	190
16. Estates in Joint-tenancy	id.
17. Estates not of Inheritance	id.
18. Wrongful Estates	id.
20. Lands assigned for Dower	id.
24. A Castle	191
25. Uses and Trusts	192
26. Mortgages	id.
27. Where Dower and Curtesy cease with the Estate	id.
28. Nature of this Estate	id.
30. The Dowress entitled to Emblements	193
31. Restrained from Alienation	id.
33. And from Waste	194
35. Not subject to her Husband's Incumbrances	id.

## CHAP. IV.

### *Assignment of Dower, and Modes of recovering it.*

1. Necessity of an Assignment	195
3. Who may assign	196
7. How it is to be assigned	id.
20. Remedies against an improper Assignment	199
24. Effect of an Assignment of Dower	id.
27. Actions for recovering Dower	200
28. May be obtained in Equity	id.

## CHAP. V.

### *What will operate as a Bar or Satisfaction of Dower.*

2. Attainder of the Husband	202
6. Attainder of the Wife	203
7. Elopement with an Adulterer	id.
16. Detinue of Charters	205
18. Fine or Recovery	206
19. Bargain and Sale in London	id.
20. Jointure	id.
21. A Devise is no Bar of Dower	id.

	Page
25. Unless so expressed, and then the Widow has an Election	209
33. Sometimes held a Satisfaction	210
34. A Bequest of Personal Estate is no Bar to Dower	216

## TITLE VII.

### JOINTURE.

#### CHAP. I.

##### *Of the Origin and Nature of Jointures.*

1. Origin of Jointures	217
5. Definition of	219
8. Circumstances required	220
7. Must take Effect on the Death of the Husband	id.
10. And be for the Life of the Wife	id.
15. Must be limited to the Wife herself	221
16. In Satisfaction of her whole Dower	id.
17. And be so expressed or averred	222
21. And made before Marriage	223
22. Jointures which require the Acceptance of the Widow	id.
26. Cases where the Widow takes the Estate and Dower	224
27. Equitable Jointures	id.
31. Who may limit a Jointure	226
35. Who may take a Jointure	id.
36. An Infant is barred by a Jointure	id.
40. Nature of this Estate	228
47. A Rent-charge is usually given as a Jointure	229
48. Effect of the Eviction of a Jointure	230

#### CHAP. II.

##### *In what Cases a Jointress is entitled to the Aid of a Court of Equity.*

1. A Jointress is considered as a Purchaser	231
4. Though the Settlement be unequal	232
7. Relieved against a voluntary Conveyance	233
8. And against a satisfied Term	id.

## CONTENTS.

KXV

	Page
9. Not bound by Neglect during Coverture - -	233
12. Nor to deliver up Title Deeds - -	234
15. Sometimes allowed Interest for Arrears - -	235
16. Effect of a Covenant that the Lands are of a certain Value - - -	id.

### CHAP. III.

*What will operate as a Bar or Satisfaction of a Jointure.*

1. Fine or Recovery by the Wife - -	237
3. Not barred by the Attainder of the Husband - -	238
4. Nor by the Elopement of the Wife - -	id.
7. A Devise is no Bar to a Jointure - -	239
12. Unless so expressed, and then the Widow has an Election - - -	253
15. A Devise sometimes held a Satisfaction - -	id.

## TITLE VIII.

### ESTATE FOR YEARS.

#### CHAP. I.

*Of the Origin and Nature of Estates for Years.*

1. Estates less than Freehold - -	256
2. Origin of Estates for Years - - -	id.
4. Description of - - -	257
11. Introduction of long Terms - -	258
12. A Tenant for Years has no Seisin - -	259
14. But must make an Entry - -	260
17. An Entry before the Lease begins is a Distiction - -	id.
20. Estates for Years may commence in future - -	261
21. And be assigned before Entry - -	id.
24. May determine by Proviso - -	262
25. Are Chattels - - -	263
26. And vest in Executors - - -	id.
29. A Freehold cannot be derived from a Term - -	264

## CHAP. II.

*Of the Incidents to Estates for Years.*

	Page
1. Tenants for Years entitled to Estovers	266
2. But not allowed to commit Waste	id.
12. Accidents by Fire	269
14. Clause without Impeachment of Waste	270
19. When entitled to Emblements	id.
21. Estates for Years subject to Debts	271
25. May be limited for Life with a Remainder over	272
26. But not entailed	id.
29. Merged by a Union with the Freehold	273
45. And also by Surrender	277
46. Equity relieves against Merger	id.
49. Alienable	id.
50. How forfeited	278

## TITLE IX.

## ESTATE AT WILL, AND AT SUFFERANCE.

## CHAP. I.

*Of an Estate at Will.*

1. Description of	279
3. May arise by Implication	280
7. Is at the Will of both Parties	id.
8. Not grantable over	id.
10. This Tenant sometimes entitled to Emblements	281
12. Cannot commit Waste	id.
14. What determines this Estate	id.
19. Six Months Notice to quit necessary	282
20. Tenancies from Year to Year	id.



## CONTENTS.

xxvii

	Page
28. Bind the Persons in Reversion - -	284
30. And devolve to Executors - -	285
32. Six Months Notice to quit necessary - -	286

### CHAP. II.

#### *Of an Estate at Sufferance.*

1. Description of - -	287
6. This Tenant to pay double Rent after Notice -	288
7. Who may give Notice -	id.
8. At what Time Notice may be given -	id.
10. Acceptance of Single Rent no Bar to Recovery -	289
12. Tenants giving Notice to quit, and after holding over, to pay Double Rent - -	id.

---

## TITLE X.

### COPYHOLD

#### CHAP. I.

#### *Of the Nature of Copyholds.*

2. Description of - -	292
6. Free Copyholds - -	293
10. Circumstances necessary to their Existence -	295
11. A Manor - -	id.
13. A Court - -	id.
24. The Things granted must be Parcel of the Manor -	297
25. And demised or demisable by Copy -	298
33. What destroys the Custom of granting -	300
40. What may be granted by Copy -	302
46. Copyholders may have Estates in Fee -	303
47. And Estates Tail - -	304
51. And Estates for Life - -	305
53. No general Occupancy of Copyholds -	id.

	Page
54. But special Occupancy is allowed	305
58. Copyhold Customs	307
61. How proved	308
64. Copyhold Jurisdictions	id.

## CHAP. II.

*Of Copyhold Grants.*

1. Nature of	311
4. All Lords of Manors may make Grants	312
11. Provided they have a lawful Estate	313
13. Though under Personal Disabilities	314
15. A Steward may make Grants	id.
19. To whom Grants may be made	315
22. The Custom must be observed	316
31. Copyhold Grants take place of many other Estates	320

## CHAP. III.

*Of the Incidents to Copyholds.*

1. Copyholders subject to Fealty	322
4. Entitled to Estovers	323
8. But cannot in general commit Waste	324
16. Copyholds are descendible	326
18. Alienable and devisable	id.
20. May be leased for Years	id.
23. Not liable to Debts	327
24. Subject to Free Bench	id.
36. Which is barred by a Jointure	329
38. And by the Alienation of the Husband	330
45. Or even an Agreement to convey	332
49. And by Forfeiture	333
50. And by a Grant of the Freehold to the Husband	id.
51. A Devise may bar Free Bench	334
53. Subject to Curtesy	id.
58. What Statutes extend to Copyholds	335

# CONTENTS.

xxix

## CHAP. IV.

### *Of Fines and Heriots.*

	Page
1. Fines upon Descent	337
3. Upon Voluntary Grants	338
4. Upon Admission of Tenants by the Curtesy or in Free Bench	id.
5. Upon Alienation	id.
8. Upon a Devise	339
10. Not due from Remainder-men	id.
13. Without a Special Custom	340
15. Nor unless there is an Alteration of the Tenant	341
18. Or an Agreement to surrender	id.
20. Only due on Admittance	342
26. Fines on Change of the Lord	343
30. No more than Two Years Value can be demanded	347
41. Except on Voluntary Grants	350
43. Fines must be assisted severally	id.
45. How recovered	351
49. Of Heriots	352

## CHAP. V.

### *Of the Forfeiture of Copyholds.*

2. Attainder of Treason or Felony	356
5. Alienation contrary to the Custom	357
8. Leases contrary to the Custom	358
12. Unless by Licence of the Lord	359
14. A Covenant that a Person shall enjoy is no Forfeiture	id.
18. Waste	360
21. Disclaiming Tenure	361
23. Refusal to perform Services	id.
28. Refusal to pay Fines	362
31. Refusal to pay Rent	363
34. Non-appearance of the Heir to be admitted	id.
39. Of a Person in Remainder	367
41. Of a Surrenderee	369

## CONTENTS.

	Page
42. Of a Devisee - - -	369
45. Who may forfeit - - -	370
50. Extent of a Forfeiture - -	371
52. Where Presentment is necessary -	id.
54. What dispenses with a Forfeiture -	372
61. Who may take Advantage of a Forfeiture -	374
63. Where Equity relieves - - -	id.
67. Where Relief has been refused -	376

## CHAP. VI.

*Of the Extinguishment and Suspension of Copyholds.*

2. Surrender to the Lord - - -	379
5. Release to the Lord - - -	380
7. Conveyance by the Lord to the Copyholder -	id.
10. Enfranchisement - - -	381
17. Escheat or Forfeiture - - -	384
18. When the Lands cease to be demisable -	id.
19. Suspension of Copyholds - - -	id.

## TITLE XI.

## USE.

## CHAP. I.

*Of the Origin of Uses.*

2. Origin of Uses - - -	386
6. Of the <i>Fidei Commisum</i> - - -	388
12. Jurisdiction of the Chancellors over Uses -	389
14. Introduction of the Writ of Subpoena -	390

CHAP. II.

*Of the Nature and Quality of a Use before the Statute  
27 Hen. VIII.*

	Page
1. Nature of a Use - - -	394
8. Necessity of Confidence in the Person -	397
12. And of Privity of Estate - -	398
15. Who might be seised to Uses - -	399
20. What might be conveyed to Uses -	400
21. Rules by which Uses were governed -	401
22. Could not be raised without a Consideration -	id.
23. Were alienable - - -	id.
27. Without Words of Limitation - -	402
28. Might change by Matter subsequent -	id.
29. Might commence in futuro - -	403
30. Were revocable - - -	id.
31. Not an Object of Tenure - - -	id.
34. Not subject to Dower or Curtesy -	404
35. Not extendible or Assets - - -	id.
36. Devisable - - -	405
38. Descendible - - -	id.
40. Inconveniences of Uses - - -	id.

CHAP. III.

*Of the Statute 27 Hen. VIII. of Uses.*

1. Statement of the Statute - - -	409
7. Circumstances necessary to its Operation -	412
8. 1°. A Person seised to a Use - -	id.
9. What Persons may be seised to Uses -	id.
13. Of what Estate - - -	413
14. Estate Tail - - -	414
19. Estate for Life - - -	417
22. What may be conveyed to Uses -	id.
26. 2°. A <i>Cestui que Use</i> in esse - -	418

	Page
31. In what Cases the Statute operates	419
39. 3°. A Use in <i>esse</i>	423
40. The Statute then transfers the actual Seisin	id.
42. Saving of all former Estates	424

## CHAP. IV.

*Of the Modern Doctrine of Uses.*

1. Construction of the Statute	429
3. Of Contingent Uses	430
4. Uses arising upon the Execution of Powers	431
9. Conveyances derived from the Statute of Uses	433
16. Whether the Statute extends to Devises	436
20. Resulting Uses	438
36. Uses by Implication	442
39. No Use results but to the Owner of the Estate	443
41. Nor against the Intent of the Parties	id.
45. Parol Evidence allowed to shew the Intent	444
46. Nor, which is inconsistent with the Estate	id.
51. Nor on a Grant of an Estate Tail	445
55. Nor on a Devise	447
56. What Use results to a Tenant in Tail	id.

## TITLE XII.

## TRUST.

## CHAP. I.

*Of the Origin and Nature of Trust Estates.*

1. Origin of Trusts	452
3. Description of	453
4. A Use limited upon a Use	id.
12. Limitation to Trustees to pay over the Rents	455
15. Trust for the separate Use of a Woman	456
20. Trust to sell or to raise Money	457

# CONTENTS.

xxxiii

	Page
29. Or for any other Purpose to which a Seisin is necessary	460
33. A Trust Estate limited after Payment of Debts vests immediately	462
34. Terms for Years limited in Trust	id.
35. How Trusts may be declared	463
39. Resulting or implied Trusts	464
40. Contract for a Purchase	id.
41. Purchase in the Name of a Stranger	id.
47. Purchase with Trust Money	466
51. Conveyance without Consideration	468
54. A Trust declared in part	469
56. Or which cannot take effect	470
60. Where no Appointment is made	471
61. Renewal of a Lease by a Trustee	id.
63. Or by a Person having a particular Estate	472
65. Where there is Fraud	473
66. Trusts of Copyholds	id.
72. A Purchase in the Name of a Child is an Advance-ment	474
80. Exception—Children emancipated	479
82. And also a Wife	id.
85. No Trust between Lessor and Lessee	480
87. All Trusts are Executory	id.
89. Who may be Trustees	481

## CHAP. II.

*Of the Rules by which Trust Estates of Freehold are governed.*

1. A Trust is equivalent to the Legal Ownership	483
5. Trusts are alienable	484
8. Devisable and descendible	485
9. May be entailed	id.
10. And also limited for Life	id.
11. Subject to Curtesy	486
15. But not to Dower	488
22. Nor to Free Bench	490
25. Subject to Forfeiture for Treason	491

	Page
27. But not for Felony	492
29. Not subject to Escheat	493
30. Liable to Crown Debts	id.
31. And to Debts due to private Persons	id.
35. Merge in the Legal Estate	494
37. Where a Legal Estate is a Bar in Ejectment	495
40. Where a Reconveyance will be presumed	496

## CHAP. III.

*Of the Rules by which Trust Terms are governed.*

2. Terms in Gross	499
7. Terms attendant on the Inheritance	500
10. How Terms become attendant	502
22. When a Term is in Gross	506
27. A Term attendant may become a Term in Gross	509
29. A Term attendant is Part of the Inheritance	510
31. Is real Assets	id.
32. Not forfeited for Felony	511
33. Trust Terms protect Purchasers from Mesne Incumbrances	id.
40. And also from Dower	515
43. Must be assigned to a Trustee for the Purchaser	516
45. A Term will not protect the Heir against Dower	519
48. Nor the Assignees of a Bankrupt	520
49. Neither Jointure nor Curtesy barred by a Term	id.
51. Where a Term is a Bar in Ejectment	521

## CHAP. IV.

*Of the Estate and Duty of Trustees.*

1. Estate of Trustees	523
4. Duty of Trustees	524
9. Their Acts shall not prejudice the Trust	525
10. Exception—Conveyance without Notice	id.
15. Where Purchasers are bound to see Trusts performed	526



# CONTENTS.

XXXV

	Page
22. Where they are not bound	528
30. Where the Receipt of the Trustees is sufficient	530
36. Trustees have equal Power	532
38. Can derive no Benefit from the Trust	533
39. Bound to reimburse the <i>Cestui que</i> trust	id.
42. Have no Allowance for Trouble	534
44. But allowed all Costs and Expences	535
48. Trustees seldom permitted to purchase the Trust Estate	id.
58. Refusing to act, must release or disclaim	539
59. Discharged, and others appointed	id.



A DIGEST  
OF  
The Laws of England  
RESPECTING  
*REAL PROPERTY.*

---

PRELIMINARY DISSERTATION ON TENURES.

CHAP. I.  
*Of the Feudal Law.*

CHAP. II.  
*Of the Antient English Tenures.*

CHAP. III.  
*Of the Modern English Tenures.*

---

CHAP. I.  
*Of the Feudal Law.*

- |                                    |                                          |
|------------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| 1. Sources of the English Law.     | 60. Subinfeudation.                      |
| 13. Origin of Feuds.               | 62. Estate of the Lord.                  |
| 32. Definition of.                 | 64. His Obligation on Eviction.          |
| 36. Different Kinds.               | 67. Descent of Feuds.                    |
| 41. Investiture.                   | 75. Feudum Talliatum.                    |
| 47. Oath of Fidelity.              | 77. Investiture upon a Descent.          |
| 50. Homage.                        | 78. Relief.                              |
| 52. Duties of the Lord and Vassal. | 79. Escheat.                             |
| 55. Feudal Aids.                   | 80. Feudal Forfeitures.                  |
| 56. Estate of the Vassal.          | 86. The Lord might forfeit his Seignory. |
| 58. Was unalienable.               | 87. Feudal Jurisdiction.                 |

## SECTION 1.

Sources of  
the English  
law.

**I**T is generally agreed that the laws of England are derived from those of the northern nations, who, migrating from the forests of Germany, overturned the Roman empire, and established themselves in the ~~southern part of Europe~~.

2. Both the Danes and Saxons were undoubtedly swarms from the ~~northern~~ hive: it may therefore be presumed that the description which Tacitus has left ~~us~~ of the manners and customs of the Germans is in every respect applicable to them; and as the Saxons, upon their establishment in England, exterminated rather than subdued the ~~antient~~ inhabitants, they introduced their laws, without adopting the smallest portion of those which prevailed among the ~~antient~~ Britons.

3. The French nation also derive their origin from a tribe of ~~German~~s, who crossed the Rhine under Clovis, and established themselves in the northern provinces of France.

4. The different German tribes were first governed by codes of laws formed by their respective chiefs. One of the ~~most~~ ~~antient~~ of these is the Salic law, which is generally supposed to have been written in the fifth century.

Esprit des  
Loix, l. 28.  
c. 1.

5. Montesquieu says the tribe of the Riparian Franks, having united themselves to the ~~Salian~~ Franks, under Clovis, preserved their ~~original~~ customs. That Theodoric King of Austrasia, got them reduced into writing: He also collected the Laws of the Bavarians and Germans, who were subject to his Kingdom. Charlemagne, who was the first conqueror of the Saxons, gave them a code of laws, which is still extant.

6. While Clovis and his descendants governed

France, that country was ruled by the Theodosian code, and the laws of the different German tribes, who had settled there. But the Theodosian code was in course of time abrogated or forgotten; because great advantages were allowed to those who lived under the Salic law.

7. During the reigns of the first French monarchs, a general assembly of the nation took place every year, in the month of March, afterwards in the month of May; where many ordinances were made, which acquired the force of law, and were called *capitularia*.

8. The introduction of feuds produced a variety of regulations, inconsistent with the antient codes of laws; and France became at that time divided into an infinite number of small seignories, whose lords acknowledged a feudal dependency only, not a political one, on the monarch. In consequence of this circumstance it became impossible that they should all be regulated by the same laws. The codes of the Germans and the *capitularia* were superseded by these local customs: each seignory and province had its own; and there were scarce two seignories in the whole kingdom whose customs agreed in every particular.

Montesq.  
l. 28. c. 9.

Idem, c. 12.

9. All these customs were reduced into writing, by the direction of the kings of France, in the course of the fifteenth century, and authenticated by the most eminent lawyers and magistrates of the different provinces; but they had in general been put into writing by private individuals, long before that period.

10. Normandy, like all the other provinces of France, was governed by its own customs; when it was ceded to Rollo, in the year 912, he caused an enquiry to be made into its antient usages, and added his sanction to their former authority. Now

Houard's  
Littleton,  
Preface.

as Normandy did not experience those troubles and revolutions which disturbed the other parts of France, during the tenth and eleventh centuries, it is generally supposed that the original laws and customs of the Franks were preserved with more purity, and suffered less from a mixture of the canon and civil law, in Normandy, than in any other province of France.

11. Upon the establishment of the Normans in England, the whole customary law of that province, which according to Basnage, one of its best commentators, had been already reduced into writing, was introduced here. And as our kings had great possessions in France, and frequently visited that country for two centuries after the conquest, they borrowed from the French many of the improvements which were made in their jurisprudence, and established them in England.

12. If these facts are admitted, it will follow that the primeval customs of the Germans, as described by Tacitus, the codes of the different German tribes,\* together with the laws of the Germans during the middle ages; the *capitularia* of the French monarchs of the two first races; and the customs of the different provinces of France, particularly those of Normandy, are the real sources from which our antient laws can, with any certainty, be deduced.

Origin of  
Feuds.

13. Upon these grounds I shall proceed to enquire into the origin and nature of feuds. In the ninth and tenth centuries there were only two tenures, or modes of holding land, upon the continent; which were called allodial and feudal. Allodial lands were those whereof the owner had the *dominium di-*

---

\* Sir Henry Spelman says, 'In legibus Henrici I. Regis Angliæ multa reperio e lege Salica deprompta; interdum nominatim, interdum verbatim.' Gloss. voce Lex.

*rectum et verum* ; the complete and absolute property, free from all services to any particular lord. *Allo-*  
*dium proprietas quæ a nullo recognoscitur. Tenere in*  
*allodium, id est in plenam et absolutam proprietatem.*  
*Habet integrum et directum dominium, quale a prin-*  
*cipio de jure gentium fuit distributum & distinctum.*  
So that the owner of an *allodium* could dispose of it  
at pleasure, or transmit it as an inheritance to his  
children.

Dumoulin,  
Art. 46. n. 1.

¶ 14. A feud was a tract of land held by a volun-  
tary and gratuitous donation, on condition of fidelity  
and certain services ; which were in general of a mili-  
tary nature. The tenure of the feudatory was of the  
most precarious kind, depending entirely on the will  
and pleasure of the person who granted the feud.

15. We learn from Cæsar and Tacitus that the  
individual German had no private property in land ;  
that it was his nation or tribe which allowed him  
annually a portion of ground for his support ; that  
the ultimate property or *dominium verum* of the lands  
was vested in the tribe ; and that the portions dealt  
out to individuals returned to the public, after they  
had reaped the fruits of them. Thus Tacitus says,  
*Agri pro numero cultorum ab universis per vices*  
*occupantur, quos mox inter se secundum dignationem*  
*partiuntur. Facilitatem partiendi camporum spatia*  
*prestant ; arva per annos mutant, et superest ager.*

De Bello Gal.  
Lib. 6. c. 21.  
De Mor. Ger.  
c. 26.

16. With these ideas and this practice, the Ger-  
mans made conquests : when they acquired a province  
of the empire, the land became the property of the  
victorious nation ; each individual laid claim to a  
share of it ; a tract of ground was accordingly  
marked out for the leader of the expedition, and to  
the inferior orders, portions, corresponding to their  
respective merit and importance, were allotted.

17. As the quantity of land thus acquired was not sufficient to allow of an annual change, and at the increased knowledge of agriculture, and the refinement of manners which then took place, would have rendered such an annual change extremely inconvenient; the lands thus given became the permanent property of the occupiers.

18. The situation of a German tribe, on its first establishment in a conquered country, ~~was~~ <sup>the</sup> extremely precarious, the necessity of defence induced the chiefs to annex to each grant or allotment of land a condition of military service; a generality of writers have concluded from this circumstance that the allotments of land originally made to the individuals of a German tribe, on their first establishment in a conquered country, were mere *beneficia* or feuds; and have derived from thence the origin of the feudal law. But a variety of arguments may be produced to prove that the lands thus granted were not feuds.

19. It is universally admitted that feuds were originally voluntary and gratuitous donations, to be held at the mere will of the giver, who could resume them at pleasure. Now when the Germans first settled in the southern parts of Europe, they enjoyed a very great degree of liberty; upon the distribution of the lands in a conquered province, each individual claimed that portion of them to which his rank and services entitled him, not as a favour, but as a right; being the just reward of his toils. Nor can it be supposed that a people who did not conquer for their chiefs only, but also for themselves, should submit to hold their acquisitions as the voluntary and gratuitous donations of their leader; and on so precarious a tenure as his will and pleasure.



20. The feudal system was not generally established till some centuries after the settlement of the Germans in Italy and France. The circumstance of annexing a condition of military service to a grant of lands does not imply that they are held by a feudal tenure: for the possessors of allodial property, who were called in France *liberi homines*, were bound to the performance of military service.

21. Some very respectable French writers, among whom is Mons. Bouquet, derive the word *allodium* from *los*, which signifies lot, and conclude from this etymology, that allodial property was that which was acquired by lot, upon the first distribution of lands among the Franks.

Droit Publiq.  
Robertson's  
Hist. of  
Cha. 5. V. i.  
256.

22. The original idea of feuds appears to have been derived from the following circumstances. Tacitus says, the chief men among the Germans endeavoured to attach to their persons and interests certain adherents whom they called *Comites*. *Insignis nobilitas, aut magna patrum merita, principis dignationem etiam adolescentulis adsignant. Ceteri robustioribus ac jampridem probatis aggregantur; nec rubor inter comites aspici. Gradus quinetiam et ipse comitatus habet, judicio ejus, quem sectantur: magnaque et comitum æmulatio, quibus primus apud principem suum locus; et principum, cui plurimi et acerrimi comites. Hæc dignitas, hæ vires, magno semper electorum juvenum globo circumdari; in pace decus, in bello præsidium.*

DeMor. § 13.  
Montesq.  
B. 30. c. 3.  
Robertson,  
id. 260.

23. This custom was continued by the German princes in their new settlements; those *comites* or attendants were called *Vassi*, *Antrustiones*, *Leudes*, *Homines in Truste Regis*. The composition paid for the murder of a person of this description, (the only standard by which we are enabled to judge of the

Balus, V. 2.  
898—928.  
Montesq.  
id. c. 16.

rank and condition of persons in the middle ages,) was triple to that paid for the murder of a common freeman.

Id. c. 14.

Du Cange,  
Gloss. voce  
Fiscus.

24. While the German princes remained in their own country, they courted and preserved the favour of their *comites*, by presents of arms and horses, and by hospitality. Thus Tacitus says, *Exigunt (comites) principis sui liberalitate, illum bellatorum equum, illam cruentam victricemque frameam. Nam epuli et quamquam incompti, largi tamen apparatus pro stipendio cedunt.* When these princes settled in the countries they had conquered, they bestowed a part of the lands allotted to them, which were known by the name of *Fiscus Regis*, or *Domanium Regis*, on their adherents, as the reward of their fidelity.

Balus,  
V. 1. 453.  
V. 2. 875.

25. These donations were originally called *beneficia*, because they were gratuitous; in course of time they acquired the name of *feuda*. The persons to whom this kind of property was given, became thereby subject to fidelity, and the performance of military services, to those from whom they received them.

26. Mons. Bignon in his notes on the *Formulae* of Marculphus says—*Proprietate et fisco duæ notantur bonorum species, et velut maxima rerum divisio quæ eo seculo recepta erat. Omnia namque prædia, aut propria erant, aut fiscalia, propria seu proprietates dicebantur, quæ nullius juri obnoxia erant, sed optimo maximo jure possidebantur; ideoque ad hæredes transibant. Fiscalia vero beneficia, sive fisci, vocabantur, quæ a Rege ut plurimum, posteaque ab aliis, ita concedebantur, ut certis legibus servitiisque obnoxia, cum vita accipientis finirentur.*

Dissert. 11.

27. The learned Muratori, in his *Antiquitates Italicae Medii Ævi*, has given a dissertation on allo-

al and feudal tenures. He states that feuds derive their origin from the Germans, and were originally called *beneficia*. That the antient *vassi et vassalli* were persons who attached themselves to kings and princes, in order to acquire the privileges, to which those who formed a part of their families were entitled, and also in the hope of obtaining, from the liberality of their lords, *beneficia*, that is, the usufruct of a portion of their royal demesnes, during the lives of their lords. That whenever a person of noble birth attached himself in this manner to a prince, he took an oath of fidelity to him, and was afterwards called *vassus* or *vassallus*. That these words occurred in a *capitularium* of Louis the Pious, of the year 823. That to constitute a *vassus*, it was not necessary he should have a *beneficium*. That an *allodium* was an inheritance which might be alienated at the pleasure of the possessor: and the words, by which it was granted usually were, *ut proprietario jure teneat atque possideat; seu faciat inde quicquid voluerit, tam ipse, quamque hæredes ipsius*.

28. Although feuds were originally granted by kings and princes only, yet in a short time the great lords to whom the kings had allotted extensive tracts of land, partly from a disposition to imitate their superiors, and partly for the purpose of attaching persons to their particular fortunes, bestowed a portion of their demesnes, as benefices, or feuds. The greater part of the lands were however held by an allodial tenure, till the beginning of the tenth century, when the feudal system appears to have been generally adopted.

29. As allodial property was much more desirable than feudal, such a change appears surprising; espe-

cially when we are informed that allodial property was frequently converted into feudal, by a voluntary deed of the possessor.

Esprit des  
Loix, B. 31.  
c. 8.  
Hervé, V. 1.  
102.

30. The reasons which induced the proprietors of allodial lands to convert them into feuds are thus explained by the President Montesquieu. Those who held feuds were entitled to great privileges; the composition or fine for the commission of a crime, against a feudatory, was much greater than that for a person who held his lands by an allodial tenure. But the chief motive for this alteration was, to acquire the protection of some powerful lord; without which, in those times of anarchy and confusion, it was scarce possible for an individual to preserve either his liberty or his property. These and probably other reasons, with which we are unacquainted, produced an extension of the feudal tenure over the whole western world.

Giannone,  
B. 13. c. 3.

31. Feuds upon their first introduction were regulated by unwritten customs. In the year 1170, the Emperor Frederick Barbarossa directed a code of the feudal law to be compiled, which was accordingly executed, and published at Milan. It was called the *Liber Feudorum*, and was divided into five books, of which the two first, and some fragments of the three last, still exist, and are printed at the end of all the modern editions of the *Corpus Juris Civilis*. This work is probably no more than a collection of the customs most generally adhered to in feudal matters; and the constitutions of the Emperors Lotharius, Conrad, and Frederick, respecting feuds.

Definition of.

32. A feud is thus defined by Craig—*Est feudum beneficium, seu benevola et libera rei immobilis; aut æquipollens, concessio, cum utilis domini translatione;*

*retenta proprietate, seu dominio directo, sub fidelitate, et exhibitione servitiorum honestorum.*

33. It was *benevola et libera concessio*, for it was supposed to have been originally granted from motives of mere benevolence, and not for any sum of money, or other valuable consideration; or as it is expressed in the *Liber Feudorum*—*Tantum ex amore et honore* Lib.1. Tit.27. *acquirendum est feudum.*

*Rei immobilis.*—That is, nothing but land or immoveable property could be granted as a feud.

*Domini utilis.*—The Civilians distinguish between the *proprietas*, and the *dominium utile*. The *proprietas* is the absolute property; the *dominium utile* is only the right of using the thing for a certain time.

*Sub fidelitate.*—This was the bond of connexion between the lord and his vassal; it was the most essential circumstance in the contract, as will be shewn hereafter.

*Servitiorum.*—Services were also essential to a feud; they were generally of a military nature; but still feuds were not unfrequently granted in consideration of other services.

35. A modern French writer observes that it will appear, from an attentive consideration of the origin and progress of feuds, to have been the lord's intention, to secure a constant acknowledgement of the grant, as long as it subsisted; in which it differed from all other contracts; and from which a gift of a feud ought to be defined. *Une concession faite a la charge d'une reconnaissance toujours subsistante, qui doit se manifester de la maniere convenue.* Hervé, V. 1. 370—372.

36. The first and most general division of feuds was into proper, and improper ones. Proper feuds were such as were purely military, given *militia gratia*; without price or stipulation, to persons duly Different kinds.

qualified for military service. Improper feuds were those which did not in point of acquisition, services, and the like, strictly conform to the nature of a mere military feud, such as those that were sold or bartered for any equivalent, or granted free from all services; or in consideration of any *certain* return of service.

37. A feud was however always considered as a proper one, unless the contrary appeared; which could only be proved by a reference to the original investiture. Hence arose the maxim in the feudal law,—*tenor investituræ inspiciendus*. Improper feuds were distinguished from proper ones by those qualities only in which they varied: for in all other respects they were considered as proper feuds.

38. A *feudum ligium* was that for which the vassal owed fealty to his lord, against all persons whatever, without any exception. A *feudum non ligium* was that for which the vassal owed fealty to his immediate lord; but with an exception in favour of some superior lord.

39. A *feudum antiquum* was that which had descended to the vassal from his father, or some more remote ancestor. A *feudum novum* was that which was originally acquired by the vassal himself.

40. A feud granted by a sovereign prince, to hold immediately of himself, with a jurisdiction, was called *feudum nobile*, and conferred nobility upon the grantee; where a title of honor was annexed to the lands so granted, it was called *feudum dignitatis*.

41. Feuds were originally granted by a solemn and publick delivery of the very land itself, by the lord to the vassal in the presence of the *convassalli*, or other vassals of the lord, which was called *investitura*. It is thus described by Corvinus—*Investitura*

Craig. Lib. 1.  
Tit. 10. § 11.

Idem, § 12.

Investiture.

Lib. Feud. 2.  
Tit. 19.

Lib. 2. Tit. 8.

*per investiendum dicta, quod per eam vassallus, possessione, quasi veste induatur.* This ceremony was so essentially necessary to the creation of a feud, that it could not be constituted without it.—*Sciendum est feudum sine investitura nullo modo constitui posse.*

Lib. Feud. 1.  
Tit. 25.

42. The *convassalli* or *pares* were the only persons who could be witnesses to the investiture; their presence was required, as much for the advantage of the lord, as of the tenant: of the lord, that if the tenant was a secret enemy, or otherwise unqualified, he might be apprised of it; and that they might bear testimony of the obligations which he contracted: of the tenant, that they might testify the grant of the lord, and for what services it was made: lastly, for their own advantage, that they might know who was the tenant, and what land he held.

Idem, Tit. 28.

43. As it was frequently inconvenient for the lord to go to the lands intended to be granted, the improper investiture was introduced; which was a symbolical transfer of the lands, by the delivery of a staff, a sword, or a robe; which last being the most common method among the immediate vassals of kings and princes, gave rise to the word investiture.—*Investitura quidem proprie dicitur possessio;*

Lib. Feud. 2.  
Tit. 2.

*abusivo autem modo dicitur investitura, quando hasta vel aliud corporum quidlibet porrigitur a domino, se investituram facere dicente. Quem si quidem ab illo fiat qui alios habet vassallos, saltem coram duobus ex illis solemniter fieri debet: alioque licet alii intersint testes, investitura minime valet.*

Craig, Lib. 2.  
Tit. 2. § 4.

44. It appears from the above description that a proper investiture and possession are synonymous terms: whenever therefore investiture is distinguished from possession, it is an improper one.

45. The services which the vassal was bound to perform, were declared by the lord, at the time of the investiture, in the presence of the other vassals. As a verbal declaration of the terms on which a feud was to be held, might be forgotten or mistaken, it became usual for the tenant to procure a writing from the lord, containing the terms upon which the donation was made, witnessed by the other vassals; Craig, id. § 7. which was called a *breve testatum*. Where the lord could not conveniently come to the land, he delivered to the vassal a *breve testatum*, as an improper investiture; with a direction to some person to give him actual possession.

46. A *breve testatum* being a much better security than a verbal declaration, those who acquired feuds preferred this improper investiture, with a subsequent delivery of the possession, to a proper investiture. So that in process of time the feudal writers divided an improper investiture into three parts: a *breve testatum*, a *præceptum seisinæ*, and a *possessionis traditio*.

Oath of  
Fidelity.

Lib. Feud. 2.  
Tit. 7.

47. Upon the creation of a feud, a connexion and union arose between the lord and his vassal, considered by the feudal writers as stronger than any natural tie whatever, which the tenant was obliged to acknowledge by immediately taking the oath of fidelity to the lord, in these words — *Ego N. (vassallus) super hæc Sancta Dei Evangelia juro quod ab hac hora in antea usque ad ultimam vitæ meæ diem tibi M. (domino) meo fidelis ero contra omnem hominem; excepto Rege, vel priori domino meo.*

48. The idea of this oath appears to have been taken from the obligation which existed between the German princes and their *comites*. Thus Tacitus



*illis defendere, tueri, sua quoque fortia gloria  
eius assignare, precipuum sacramentum est.*

49. Fealty was so essentially requisite to the nature of a feud, whether a proper or an improper one, that it could not exist without it. For if lands were given without a reservation of fealty, the tenure was considered as allodial; but the oath of fealty might be dispensed with. Wright, 35.

50. When feuds became hereditary, another ceremony was added, called *homagium*, or *hominium*, which was performed in this manner. The vassal being uncovered and ungirt, knelt down before his lord, and putting his hands within those of his lord said—*Doxenie homo vester de tenementa quod de vobis teneo et tenere debeo, et fidem vobis portabo contra omnes gentes.* The lord then embraced the tenant, which completed the homage. Homage.

51. Fealty and homage have often been confounded by the feudal writers, but improperly. For fealty was a solemn oath, made by the vassal, of fidelity and attachment to his lord; whereas homage was merely an acknowledgement of tenure. Hervé, Tome 1. 352. Montesq. B. 31, p. 33.

52. In consequence of the feudal connexion, several duties arose, as well on the part of the lord as of the vassal. With respect to those which the lord owed to his vassal, it was a maxim of the feudal law that though the vassal only took the oath of fealty, and did homage; and the lord on account of his dignity took none, yet was he equally obliged, as if he had taken it, to do and forbear every thing, with respect to the vassal, which the vassal was bound to do and forbear towards the lord: so that the duties of both were in several respects reciprocal. Duties of the Lord and Vassal.

53. As for the duties which the vassal owed the lord, they are thus described in the Liber Feu-

Lib. 2. Tit. 6. *dorum*.—*Qui domino suo fidelitatem jurat, ista sex in memoria semper habere debet. Incolumne, tutum, honestum, utile, facile, possibile.* These were however all reduced to the two heads of counsel and aid. Under counsel was included not only giving faithful advice to the lord, but also keeping his secrets, and attending his courts; in order to enable him to distribute justice to the rest of his tenants.

54. Aid might either be in supporting the lord's reputation and dignity, or in defending his property. By aid to his person, the vassal was not only obliged to defend his lord against his private enemies, but also to assist him in his wars: and feuds were in general originally granted on condition of military service, which was to be done in the vassal's proper person, and at his own expence.

Feudal aids.

Du Cange  
Gloss. voce  
Auxilium.

55. The feudal law did not originally oblige the tenant to contribute to the lord's private necessities; the first feudal aid being purely military. But in course of time the lords claimed and established a right to several other aids; the principal of which were—1. To make the lord's eldest son a knight. 2. To marry the lord's eldest daughter. 3. To ransom the lord's person when taken prisoner.

Estate of the  
Vassal.

56. Having stated the obligations of the lord and tenant to each other; I shall now proceed to enquire into the nature of the estate or interest which each of them had in the land.

With respect to the estate of the vassal, we must recollect that as the original donations made by the French kings to their *fideles* and *leudes* were of a temporary nature; and as nothing more than the usufruct was given to them, so in the feudal law the *proprietas* was allowed to remain in the lord, and the vassal had only the *ususfructus*, or *dominium*

*utile* ; that is, a right to take and enjoy the profits of the land, as long as he performed the services due to the lord.

57. As to the duration of feuds, they were originally precarious, and might be resumed at the lord's pleasure. They were next granted for one year ; afterwards for life. In course of time it became unusual to reject the heir of the last tenant, if he was able to perform the services ; at length feuds became hereditary, and descended to the posterity of the vassal.

Lib. Feud. 1.  
Tit. 1.

58. In the first ages of the feudal law, the vassal could not alien the feud, without the consent of the lord ; neither could he mortgage, or otherwise subject it to the payment of his debts. It appears however from the *Liber Feudorum* that feuds were frequently aliened. By a constitution of the Emperor Lotharius, reciting that the alienation of feuds had proved extremely detrimental to the military services, which were due from the vassals, they were absolutely prohibited from alienating their feuds without the consent of their lords. This was confirmed by a law of the Emperor Frederick II.

Was unalienable.

Lib. 2. Tit. 55.

59. The consent of the lord was seldom given without his receiving a present ; from whence arose a general practice of paying the lord a sum of money for permission to alien a feud.

60. There was however a mode of disposing of part of a feud which does not appear to have been comprehended in the constitutions of Lotharius and Frederick. This was by a grant from the vassal, of a portion of his feud to a stranger, to be held of himself, by the same services which he owed to his lord.

Subinfeudation.

Lib. Feud. 2.  
Tit. 34. § 2.

61. This practice, which was called subinfeudation, became extremely common in France, during the eleventh and twelfth centuries ; but was prevented by an ordonnance of Philip Augustus in 1210, which directed that in future, where any estate was dismembered from a feud, it should be held of the chief lord.

Hervé, V. 1.  
101.

Estate of the  
Lord.

Wright, 30.

62. With respect to the estate or interest which the lord had in the lands, after he had granted them as a feud, it consisted of the *dominium verum*, with a right to the services reserved upon the grant ; and in case of failure in any of these, the lord might enter and take possession of the feud.

Lib. Feud. 2.  
Tit. 34. § 1.

63. Although the lord had the *dominium verum* of the lands, yet he could not alien or transfer his seignory to another, without the consent of the vassal. *Ex eadem lege descendit quod dominus, sine voluntate vassalli, feudum alienare non potest.* For the obligations of the lord and vassal being mutual, the vassal was as much interested in the personal qualities of his lord, as the lord was in those of his vassal.

His obligation on Eviction.

Lib. Feud. 2.  
Tit. 25. 30.

64. There was another obligation on the part of the lord of very considerable importance ; namely, that in case the vassal was evicted out of the feud, the lord was obliged to give him another feud of equal extent, or else to pay him the value of that which he had lost.

Ten. 38.

65. Sir Martin Wright doubts whether the obligation of the lord to protect and defend his vassal made him antiently liable on eviction, without any fraud or defect in him, to make a compensation for the loss of the feud ; inasmuch as it could hardly be imagined that while feuds were precarious, and

held at the will of the lord, by whom they were granted, without any consideration, the lord should be subject to such a loss. He was of opinion that the lord's obligation to compensate the vassal, in case of eviction, only prevailed as to improper feuds, for which a price had been paid, or an equivalent stipulated.

66. Craig agreed with Sir M. Wright. They however both acknowledge that none of the antient feudal writers make any such distinction; but that all admit the lord's obligation to compensate the vassal on eviction, to have been general.

67. We have seen that although feuds were originally granted at will only, yet in course of time they became descendible. It will therefore be necessary to enquire what rules of descent were established by the feudal law, where no particular mode of descent was directed by the original grant, for in such case the maxim was, *tenor investituræ est inspiciendus*. Descent of Feuds.

68. The first rule was, that the descendants of the person to whom the feud was originally granted, and none others, should inherit. Because, as the personal ability of the first acquirer, to perform the duties and services reserved, was the motive of the donation, it could only be transmitted by him to his lineal descendants. Craig, Lib. 1. Tit. 10. § 11.

69. In consequence of this rule the ascending line was in all cases excluded. Hence it is laid down in the *Liber Feudorum—Successionis feudi talis est natura, quod ascendentes non succedunt*; and a modern feudist has said—*Jus tamen feudale, adscendentium ordine neglecto, solos descendentes et collaterales, admittit. Quoniam qui feudum accipit, sibi* Lib. 2. Tit. 10. Corvinus, Lib. 2. Tit. 4.

Balus, V. 1.  
321.

*et liberis suis, non parentibus, prospicit.* Whereas in allodial property the ascending line was capable of inheriting.

70. All the sons succeeded equally, as was the case in France, even respecting the succession to the crown; during the first and part of the second race. But the frequent wars occasioned by these partitions caused a regulation that kingdoms should be considered as impartible inheritances, and descend to the eldest son.

71. In imitation of the sovereignty, the same alteration was made in the descent of the great feuds. By a constitution of the Emperor Frederick, honorary feuds became indivisible; and they, as also the military feuds, began to descend to the eldest son, because he was sooner capable of performing the military services than any of his brothers.

Lib. Feud. 1.  
Tit. 4.

72. Females were originally excluded, not only on account of their incapacity to perform the military services, but also lest they should carry the feud to strangers or enemies.

Lib. Feud. 1.  
Tit. 1. § 2.

73. The rule that none but the descendants of the first feudatory could inherit, was so strictly adhered to, that in case of a *feudum novum*, the brother of the first acquirer could not succeed to his brother; because he was not descended from the person who first acquired the feud. But in the case of a *feudum antiquum*, a brother or other collateral relation, who was descended from the first acquirer, might inherit.

Craig, Lib. 1.  
Tit. 10. § 11.

74. A mode was afterwards adopted of letting in the collateral relations of the first acquirer of a feud, by granting him a *feudum novum* to be held *ut antiquum*, that is, with all the qualities of an ancient

feud, derived from a remote ancestor; and then the collateral relations were admitted, however distant from the person who was last possessed of the feud.

75. To restrain this general right of inheritance in all the collateral relations, a new kind of feud was invented, called a *feudum talliatum*, which is thus described by Du Cange — *Feudum talliatum dicitur, verbis forensibus, hæreditas in quamdam certitudinem limitata; seu feudum certis conditionibus concessum, verbi gratia, alicui et liberis ex legitimo matrimonio nascituris. Unde si is cui feudum datum est moriatur absque liberis, feudum ad donatorem redit. Talliare enim est in quamdam certitudinem ponere, vel ad quoddam certum hæreditamentum limitare.*

Feudum talliatum.

Gloss. voce Feudum.

Craig, Lib. 1. Tit. 10. § 17.

76. It is observable that the principles of the feudal descent were peculiar to that tenure; and differed entirely from those of succession established by the Roman law; in which the heir was a person instituted by the ancestor, or appointed by the law to represent the ancestor, in all his civil rights and obligations. Whereas in the feudal law, the heir succeeded, not under any supposed representation to the ancestor, but as related to him in blood, and designated, in consequence of that relationship, by the terms of the investiture, to succeed to the feud.

77. When feuds became descendible, the lord, upon the death of every tenant, claimed a right of granting a new investiture to the successor, without which he could not enter into possession of the feud. This shewed that the right of inheriting was originally derived from the bounty and acquiescence of the lord: and these investitures were evidence of the tenure, as well as of the services which were due for the feud.

Investiture upon a Descent.

## Relief.

78. It was also customary for the lord to demand some present from the tenant, upon granting him investiture, which in course of time became part of the profits of the feud. It was called *relevium*, and is thus described by a feudal writer—

Schilt. Cod.  
§ 52.

*Relevium est præstatio heredum, qui cum veteri jure feudali non poterant succedere in feudis, caducam et incertam hæreditatem relevabant; soluta summa vel pecuniæ, vel aliarum rerum, pro diversitate feudorum.*

## Escheat.

79. As feuds were originally granted on condition of military or other services, it was deemed just that where there was no person capable of performing those services, the feud should return to the lord. Therefore, where a vassal died without heirs, the lord became entitled to the feud as an

Lib.2.Tit.86.

escheat. Thus it is said in the *Liber Feudorum*—  
*Si aliquis decesserit nullo in feudo relicto hærede, jus feudi ad dominum pertinere dicimus.*

Feudal  
Forfeitures.

80. Feuds having been at all times considered as voluntary donations, it was very soon established that every act of the vassal which was contrary to the connexion that subsisted between him and his lord, and to the fidelity he owed him; or by which he disabled himself from performing his services; should operate as a forfeiture of the feud.

Lib.2.Tit.23,  
24.

81. In the *Liber Feudorum* there is a long letter from Obertus de Orto to his son, respecting feudal forfeitures, which he says are not reducible to any general principles. He then proceeds in stating, that if the vassal omits to require an investiture from the heir of his lord for a year and a day after the death of the lord, and to take the oath of fealty to him, he shall lose his feud. So in the case of the death of the vassal, if the



heir does not require investiture from the lord within that time, he shall forfeit his feud.

82. If the vassal refused to perform the services which were reserved upon the investiture, he forfeited his feud. *Non est alia justior causa beneficii auferendi quam si id propter quod beneficium datum fuerit, hoc servitium facere recusaverit, quia beneficium amittit.* Lib. Feud. id.

83. If the vassal aliened the feud, or did any act by which its value was considerably diminished; he forfeited it. *Si vassallus feudum dissipaverit, aut insigni detrimento deterius fecerit, privabitur.* Zasins, 91.

84. If the vassal denied that he held his feud of the lord, by saying that he held it of some other person; or denied that the land was held by a feudal tenure, he forfeited it. Craig, Lib. 3. Tit. 5. § 1.

85. Every species of felony operated as a forfeiture of the feud; being the highest breach of the vassal's oath of fealty.

86. It has been stated that the feudal lord was equally bound to observe the terms of relation on his part. For if he neglected to protect and defend his tenant; or did any thing that was prejudicial to him, or injurious to the feudal connexion; he forfeited his seignory. Thus it is said in the Liber Feudorum—*Si dominus commisit feloniam, per quam vassallus amitteret feudum, si eam commiserit in dominum, feudi proprietatem etiam dominus perdere debeat.* The Lord might forfeit his Seignory. Lib. 2. Tit. 26. § 47.

87. The feudal lord had not only a right to the service of his vassals in war; but had also the privilege of determining their disputes in time of peace. Thus we read in the Liber Feudorum—*Si inter duos vassallos de feodo sit controversia, domini sit cognitio, et per eum controversia terminetur. Si vero inter dominum et vassallum lis oriatur, per pares curiæ a domino sub fidelitate debito conjuratos terminetur.* Feudal Jurisdiction. Lib. 1. Tit. 18. — 2. — 55.

Montesq.  
B. 30. c. 18.  
Hervé, V. 1.  
222—252.  
Robertson's  
Cha. 5. V. 1.  
67. 365.

88. The origin of the feudal jurisdiction is said to be derived from the following circumstances: By the laws of all the northern nations every crime, not even excepting murder, was punished by a pecuniary fine, which was called *fredum*. In the infancy of the northern governments, the chief occupation of a judge consisted in ascertaining and levying those fines; which formed a considerable part of the public revenue. When extensive tracts of land were granted as feuds, the privilege of levying those fines was always included in the grant; with a right to hold a court for the purpose of ascertaining them; from whence followed a jurisdiction over the vassals, both in civil and criminal matters.

Hervé, V. 1.  
263.

89. To all the nations descended from the Germans, justice was originally distributed in their general assemblies: nor did the king or chieftain pronounce sentence till he had consulted those persons who were of the same rank with the accused; without whose consent no judgement could be given.

Craig, Lib. 2.  
Tit. 2. § 10.

90. In imitation of this practice, every feudal lord had a court, in which he distributed justice to his vassals; and every freeman who held lands of him was bound, under pain of forfeiting his feud, to attend his court, there to assist his lord in determining all disputes arising between his vassals. And as all the tenants were of the same rank, and held of the same lord, they were called *pares curiæ*.

91. In the Liber Feudorum, Lib. 2. Tit. . it is said—*Si inter duos vassallos de feodo sit controversia, domini sit cognitio; et controversia per eum terminetur.* And in a law of the Emperor Conrad is the following regulation—*Si inter capitaneos controversia sit, coram rege finiatur; si inter valvasores, coram paribus curiæ.*

92. This practice appears to have been established so long ago as in the reign of the emperor Conrad I. A. D. 920, of whom there exists the following law—*Statuimus ut nullus miles episcoporum, abbatum, &c. vel omnium qui beneficium de nostris publicis beneficiis, aut de ecclesiarum prædiis, &c. tenent, &c. sine certa et convicta culpa, suum beneficium perdat, nisi secundum consuetudinem antecessorum nostrorum, et iudicium parium.*

Muratori ant.  
Med. Ævi.  
V. 2. 287.

## TENURES.

## CHAP. II.

*Of the Antient English Tenures.*

- |                                      |                                       |
|--------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Introduction of Feuds.</i>     | 28. <i>Reliefs.</i>                   |
| 5. <i>Division of Tenures.</i>       | 31. <i>Primer Seisin.</i>             |
| 7. <i>Tenure in Capite.</i>          | 34. <i>Wardship.</i>                  |
| 14. <i>Statute of Quia Emptores.</i> | 37. <i>Marriage.</i>                  |
| 15. <i>Homage.</i>                   | 39. <i>Fines for Alienation.</i>      |
| 17. <i>Fealty.</i>                   | 40. <i>Escheat.</i>                   |
| 19. <i>Tenure by Knight Service.</i> | 41. <i>Tenure by Grand Serjeanty.</i> |
| 23. <i>Incidents to it,</i>          | 44. <i>Abolition of Military Te-</i>  |
| 24. <i>Aids.</i>                     | <i>nures.</i>                         |

## SECTION 1.

Introduction  
of Feuds.

Spelman on  
Feuds.

Wright's Ten.  
63.

**I**T is now universally admitted that the feudal system, with its fruits and services, as established in Normandy, was first introduced into England by William the Conqueror, in those possessions which were granted by him to his followers; and that about the twentieth year of his reign the feudal system was formally and generally adopted.

1 Inst. 65. a.

Id. 1. b.

2. In consequence of this event it became a fundamental maxim, or rather fiction of our law, that all real property was originally granted by the King, and held mediately or immediately of the crown, in consideration of certain services to be rendered by the tenant. The thing holden was therefore called a tenement; the possessors thereof tenants, the manner of their possession a tenure. And Lord Coke says, "In the law of England we have not properly *allodium*, that is, any subject's land that is not holden."

3. Although feuds were not originally hereditary in those countries where the feudal law was first established, yet we find that feuds were, from the beginning, hereditary, where lands held by an allodial tenure were voluntarily converted into feuds. Thus Basnage, in his *Commentary on the Customs of Normandy*, says, that when Rollo became master of that province, he granted considerable portions of it to his companions, and to gentlemen of Brittany, as hereditary feuds; that he also recalled a number of the antient inhabitants, who had held their estates by hereditary right, and restored them to their possessions in as full and ample a manner as they had held them under the kings of France.

Tome 1. 153.  
edit. 1778.

4. When William I. established himself in England, he certainly granted to his followers the inheritance of all the estates which he distributed to them; for some of those estates are possessed by their descendants at this day: and when he persuaded the Anglo-Saxon proprietors to hold their lands by a feudal tenure, he as certainly allowed them to retain the inheritance.

5. Sir W. Blackstone observes that there seem to have subsisted among our ancestors four principal species of lay tenures, to which all others may be reduced; the grand *criteria* of which were the natures of the several services or renders that were due to the lords from their tenants. The services in respect of their quality were either free or base; in respect to their quantity, and time of executing them, were either certain or uncertain. Free services were such as were not unbecoming the character of a soldier or a freeman to perform; as to serve under the lord in the wars, to pay a sum of money, and the like. Base services

Division of  
Tenures.  
2 Comm. 60.

were such as were fit only for peasants, and persons of servile rank; as to plough the lord's land, to make his hedges, to carry out his dung, or other mean employments. The certain services, whether free or base, were such as were stinted in quantity, and could not be exceeded on any pretence; as to pay a stated annual rent, or to plough such a field for three days. The uncertain depended on unknown contingencies; as to do military service in person, or pay an assessment in lieu of it, when called upon, which are free services, or to do whatever the lord should command; which is a base or villein service.

6. From the various combinations of these services arose the four kinds of lay tenure which subsisted in England till the middle of the seventeenth century; and three of which subsist to this day. First, where the service was free but uncertain, as military service; that tenure was called chivalry, *servitium militare*, or knight service. Secondly, where the service was not only free, but also certain; as by fealty only, by rent and fealty, &c. That tenure was called *liberum socagium*, or free socage. These were the only free holdings or tenements; the others were villeinous or servile; as thirdly, where the service was base in its nature, and uncertain as to time and quantity, the tenure was *purum villenagium*, absolute or pure villenage. Lastly, where the service was base in its nature, but reduced to a certainty. This was still villenage, but distinguished from the other by the name of privileged villenage, *villenagium privilegiatum*; or it might be still called socage, from the certainty of its services, but degraded by their baseness into the inferior title of *villanum socagium*, villein socage.

Tenure in  
Capite.

7. Although, in the first instance, all the lands in England were held immediately of the king, yet in consequence of the right of subinfeudation which prevailed in those times, the king's chief tenants granted a considerable part of their estates to inferior persons, to hold of themselves; by which new or middle tenures were created; from whence arose several distinctions, as to the manner in which lands were held.

8. Estates might be held of the king, or of a private individual, in two ways; either as of his person, or as of an honor or manor of which he was seised; and every holding of the person was, strictly speaking, a tenure *in capite*; but still that expression was always confined to a tenure of the king, in right of his crown and dignity; or, as it was formerly expressed, *ut de corona*, or *ut de persona*; for wherever the holding was of the person of a subject, it was called a tenure in gross.

1 Inst. 108. a.  
12 Rep. 136.

Fitz. N. B. 3.

9. Tenure *in capite* was in general so inseparable from a holding of the person of the king, that if lands were granted by the king, without reserving any tenure, or *absque aliquo inde reddendo*, or the like; there the lands, by operation of law, should be held of the king *in capite*; because that tenure was the most advantageous to the crown.

Lowe's Case,  
9 Rep. 122.

10. Where an honor or barony, originally created by the king, returned to the crown, by forfeiture or escheat, the persons who held their lands of such honor or barony became tenants to the crown, and were said to hold of the king, *ut de honore de A.*, &c. This distinction of tenure was extremely important to those who held of such honors or baronies; for by an article of the *magna charta* of King Henry III. c. 31., it is declared that persons

2 Inst. 64.

holding of honors escheated, and in the king's hands, shall pay no more relief, nor perform more services, to the king, than they should to the baron, if it were in his hands.

Fitz, N.  
B. 5. 8.  
Dyer, 44.  
1 Inst. 108. a.  
St. 1 Edw. 6.  
c. 4.

11. Where lands were held of the king, as of an honor, castle, or manor escheated to the crown, the tenure was therefore not *in capite*. And where lands were granted by the king, to hold of him as of his manor of A., this was not a tenure *in capite*.

Estwick's  
Case,  
12 Rep. 135.

12. Thus where lands were granted by King Philip and Queen Mary; *tenendum de nobis ut de manerio nostro de Greenwich in capite*; it was resolved that the lands were held of the king, as of the honor, and not *in capite*. The reason was, that tenure of the king *in capite* was as much as to say tenure in gross, or of the person of the king. And though it appeared from antient records that formerly all tenures in gross, or of the person of a subject, were called tenures *in capite*, yet, of late time, *dicitur de rege solummodo terras teneri in capite*.

Case of  
Tenures in  
Ireland.

13. King James I., by a commission under the great seal, authorized certain commissioners to grant the manor of Dale to A. and his heirs. The commissioners granted the lands to A. and his heirs, to hold by knight service, as of his majesty's castle of Dublin. It was resolved by a majority of the judges in Ireland that this was not a tenure *in capite*.

Statute of  
Quia Emp-  
tores.

2 Inst. 501.

14. In the case of private individuals, any person might formerly, by a grant of lands, have created a tenure of his person, or of any honor or manor whereof he was seised. If no tenure was reserved, the feoffee would have held of the feoffor,



by the same services by which he held over. This doctrine, having been found to be attended with several inconveniences, was altered in the reign of Edward I. by the statute *Quia emptores terrarum*, 18 Ed. 1. c. 1. 1 Inst. 98. b. which directs that upon all sales or feoffments of lands, the feoffee shall hold the same, not of his immediate feoffor, but of the chief lord of the fee, of whom such feoffor himself held it.\* These provisions not extending to the king's own tenants *in capite*, the like law concerning them is declared by the statutes of *Prerogativa Regis*, and 34 Ed. III. 17 Ed. 2. c. 6. c. 15., by which last all subinfeudations previous to the reign of Edward I. were confirmed; but all subsequent to that period were left open to the king's prerogative. Vide Tit. 32. c. 1.

15. Every tenant was bound to do homage to his lord, for which purpose he was to kneel down before him and say—"I become your man from this day forward of life and limb, and of earthly worship; and unto you shall be true and faithful, and bear you faith for the tenements that I claim to hold of you; saving the faith that I owe unto our sovereign lord the king." And the lord, being seated, kissed him. Homage. Lit. § 85. St. 17 Ed. 2.

16. Homage must have been done in person, not by attorney; the performance of it, where it was due, materially concerned both the lord and the tenant, in point of interest and advantage. To the lord it was of consequence, because, till he had received homage of the heir, he was not entitled to the wardship of his person or estate. To the tenant the 1 Inst. 66. b. 67. b. n. 1. 2 Inst. 10.

---

\* The idea of this law was probably taken from the ordonnance of Philip Augustus, which has been mentioned in the preceding chapter, § 61.

homage was equally important; for antiently every kind of homage, when received, bound the lord to acquittal and warranty; that is, to keep the tenant free from distress, entry, or other molestation for services due to the lord paramount; and to defend his title to the land against all strangers.

Fealty.

17. Another duty to which every person who held lands was subject, was fealty; which is thus described by Littleton, § 91.—“And when a freeholder doth fealty, he shall hold his right hand upon a book, and shall say thus: ‘Know you this, my lord, that I shall be faithful and true unto you, and faith to you shall bear, for the lands which I claim to hold of you; and that I shall lawfully do to you the customs and services which I ought to do, at the time assigned; so help me God and his saints;’ and he shall kiss the book.”

1 Inst. 68. a.  
Wright,  
55. n.

18. Fealty and homage were perfectly distinct from each other; for though fealty was an incident to homage, and ought always to have accompanied it, yet fealty might be by itself; being something done when homage would have been improper. So that homage was inseparable from fealty; but fealty was not so from homage.

Tenure by  
Knight  
Service.

19. The first and most honourable kind of tenure was by knight service, *servitium militare*. To make a tenure of this kind, a determinate quantity of land was necessary, which was called a knight's fee, *feodum militare*, the measure of which is by some antient writers estimated at 800 acres of land, and by others at 680. Lord Coke was of opinion that a knight's fee was to be esteemed according to the quality, and not the quantity of the land; and that £20 a year was the qualification of a knight.

1 Inst. 69. a.  
Mach. Exch.  
4<sup>o</sup>. V, l. 891.

20. Every person holding by knight service, besides homage and fealty, was obliged to attend his lord to the wars, if called upon, on horseback, armed as a knight, for forty days, in every year, at his own expence. This attendance was his *redditus* or return for the land he held. If he had only half a knight's fee, he was bound to attend for twenty days, and so in proportion.

21. The personal attendance in knight service growing troublesome and inconvenient, the tenants found means of compounding for it; first by sending others in their stead, afterwards by making a pecuniary satisfaction to their lords in lieu of it. At last this pecuniary satisfaction was levied by assessment, at so much for every knight's fee; from whence it acquired the name of *scutagium* or *servitium scuti*; *scutum* being then a well-known name for money. In our Norman French it was known by the name of *escuage*.

22. As *escuage* differed from knight service in nothing but as a compensation differs from actual service, it is frequently confounded with knight service. Thus Littleton must be understood when he says that tenant by homage, fealty, and *escuage*, was tenant by knight service.

23. The tenure by knight service being the most honourable, was also the most favourable to the lord, for it drew after it these five fruits or consequences, as inseparably incident to it; namely, aids, relief, primer seisin, wardship, and marriage. Incidents to it.

24. With respect to aids, they were the same as those established on the continent, namely, to make the lord's eldest son a knight; to marry the lord's eldest daughter; and to ransom the lord's person, when taken prisoner. Aids.

25. These aids were introduced into England from Normandy, where they appear to have been established before the conquest, and are, thus described in the *Grand Coustumier*, c. 35.—*Tria autem sunt capitula auxilia Normaniæ. Primum videlicet ad primogenitum filium domini sui in ordinem militiæ promovendum. Secundum videlicet ad primogenitam filiam domini maritandam. Tertium videlicet ad corpus domini sui de prisona redimendum, cum captus fuerit.*

26. Aids of this kind were originally uncertain; besides which the tyranny of the feudal lords induced them to demand other aids, such as to pay their debts, and to enable them to pay their reliefs to their superior lords. To prevent this, it was provided by King John's Magna Charta, c. 12. that no aid should be taken by the king without consent of parliament; nor in any case by inferior lords, except the three above mentioned.

3 Ed. 1. c. 36.  
2 Inst. 231.  
13 Rep. 26.

27. By the statute of Westm. 1. the aids of inferior lords were fixed at twenty shillings for every knight's fee, for making the lord's eldest son a knight, or marrying his eldest daughter. The same was done with regard to the king's tenants in capite, by the statute 25 Edw. III. c. 11. As to the aid for ransom of the lord's person, not being capable of any certainty, it was never ascertained.

Reliefs.

28. Upon the death of every tenant, the lord claimed a sum of money from his heir, as a fine for taking up the estate, that lapsed by the death of the ancestor. This was called a relief.

Grand Coust.  
c. 34.

29. The doctrine of reliefs was also adopted from the laws of Normandy, where they were reduced to a certainty at the time when the customs of that province were collected; the relief of a *fief d'honneur* being fifteen livres, and that of a barony a hundred.

30. It is said that reliefs were originally uncertain in England, for in the laws of King Henry I. a declaration is made that the king would be satisfied with a fair and just relief. When Glanville wrote, the relief for a knight's fee was fixed at a hundred shillings, which was supposed to be a fourth part of the annual value of the land. But the reliefs of barons and earls fees were uncertain.

Wright, 98.  
2 Inst. 7.

Lib. 9. c. 4.  
Lit. § 112.

Vide Tit. 26,

31. Where the king's tenant died seised, the crown was entitled to receive of the heir, if he were of full age, an additional sum of money, called primer seisin.

Primer  
Seisin.

32. It does not appear when this right was first established. But in the statute of Marlbridge 52 Hen. III. c. 16. it is thus mentioned—*De hæreditibus autem qui de domino rege tenent in capite, sic observandum est; quod dominus primam inde habeat seisinam, sicut prius inde habere consuevit.* The king's right to primer seisin is also declared in the statute *de prerogativa regis*. It was settled that the king should receive one whole year's profit of the lands on this account.

2 Inst. 134.

17 Ed. 2. c. 3.  
2 Inst. 77.

33. Primer seisin was only incident to the king's tenants *in capite*, not to those who held of inferior or mesne lords. "It seems," says Sir W. Blackstone, "to have been little more than an additional relief, founded on this principle, that by the antient law of feuds, immediately upon the death of a vassal, the lord was entitled to enter, and take seisin or possession of the land, by way of protection against intruders, till the heir appeared to claim it, and receive investiture; during which interval the lord was entitled to the profits."

2 Comm. 66.

34. These payments were only due where the heir was of full age; if the heir was under the age of 21 being a male, or 14 being a female, the lord was

Wardship,

entitled to wardship, which consisted in having the custody of the body and lands of the heir, without being accountable for the profits; till the male heir attained 21, and the female 16.

Grand Coust.  
c. 33.

35. The doctrine of wardships was taken from the customs of Normandy, in which it was called *Garde Noble*: it is however observable that this right was peculiar to that province; and did not prevail in any other part of France; or in any other country where the feudal law was established.

Basnage,  
V. i. § 26.

36. Of the various hardships which arose from the adoption of the feudal law, wardship was the greatest, and the most complained of; for the object of some of the first chapters of Magna Charta was to regulate the conduct of the lords in this respect; and to restrain them from wasting or destroying the estates of their wards.

Marriage.  
Grand Coust.  
c. 33.

37. By the customs of Normandy, female wards were directed to be married with the advice and consent of the lord, and of their relations. In imitation of this practice, it appears to have been established in England that the consent of the lord was necessary to the marriage of his female wards; for which the lords usually required a sum of money. In the charter of King Henry I. he engages to take nothing for his consent. This being disregarded, it was provided by the first draught of the Magna Charta of King John that heirs should be married without disparagement, by the advice of their relations; in the charter of Hen. III. the clause is merely, that heirs shall be married without disparagement.

38. Soon after, the king and the great lords established a right to consent to the marriage, not only of their female, but of their male wards. As nothing but disparagement was restrained, they

thought themselves at liberty to make all other advantages they could. Afterwards this right of selling the ward in marriage, or else receiving the price or value of it, was expressly declared by the statute of Merton. 20 Hen. 3. c. 6.

39. All lands held by a feudal tenure were originally unalienable without the licence of the lord; from whence arose fines for alienation, of which an account will be given hereafter. Fines for Alienation.  
Tit. 32. c. 1.

40. Where the tenant died without heirs, by which there was no person to perform the services, the land returned to the lord as an escheat. Escheat.  
Tit. 30.

41. There was a species of tenure called grand serjeanty, which was considered as superior to knight service; whereby the tenant was bound, instead of serving the king generally in his wars, to do him some special honorary service in person. Tenure by Grand Serjeanty.  
Fleta, lib. 1. c. 10.

42. Thus where the king gave lands to a man, to hold of him, to be marshal of his host, or marshal of England, or high steward of England, or the like; these were grand serjeanties. So if lands were given to a man to hold by the service of carrying the king's sword at his coronation, or being his carver or butler, these were called offices of honour, held by grand serjeanty. 1 Inst. 106. a.  
107. a.  
Dyer, 285. b.

43. Lord Coke says, this tenure has seven special properties. 1. To be holden of the king only. 2. The service to be done, when the tenant was able, in proper person. 3. The service was certain and particular. 4. The relief due in respect of this tenure was different from that due for knight service. 5. The service was in general to be done within the realm. 6. It was not subject to aid for making the eldest son a knight, or for marrying the eldest daughter. 7. It paid no escuage. 1 Inst. 105. b.

Abolition  
of Military  
Tenures.

44. The oppressions arising from military tenures, having been discontinued during the civil wars in the reign of King Charles I. and in the time of the Commonwealth, were entirely removed at the Restoration by the statute 12 Cha. II. c. 24., which enacted that the court of wards and liveries, and all wardships, liveries, primer seisin, and ouster-lemains, values and forfeitures of marriages, by reason of any tenure of the king, or others, be totally taken away; that all fines for alienations, tenures by homage, knight service, and escuage, and also aids for marrying the daughter, or knighting the son, and all tenures of the king *in capite*, be likewise taken away: that all sorts of tenures held of the king, or others, be turned into free and common socage, save only tenures in frankalmoign, copyholds, and the honorary services of grand serjeanty; and that all tenures which should be created by the king, his heirs or successors, in future, should be in free and common socage.



## TENURES.

## CHAP. III.

*Of the Modern English Tenures.*

- |                                        |                                      |
|----------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Tenure in Socage.</i>            | 38. <i>Of Courts Baron.</i>          |
| 5. <i>By Petit Serjeanty.</i>          | 41. <i>Superior and inferior Ma-</i> |
| 8. <i>In Burgage.</i>                  | <i>nors.</i>                         |
| 11. <i>In Antient Demesne.</i>         | 45. <i>How Manors are destroyed.</i> |
| 20. <i>Incidents to these Tenures.</i> | 50. <i>Tenure in Villenage.</i>      |
| 28. <i>Changes in Socage by the</i>    | 51. <i>Copyholds.</i>                |
| <i>Stat. 12 Cha. II.</i>               | 57. <i>Free Copyholds.</i>           |
| 32. <i>Origin and Nature of Ma-</i>    | 60. <i>Tenure in Frankalmoign.</i>   |
| <i>nors.</i>                           |                                      |

## SECTION 1.

**I**N consequence of the statute 12 Cha. II. c. 24. Tenure in Socage.  
 all free tenures, except frankalmoign, are now reduced to that of common socage: of which it will therefore be necessary to give a full account.

2. "Tenure in socage (says Littleton) is where § 117.  
 the tenant holdeth of his lord the tenancy by certain service, for all manner of services; so that the service be not knight service. As where a man holdeth his land of his lord by fealty, and certain rent, for all manner of services; or else where a man holdeth his land by homage, fealty, and certain rent, for all manner of services; or where a man holdeth his land by homage and fealty, for all manner of services."

"Also a man may hold of his lord by fealty only, Id. § 118.  
 and such tenure is tenure in socage; for every tenure which is not tenure in chivalry, is tenure in socage."

Id. § 119.

3. Littleton derives the word socage from *soca*, a plough, the services antiently reserved on this tenure being those of husbandry. Somner deduces it from the Saxon word *soc*, importing liberty or privilege, which, being joined to a usual termination, is called *socagium* or socage, signifying a free and privileged tenure. Sir Martin Wright admits Somner's etymology to be countenanced by Britton, but professes himself inclined to prefer Littleton's: 1. Because our division of tenures into knight service and socage, considering socage as a tenure *per servitium socæ*, directly answers to the Norman division of tenures into *fiefs d'haubert* and *fiefs de roturier*; that is, the gentleman's and the husbandman's fee. 2. Because, in this sense, the tenure in socage is, like that by knight service, simply denominated from the name or nature of the service antiently reserved upon it.

Ten. 142.

4. As the grand criterion and distinguishing mark of socage tenure is the having its renders and services ascertained, it will include under it all other modes of holding free lands by certain and invariable rents and duties; and, in particular, petit serjeanty, burgage, antient demesne, and gavelkind.

By Petit  
Serjeanty.  
§ 159.

5. Littleton says, petit serjeanty is where a man holds his land of the king, to yield to him yearly a bow, a sword, a dagger, a knife, a pair of gloves of mail, a pair of gilt spurs, an arrow, or divers arrows, or to yield such other small things belonging to war.

§ 160.

6. It is also said, by the same writer, that such service is but socage in effect; because the tenant, by his tenure, ought not to go, nor do any thing, in his proper person, touching war; but to render and pay yearly certain things to the king, as a man ought to pay rent.

7. This tenure can only be of the king, the dignity of whose person gives it the name of petit serjeanty. Id. 161.  
For where lands are held of a subject by services of this kind, the tenure is nothing more than plain socage.

8. “Tenure in burgage (says Littleton) is where an antient burrough is, of which the king is lord; and they that have tenements within the burrough hold of the king their tenements, that every tenant for his tenement ought to pay the king a certain rent, &c., and such tenure is but tenure in socage.” In Burgage. § 162.

9. “It is the same where any subject is lord of such burrough, and the tenants hold of him, to pay, each of them, an annual rent.” Id. 163.

10. The qualities of this tenure vary according to the particular customs of every burrough, without prejudice to the feudal nature of it, in conformity to the maxim, *consuetudo loci est observanda*. Id. 165, 6, 7.

11. All those estates which are called in Domesday *terræ regis* were manors belonging to the crown, being part of its *antiquum dominicum*, or antient demesne; a great portion of the lands comprised within those manors was in the hands of tenants, who held the same of the crown by a peculiar species of socage tenure, that has long been known by the appellation of antient demesne. In Antient Demesne. 4 Inst. c. 58.

This tenure can only subsist in manors of antient demesne. And where a question now arises whether a manor is of antient demesne, or not, it can only be determined by a reference to Domesday. Dyer, 250. b. 2 Burr. 1046.

12. The tenants in antient demesne, that is, the persons who held lands, parcel of these manors, in socage, did the service of cultivating the demesnes, or supplying provisions, for the sustenance of the king's household — services of the utmost necessity 4 Inst. 269.

homage was equally important; for antiently every kind of homage, when received, bound the lord to acquittal and warranty; that is, to keep the tenant free from distress, entry, or other molestation for services due to the lord paramount; and to defend his title to the land against all strangers.

Fealty.

17. Another duty to which every person who held lands was subject, was fealty; which is thus described by Littleton, § 91.—“And when a freeholder doth fealty, he shall hold his right hand upon a book, and shall say thus: ‘Know you this, my lord, that I shall be faithful and true unto you, and faith to you shall bear, for the lands which I claim to hold of you; and that I shall lawfully do to you the customs and services which I ought to do, at the time assigned; so help me God and his saints;’ and he shall kiss the book.”

1 Inst. 68. a.  
Wright,  
55. n.

18. Fealty and homage were perfectly distinct from each other; for though fealty was an incident to homage, and ought always to have accompanied it, yet fealty might be by itself; being something done when homage would have been improper. So that homage was inseparable from fealty; but fealty was not so from homage.

Tenure by  
Knight  
Service.

19. The first and most honourable kind of tenure was by knight service, *servitium militare*. To make a tenure of this kind, a determinate quantity of land was necessary, which was called a knight's fee, *feodum militare*, the measure of which is by some antient writers estimated at 800 acres of land, and by others at 680. Lord Coke was of opinion that a knight's fee was to be esteemed according to the quality, and not the quantity of the land; and that £20 a year was the qualification of a knight.

1 Inst. 69. a.  
Mod. Exch.  
4<sup>o</sup>. V, l. 891.

manor of antient demesne, in which the socage lands Fitz.N.B.11. are held by that tenure.

16. Where a manor of this kind is in the hands of a subject, it is in the power of the lord and tenant to destroy the tenure. Thus if the tenant is impleaded in any of the courts of Westminster, and the lord is a party to the suit, the lands become frank fee; because the privilege of antient demesne being established for the benefit of both the lord and tenant, they may, by their joint act, destroy it. 2 Leon. 192.

17. If the lord enfeoffs another of the tenancy, this makes the land frank fee; because the services are extinguished. So if the lord releases to the tenant all his right in the lands; or if he confirms to him, to hold by certain services at the common law. 1 Roll. Ab. 324. 4 East, 290.

18. Whenever the manor, of which the lands are held in antient demesne, is destroyed, that tenure is also destroyed. For there being no court left, the tenants must sue and be sued in the courts at Westminster. 4 Inst. 270. 2 Leon. 191.

19. The tenure in gavelkind, by which a great deal of the land in Kent is still held, is a species of socage; the name being derived from the Saxon word *gavel*, which signifies rent, or a customary performance of husbandry works; from which the land subject to this kind of service was called gavelkind. Mr. Robinson concludes, from the etymology of this word, that gavelkind denotes the tenure of the land only, and that the partibility and other customary qualities of the lands thus held are extrinsic and accidental. In Gavelkind. Robinson's Gav. 3, 4.

20. All these tenures are evidently feudal, and derived from the same origin as tenure by knight service; for in both cases the lands are held of a superior lord, either the king, or some private person. This feudal *dominium*, or seignory as it is called, when Incidents to these Tenures.

ante, c. 2. § 8. vested in the king, may, as in the case of knight service, be either of his person, or as of some manor which formerly devolved to the crown by forfeiture or escheat; when vested in a private person, may either be in right of a manor, of which he is lord, or of his person, in which latter case it is called a seignory  
 Fitz. N.B. 3. in gross. \* But tenure of the person of a subject is now scarcely known; and where it no longer appears of whom lands are mediately holden in socage, they shall be presumed to be held immediately of the king, as the great and chief lord.  
 Booth, Real Act. 135.

21. All lands held by any kind of socage tenure are subject to a feudal return, render, rent, or service, of some sort or other, to the lord of whom they are held; arising from a supposition of an original grant, from the ancestor of the lord, to that of the tenant. In the military tenure, or more proper feud, this was from its nature uncertain. In socage, which was a feud of the improper kind, it was certain, fixed, and determinate; and so continues to this day.  
 ante, § 1.

22. Tenants in socage are still universally subject, over and above all other renders, to the oath of fealty, or mutual bond of obligation between the lord and tenant; which usually draws after it suit to the lord's court; and as all freehold lands are now held in socage, where no other service is reserved, fealty is due of course.  
 Lit. § 131. 2.  
 1 Inst. 68. b.  
 n. 5.

23. The tenure in socage was subject of common right to aids for knighting the lord's eldest son, and marrying his eldest daughter, which were fixed by the statute of Westm. 1. at twenty shillings for every twenty pounds a year so held.

---

\* A seignory in gross may be extinguished by a release, Lit. § 454. and may be extended on a statute, 1 Inst. 289. b.

24. Tenants in socage were always subject to relief; which however was certain, consisting of one year's rent. The statute 28 Edw. I. c. 1. declares that a free sokeman shall give no relief, but shall double his rent, after the death of his ancestor, according to that which he had used to pay his lord; and shall not be grieved above measure.

25. Primer seisin was incident to the king's socage tenants *in capite*, as well as to those who held by knight service.

26. Wardship is also incident to tenure in socage; but quite different from that which was incident to knight service. For where lands in socage descend to an infant under the age of fourteen, his nearest relation, to whom the inheritance cannot descend, shall be his guardian; but responsible to him for the profits. Marriage, or the *valor maritagii*, was not, in socage tenure, any perquisite or advantage to the guardian.

27. Fines for alienation were also due for estates in socage: lands held by this tenure always were, and still continue to be, subject to forfeiture for treason and felony; and also to escheat; except gavelkind lands, which are not subject to escheat for felony; though they are to escheat for want of heirs.

28. The changes made by the stat. 12 Cha. II. c. 24. in the tenure in socage are chiefly these: 1. It takes away the aids for marrying the lord's eldest daughter, and knighting his eldest son. 2. It relieves socage *in capite* from the burthen of the king's primer seisin; and of fines to the king for alienation. 3. It extends the father's power of appointing guardians by deed or will, which by the 4 & 5 Phil. & Mary, was restricted to females; to children of both sexes.

Changes in  
Socage by  
Stat.

12 Cha. 2.  
1 Inst. 93. b.  
n. 3.

entitled to wardship, which consisted in having the custody of the body and lands of the heir, without being accountable for the profits ; till the male heir attained 21, and the female 16.

Grand Coust.  
c. 33.

35. The doctrine of wardships was taken from the customs of Normandy, in which it was called *Garde Noble* : it is however observable that this right was peculiar to that province ; and did not prevail in any other part of France ; or in any other country where the feudal law was established.

Basnage,  
V. 1. §26.

36. Of the various hardships which arose from the adoption of the feudal law, wardship was the greatest, and the most complained of ; for the object of some of the first chapters of Magna Charta was to regulate the conduct of the lords in this respect ; and to restrain them from wasting or destroying the estates of their wards.

Marriage.  
Grand Coust.  
c. 33.

37. By the customs of Normandy, female wards were directed to be married with the advice and consent of the lord, and of their relations. In imitation of this practice, it appears to have been established in England that the consent of the lord was necessary to the marriage of his female wards ; for which the lords usually required a sum of money. In the charter of King Henry I. he engages to take nothing for his consent. This being disregarded, it was provided by the first draught of the Magna Charta of King John that heirs should be married without disparagement, by the advice of their relations ; in the charter of Hen. III. the clause is merely, that heirs shall be married without disparagement.

38. Soon after, the king and the great lords established a right to consent to the marriage, not only of their female, but of their male wards. As nothing but disparagement was restrained, they



32. As most of those persons of whom lands are now held in socage, claim their feudal *dominium* or seignory in the character of lords of manors; and as all customary estates are held of particular manors, it will be necessary to inquire into the origin and nature of manors, and the rights of those by whom they are possessed.

Origin and  
Nature of  
Manors.

33. Perkins, who wrote in the year 1532, gives the following account of the origin of manors:

“ And it is to know that the beginning of a manor was, when the king gave a thousand acres of land, or a greater or lesser part, unto one of his subjects and his heirs, to hold of him and his heirs, which tenure is knight service at the least, and the donee did perhaps build a mansion-house upon parcel of the same land; and of twenty acres, parcel of that which remained, or of a greater or lesser parcel, before the statute of *Quia Emptores*, &c. did enfeoff a stranger, to hold of him and his heirs as of the same mansion-house, to plow ten acres of arable land, parcel of that which remained in his possession; and did enfeoff another of another parcel, &c. to carry his dung into the land, &c. and did enfeoff another of another parcel thereof, &c. to go with him to war against the Scots, &c. and so by continuance of time he made a manor\*.”

Perk. § 670.

34. It appears from this passage that the two material causes of a manor are demesnes and services. The demesnes comprise all that part of the land re-

---

\* It was holden by Meade and Windham, Justices of the Common Pleas, in 22 Eliz. that a parsonage may be a manor. As if, before the statute of *Quia Emptores Terrarum*, the parson, with the patron and ordinary, grant parcel of the glebe to divers persons, to hold of the parson by divers services; the same makes the parsonage a manor. Godb. R. 3.

tained by the lord for his own use ; and from which the other parts of the land were dismembered. The freehold of these is vested in the lord ; and they were formerly cultivated by his villeins, for the maintenance of his family. The services were the returns due from the persons to whom the lord had granted the freehold of the rest of the lands, to hold of him as of his manor. These consisted of military and other services, rents, fealty, and suit of court : together with the usual profits arising from reliefs, fines for alienation, and other feudal incidents.

The uncultivated part of the manor was called the lord's waste, which served for public roads, and common of pasture for the lord's cattle, and those of his tenants.

35. There was another circumstance essentially necessary to a manor, namely, a jurisdiction over the tenants, which arose in the following way :

c. 1. § 87.

It has been stated that where lands were granted to a person as a feud, a jurisdiction over the inferior tenants or occupiers of them was always included. In conformity to this practice, it is probable that in all the grants of land made by the Conqueror and his sons, a jurisdiction was given ; for it appears from Dugdale's *Monasticon*, that in almost all the charters of lands granted by the crown to the abbies, a civil and criminal jurisdiction was expressly granted. And we know that from time immemorial every lord of a manor has exercised a jurisdiction over his tenants, and held a court for that purpose ; a franchise which must have been originally derived from the crown.

1 Inst. 58. b.

Gloss.

36. *Manerium* (says Spelman) *est feudum nobile, partim vassallis, quos tenentes vocamus, ob certa servitia concessum ; partim domino in usum familiæ suæ cum jurisdictione in vassallos, ob concessa prædia, reservatum. Quæ vassallis conceduntur, terras dicimus*

*tenementales; quæ domino reservantur, dominicales. Totum vero feudum dominium appellatur. Olim baronia, unde curia quæ huic præest jurisdictioni, hodie curia baronis, nomen retinet.*

37. Every estate of this kind had a chief seat, or capital mansion upon it, as of which the lands granted out to the tenants were held; and being the residence of the lord, it was called in old French *manoir*, a *manendo*; from whence the whole acquired the name of manor. It is also called, and with more propriety, a lordship; being a feudal seignory or *dominium* annexed to the possession of the demesnes, over the tenants holding lands by a subinfeudation from the antient proprietors of such demesnes, by certain services; with a jurisdiction over those persons. And Lord Coke says—"A manor in these days signifieth the jurisdiction and royalty incorporate, rather than the land or scite."

Ragneau  
Gloss.

Cop. § 31.  
Tanfield v.  
Rogers,  
Tit. 28. c. 1.

38. It appears from Spelman's description of a manor that it was formerly called a barony; and the court in which the lord exercised his jurisdiction, the court baron.

Of Courts  
Baron.

Lord Coke, after stating that a manor consists of demesnes and services, proceeds thus—"A word of another cause of a manor, which appeareth not in the definition so manifestly as the other causes do. This is a cause which among the logicians is termed *causa sine qua non*; and that is a court baron; for indeed that is the chief prop and pillar of a manor, which no sooner faileth, but the manor falleth to the ground. If we labour to search out the antiquity of these courts baron, we shall find them as antient as manors themselves. For when the antient kings of this realm, who had all the lands of England in demesne, did confer great quantities of land upon some

Copyholder,  
§ 31.

great personages, with liberty to parcel the land out to other inferior tenants, reserving such duties and services as they thought convenient; and to keep courts where they might redress misdemeanors within their precincts, punish offences committed by their tenants; and decide and debate controversies arising within their jurisdiction: these courts were termed courts baron."

2 Inst. 31.

4 Inst. 46.  
268.

39. A court baron is incident of common right to every manor. It is composed of the steward and the freeholders, who hold their lands of the manor, subject to fealty and suit of court; they are therefore bound by their tenure to attend the court baron, and assist the steward in the administration of justice. And all lords of manors may call upon their tenants to take the oath of fealty to them in their courts baron; which every lord ought to do, if it be only for the reason given by Littleton, that when neglected, it will by long continuance of time grow out of memory, whether the land be holden of the lord or not; by which he may lose his seignory, and all the profits that may accrue to him in consequence thereof.

§. 130.

4 Inst. c. 57.

40. Courts baron have still the power of determining, by writ of right, all controversies relating to lands within the manor; and also to hold pleas of any personal actions of debt, trespass on the case, or the like, where the debt and damages do not amount to forty shillings.

Superior and  
inferior  
Manors.

212 a.

41. The persons who held of the king's immediate tenants granted out portions of their lands to be held of themselves; by which they created manors of an inferior kind, of which they were immediate lords, and the king's tenants lords paramount. Thus Bracton says—*Poterit enim esse per se manerium capitale, et plura continere sub se maneria non capitalia, et plures*

*villas, et plures hamlettos, quasi sub uno capite, et dominio uno.*

42. These great manors, of which inferior manors were held, are frequently called honors. Lord Coke 1 Inst. 108 a. says, an honor is the most noble seignory, and originally created by the king, but may afterwards be granted to others.

43. The practice of creating manors or tenancies in gross was effectually prevented by the statute *Quia Emptores*, and the statute 34 Edw. III., which have Ante, c. 2. § 14. been already stated. It is therefore said, that all manors existing at this day must have been created before these statutes were made. For it is essential Co. Cop. § 31. Wright, Ten. 160 n. to a manor that there be tenants to hold of the lord; and no person since these statutes could, upon a grant of an estate in fee-simple, create a tenure of himself.

44. Lord Coke says, the king himself cannot now Cop. § 31. create a manor.—“ If the king at this day will grant a great quantity of land to any subject, enjoining him to certain duties and services, and withal willeth that this should bear the name of a manor, yet it will not be a manor, in the estimation of the law.”

45. As the material causes of a manor are demesnes How Manors are destroyed. and services, both of which are essential to its existence, because a manor must have a lord and vassals; it follows that whenever the demesnes are severed from the services, by the act of the party, the manor is destroyed. Thus it was resolved in Sir Moyle Finch's case, that where the demesnes of a manor are 6 Rep. 64. once absolutely severed, in fee-simple, from the services, by the act of the party; the manor is for ever destroyed.

46. Where the severance is by act of law, the manor may be revived. Thus in the above-mentioned

case it was agreed, that if there were two coparceners of a manor, and on a partition the demesnes were allotted to one, and the services to the other; although there was an absolute severance, yet if one died without issue, and the demesnes descended to her who had the services, the manor was revived: because on the partition they were in by act of law; and the demesnes were again united to the services by act of law.

5 Mod. R.  
382.

Co. Cop.  
§ 31. 15 Vin.  
Ab. 223.

47. Where two coparceners make partition, and part of the demesnes and services are allotted to one, and the remainder to the other; it is said that each coparcener will have a manor. In a subsequent case the Court of King's Bench held that a manor was an entire thing, and not severable.

6 Mod. R.  
150.

Bro. Ab.  
Manor 5.

48. Where all the freehold estates held of a manor are purchased by the lord, or devolve to him by escheat, whereby the services become extinct, and there are no tenants left, the manor is for ever destroyed. For there cannot be a manor without a court baron; and no court baron can be without two suitors at least.

Willes R.  
614. 3 Term  
Rep. 447.  
4 Id. 446.

49. Although many manors have been destroyed by the means above mentioned, yet they continue to be called manors; and for some purposes are still considered as such; though strictly speaking they are no more than reputed manors\*.

Soane v.  
Ireland,  
10 East, 259.  
Tenure in  
Villinage.

50. It has been stated that the great division of tenures originally was, into those that were free, and those that were base; or, as Bracton expresses it, into franktenement and villenage. The tenure in villenage arose in the following manner: under the Saxons

---

\* The rights and franchises annexed to manors will be treated of in Title 27.

there was a class of people in a condition of downright servitude, belonging, both they, their children, and effects, to the lord of the soil. The Normans, who were strangers to any other than a feudal state, might probably enfranchise all such wretched persons who fell to their share, by admitting them to fealty, in respect to the little livings they had hitherto been allowed to possess; which they were still suffered to retain, upon the like services as they had formerly been bound to perform. But this possession, as now clothed with fealty, and by that means advanced into a tenure, differed materially from the antient servile possession, and was thenceforth called villenage. Wright Ten. 216, Lit. § 132.

51. When manors became established, the *demesnes* were cultivated by the lord's villeins, who were allowed to occupy some small parts of them, in order to provide for their own subsistence. Their tenure was that of pure villenage, the services were base and uncertain; and as they might be dispossessed at any time, they were said to hold at the mere will of the lord. Copyholds.

52. The acquiescence of lords of manors to their villeins holding the lands allotted to them, as long as they performed their services, and in permitting their children to succeed them, advanced the pretensions of the villeins, in opposition to the absolute rights of the lords, so as to give them a kind of prescriptive or customary right to their possessions; which in course of time was taken notice of by the courts of justice; and, under their sanction, became at length a part of the common law. Wright, Ten. 220.

53. As tenants of this sort had no other title to their estates but these customs, and admissions in pursuance of them, entered on the rolls of the lord's court, or copies of such entries, witnessed by the



steward of the manor, they were called tenants by copy of court roll ; and their interest a copyhold or customary estate.

Barr. Obs.  
on Stat.

Extent. Man.  
§ 9.

54. The first mention of this tenure is in the *Extenta Manerii*, made in 4 Edw. I. ; which, though printed among the statutes, is only an instruction to the extender of the crown, with regard to what he was to inquire into ; and upon what heads and particulars he was to make his report. The words respecting copyholds are—" It is to be inquired also of customary tenants, that is, to wit, how many there be, and how much land every of them holdeth ; what works and customs he doth, and what the works and customs of every tenant be worth yearly ; and how much rent of assise he paid yearly, beside the works and customs ; and which of them may be taxed at the will of the lord, and which not."

4 Rep. 21 b.

55. There is however no mention of copyholds in the book of old tenures : some cases appear respecting them in the reign of Edward III. ; and the rights of copyholders to their lands were fully settled in the time of King Edward IV.

56. Copyholds are not affected by the statute 12 Cha. II. For it is provided by the 7th section of that act, that it shall not alter or change any tenure by copy of court roll, or any services incident thereunto.

Free Copy-  
holds.

Ante, c. 2.  
§ 6.

Lib. 1. c. 11.  
Black. Cons.  
on Copy-  
holders.

57. There is another species of copyhold, which was formerly called privileged villenage, or villein socage ; of the origin of which Bracton gives the following account.

There were at the time of the conquest certain freemen who held their respective tenements freely, by free services, or by free customs ; and being first ejected by the hand of power, they afterwards re-



turned, and took their own tenements again, to be held in villenage, doing therefore services that were base and servile, but certain and expressed by name. These are called ascriptitious to the soil, and yet are freemen, though they perform villein services; since they perform them, not in respect of their persons, but in respect of their tenures.

58. Tenants of this kind hold by copy of court roll. Their admittances however are not, as in common copyholds, to hold at the will of the lord, but to hold according to the custom of the manor: from whence they have been called free copyholders, or customary freeholders.

59. Sir W. Blackstone, in his Considerations on Copyholders, concludes with observing, that however the lawyers may at times have denominated these tenures a base species of freehold, in contradistinction to mere copyholds; yet the law, in the main, regards them as being properly copyhold, and not freehold tenures; else they would not have subsisted at this day: for they must otherwise have been involved in the general fate of the rest of our antient tenures; when by the statute 12 Cha. II. they were all abolished, and reduced to socage, Vide Tit. 10. c. 1.

60. There remains but one more kind of tenure, which is of a spiritual nature, and called frankalmoign, *libera elymosina*, or free alms; whereby a religious corporation, aggregate or sole, may hold lands to them and their successors for ever. Tenure in Frankalmoign.

61. The services due for this tenure are purely spiritual; therefore the tenants are not bound to do fealty; because the service reserved is of a higher nature; and because the word frankalmoign excludes all temporal service. Lit. § 135.

62. Most of the antient monasteries and religious houses held their lands by this tenure. The parochial clergy, together with many ecclesiastical and charitable, corporations still hold their lands in the same manner; But Littleton says, that in consequence of the statute *Quia Emptores* none can give lands to be holden in frankalmoign, except the king.

1 Inst. 95 b.

§ 140.

## TITLE I.

## ESTATE IN FEE SIMPLE.

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Of Real Property.</i><br>2. <i>Land.</i><br>6. <i>Money to be laid out in Land.</i><br>7. <i>Heir Looms and Charters.</i><br>10. <i>Incorporeal Property.</i><br>11. <i>Of Estates in Land.</i><br>13. <i>Estates of Freehold.</i><br>23. <i>Of Seisin.</i><br>24. <i>Where an Entry is necessary.</i><br>31. <i>Abatement.</i><br>33. <i>Disseisin.</i><br>36. <i>Abeyance of the Freehold.</i><br>39. <i>Who may have Freehold Estates.</i><br>42. <i>Estates in Fee Simple.</i><br>47. <i>Abeyance of the Fee.</i><br>49. <i>All other Estates merge in the Fee.</i> | 52. <i>Incidents to a Fee.</i><br>53. <i>Alienable.</i><br>55. <i>Descendible to Heirs General.</i><br>56. <i>Subject to Curtesy and Dower.</i><br>57. <i>Liable to Debts.</i><br>63. <i>Of Crown Debts.</i><br>67. <i>How contracted.</i><br>72. <i>Bind the Lands when contracted.</i><br>75. <i>Into whose hands soever they pass.</i><br>76. <i>How discharged.</i><br>77. <i>Estates in Fee forfeited for Treason, &amp;c.</i><br>80. <i>And for Disclaimer.</i><br>81. <i>Qualified Fees.</i> |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**B**Y the law of England property is divided into two kinds, namely real and personal property; which are governed by distinct systems of jurisprudence. Real property consists of land, and of all rights and profits arising from and annexed to land, that are of a permanent and immoveable nature: It is usually comprised under the words lands, tenements, and hereditaments. Land means the whole surface of the earth; tenements is a word of still greater extent, and signifies every thing that may be holden; but hereditaments is the largest and most comprehensive word, for it includes not only lands and tenements, but whatever may be inherited.

Of Real Property.

1 Inst. 6 a.

Land.  
1 Inst. 9 a.

2. Real property is corporeal or incorporeal; corporeal consists wholly of substantial and permanent objects; all which may be comprehended under the general denomination of land.

1 Inst. 4 a.

3. Lord Coke says, the word land, in its legal signification, comprehends any ground, soil, or earth whatsoever, as meadows, pastures, woods, water marshes, furzes and heath. It has also, in its legal signification, an indefinite extent, upwards as well downwards; for it is a maxim of law, that *cujus est solum, ejus est usque ad cælum*; therefore land legally includes all castles, houses, and other buildings standing thereon; and downwards, whatever is in the direct line between the surface and the centre of the earth; such as mines of metal and other fossils, which are the property of the owner of the surface; except mines of gold and silver: these, by the royal prerogative, belong to the Crown.

Plowd. 336.

Dissert. c. 3.  
§ 32.

4. The greater part of England was formerly divided into manors, of which an account has been already given. The word manor is still frequently used as synonymous with the lands comprised within its boundaries.

2 Ves. Jun.  
652.

5. A share in the New River water is held to be real property, as also a share in the navigation of the river Avon; under a private act of parliament in 10 Ann. and a share in some navigable canals.

Money to be  
laid out in  
land.

Treat. of Eq.  
B. 1. c. 6. § 9.

6. Money agreed or directed to be laid out in the purchase of land, is considered in equity as land; because there, whatever is agreed to be done, is considered as actually done. Where money, directed to be laid out in the purchase of land, comes into the hands of the person who would have had the absolute

property of the land, in case a purchase had been made, it will be considered as money, and may be claimed accordingly. But where it is in the hands of a third person, some act must be done by the person entitled to it, to shew that he considers it as money; otherwise it will still be deemed land.

Walker v. Denne,  
2 Ves. Jun. 170.  
Biddulph v. Biddulph,  
12 Ves. 161.

7. There are some chattels which are considered as annexed, and necessary to the enjoyment of the inheritance, that they are deemed in law to be a part of it, and are called heir looms. Thus deer in a real authorized park, fishes in a pond, rabbits in a warren, doves in a dove-house, are held to be part of the inheritance, and belong to the heir.

Heir Looms and Charters.  
1 Inst. 8 a.  
185 b.  
7 Rep. 17 b.  
Cro. Eliz. 372.

8. It is the same of charters, court rolls, deeds, and other evidences of the land; together with the chests and boxes in which they are contained.

Bro. Ab. Charters,  
pl. 13.  
1 Rep. 1.  
Plowd. 323.  
Pusey v. Pusey,  
1 Vern. 273.

9. Where an antient horn had immemorially gone with the estate, and had been delivered to the plaintiff's ancestors, to hold their land by, it was decreed that it should go with the land as an heir loom.

10. Incorporeal property consists of rights and profits arising from or annexed to land; such as advowsons and rents, which are held to be of a real nature. Even offices exercisable within certain places, though not annexed to land, are said to savour of the realty. And dignities or titles of honour, having been originally annexed to land, are also considered as real property.

Incorporeal Property.

11. With respect to the nature and properties of the different estates which may be acquired in land; it is necessary to premise, that an estate in land means such an interest as the tenant hath therein. It is called in Latin *status*, because it signifies the condition or circumstance in which the owner stands with regard to his property. To ascertain this with precision and

Of Estates in Land.

1 Inst. 345 a.

2 Black.  
Comm. 103.  
Plowd. 555.

accuracy, estates in land may be considered in a threefold view: first, with regard to the quantity of interest which the tenant has in his tenement; secondly, with regard to the time at which that quantity of interest is to be enjoyed; thirdly, with regard to the number and connexion of the tenants.

12. First, with regard to the quantity of interest which the tenant has in his tenement; this is measured by its duration and extent; and occasions the primary division of estates into such as are freehold, and such as are less than freehold.

Estates of  
Freehold.

Britton, c.32.  
Lit. § 59.

13. An estate of freehold is an estate in lands, or other real property, held by a free tenure, for the life of the tenant, or that of some other person; or for some uncertain period. It is called *liberum tenementum*, frank tenement or freehold; and was formerly described to be such an estate as could only be created by livery of seisin, a ceremony similar to the investiture of the feudal law. But since the introduction of certain modern conveyances, by which an estate of freehold may be created without livery of seisin, this description is not sufficient.

2Comm.386.

14. There are two qualities essentially requisite to the existence of a freehold estate. 1. Immobility; that is, the subject matter must either be land, or some interest issuing out of or annexed to land. 2. A sufficient legal indeterminate duration: for if the utmost period of time to which an estate can last, is fixed and determined, it is not an estate of freehold.

1 Inst. 42 a.

15. Thus if lands are conveyed to a man and his heirs, or for his life, or for the life of another, or until he is married, or goes to Rome; he has an estate of freehold: but if lands are limited to a man for 500 years, or for 99 years, if he shall so long live,

he has not an estate of freehold. The law was precisely the same in this respect when Bracton wrote—*Et sciendum quod liberum tenementum est id quod quis tenet sibi et hæredibus suis. Item ut liberum tenementum, sicut ad vitam tantum, vel eodem modo ad tempus indeterminatum, absque alia certa temporis præfinitione : sc. Donec quid fiat, vel non fiat ; ut si dicitur, Do tali donec ei providero. Liberum autem tenementum non potest dici alicujus, quod quis tenet ad certum numerum annorum, mensium, vel dierum ; licet ad terminum centum annorum, quæ excedit vitas hominum.*

Bracton,  
207 a.

16. It has been shewn that, upon the introduction of the feudal law, all lands became holden, either by a free, or a base tenure. The tenant who held by a free tenure had always a right to the enjoyment of the land, for his life at least ; and could not be dispossessed even for the non-payment of his rent or the non-performance of his services ; whereas the tenant who held in villenage might be turned out at the pleasure of his lord ; and his possession, being perfectly precarious, was considered to be the possession of his lord ; to whom he was, in a great degree, a mere slave.

Dissert.  
c. 2.

Black. Cons.  
on Copy-  
holders, 233.  
4to edit.

17. The person thus holding lands by a free tenure was therefore called a freeholder, because he might maintain his possession against his lord : and for this reason *liberum tenementum*, or freehold, was opposed to villenage. Thus Bracton says—*Item dicitur liberum tenementum, ad differentiam ejus quod est villenagium ; quia tenementorum aliud liberum, aliud villenagium.* And an estate of freehold, once created, could not cease without entry or claim.

207 a.

1 Inst. 218 a.

18. The acquisition of an estate of freehold was attended with several valuable rights and privileges. The freeholder became a member of the county court,

one of the *pares curiæ* in the court baron, or lord's court ; was entitled to be summoned on juries in the king's court ; and to vote at the election of a knight of the shire.

Coke, Cop.  
§ 15.

19. In subsequent times, the word freehold was, in some cases, applied to the estate or interest only of the tenant ; as where a person had an estate for life in lands held in villenage, he was said to have a freehold interest. Thus Lord Coke says — “ A freehold is taken in a double sense : either it is named a freehold in respect of the state of the law, and so copyholders may be freeholders ; for any that hath an estate for his life, or any greater estate, in any land whatsoever, may in this sense be termed a freeholder : or in respect to the land, and so it is opposed to copyholders : that what land soever is not copyhold, is freehold.”

20. It is however fully proved by Sir William Blackstone, in his *Considerations on Copyholders*, that no person can be considered as a freeholder, or entitled to the privileges of a freeholder, unless his estate consists of free land : so that although the determination of an estate be uncertain, yet if it is held by a base tenure, it is not considered in law as a freehold, nor has the tenant any of those privileges which the law gives to freeholders ; for in that case he has a freehold interest only, whereas no estate is, strictly speaking, freehold, unless the possessor holds it by a free tenure ; therefore all freehold estates must now be held in socage.

1 Inst. 4 a.  
Welden v.  
Bridgewater,  
Cro. Eliz.  
421.

21. Lord Coke says, a freehold estate may at several times be moveable, sometimes in one person, and, *alternis vicibus*, in another ; as if there be 80 acres of meadow, which have been used, time out of mind, to be divided between certain persons ;



and that a certain number of acres appertain to every of these persons, to be yearly assigned and allotted to them; they have freehold estates in their respective portions of the meadow.

22. It is said in Brooke's Abridgement, that an upper chamber in a house is no frank tenement, as it cannot continue; for if the foundation fails, the chamber is gone. But Lord Coke says, a man may have an inheritance in an upper chamber; though the lower buildings, and soil, be in another; and seeing it is an inheritance corporeal, it shall pass by livery. Tit. Demand, pl. 20.  
1 Inst. 48 b.

23. The possession of a feud was called seisin, which denoted the completion of the investiture by which the tenant was admitted to the feud. Upon the introduction of the feudal law into England, the word seisin was only applied to the possession of an estate of freehold; in contradistinction to that precarious kind of possession by which tenants in villenage held their lands; which was considered to be the possession of their lords, in whom the freehold continued. Of Seisin. Dissert. c. 1.  
1 Inst. 266 b. n. 1.  
1 Burr. 107.  
1 Inst. 200 b. Plowd. 503.

24. Where a freehold estate is conveyed to a person by feoffment, with livery of seisin; or by any of those conveyances which derive their effect from the statute of uses; he acquires a seisin in deed, and a freehold in deed. But where a freehold estate comes to a person by act of law, as by descent, he only acquires a seisin in law; that is, a right to the possession; and his estate is called a freehold in law. For he must make an actual entry on the land to acquire a seisin, and a freehold in deed. Where an Entry is necessary.  
1 Inst. 266 b.

25. The entry must be made by the person having right, or some one authorized by him. But the mere act of going on the land will not amount to a legal 1 Inst. 245 b. Plowd. 92, 3. 6 Mod. 44.

entry, sufficient to vest the actual seisin in the person who has the right. In order to constitute a legal entry, the person must enter with that intent, and do some act to shew such intention.

1 Inst. 15 a.  
252 b.

26. The entry of the heir, upon any part of the estate, will give him a seisin in deed of all the lands lying in the same county. For since the freehold in law is cast upon him by the death of his ancestor, and no person is in possession, so that no particular estate is to be defeated, a general entry into part, will be sufficient to reduce the whole into actual possession. But where the lands lie in different counties, there must be an entry in each county.

1 Inst. 250 a.

27. If the heir be deterred from entering by bodily fear, he may make claim, as near the land as he can. Such claim is however only in force for a year and a day; but if it be repeated once in the space of every year and day, which is called continual claim, it will have the same effect as a legal entry.

Lit. § 417, 18.

1 Inst. 15 a.  
3 Wils. Rep.  
521. 7 Term  
R. 390.  
8 Id. 213.  
Vide Tit. 8.  
c. 1.

28. The entry of the heir is only necessary where the lands are in the actual occupation of the ancestor, at the time of his death. For if the lands are held under a lease for years, and the lessee has entered under the lease, the heir will be considered as having a seisin in deed, before entry or receipt of rent, because the possession of the lessee for years is his possession.

Goodtitle  
v. Newman,  
Tit. 29. c. 3.

29. The possession of a guardian in socage is also the possession of the ward. So that if a widow, having a son on whom her husband's estate descends, continues in possession, after her husband's death, the law will consider her as guardian in socage to her son; and will therefore admit the son to have, by that means, had a seisin in deed of the land.

30. Where lands are let on leases for lives, the freehold is in the lessees ; consequently the heir has no immediate right of entry on the death of his ancestor. He is, however, entitled to the rent reserved in the lease, by the receipt of which he becomes seised of the rent, and also of the reversion expectant on the determination of the lease. 1 Inst. 15 b.

31. The seisin in law, which the heir acquires on the death of his ancestor, may be defeated by the entry of a stranger, claiming a right to the land ; which entry is called an abatement ; and, in such a case, the only mode of regaining the seisin is by an entry of the legal owner, which will restore him to the possession. If the abator dies seised, the lands descend to his heir, and such descent tolls, or takes away, the entry of the heir, who is, in that case, driven to his action. Abatement. 1 Inst. 277 a. Lit. § 385. Vide Tit. 29. c. 1.

32. Where a younger brother enters upon the death of the ancestor, such entry is not an abatement ; for it shall be intended that the younger brother did not set up a new title, but only entered to preserve the possessions of the ancestor in the family, that no one else should abate. If the younger son dies in possession, still the elder son may enter ; for as the law will not intend the entry of the younger son to be a wrongful act, therefore his possession becomes that of the elder. Lit. § 396. Gilb. Ten. 28. Vide Tit. 29. c. 1.

33. Where a person is in the actual seisin of an estate of freehold, he may lose that seisin by a stranger's entering on the estate, and forcibly ousting or dispossessing him of it, which is called a disseisin ; and is thus defined by Littleton, § 279—“ Disseisin is, properly, where a man entereth into lands or tenements where his entry is not congeable ; and ousteth him which hath the freehold.” Lord. Disseisin.

Coke, in his comment on this passage, observes, that every entry is not a disseisin, unless there be an ouster of the freehold.

34. There is scarcely a subject in the English law so obscure as that of disseisin. The full effect of disseisins must formerly have been, not only a dispossessing of the freeholder, but also a substitution of the disseisor, as tenant to the lord, and as one of the *pares curiæ*, in the place of the disseisee. Now, as the consent of the lord was formerly necessary to the admission of a new tenant into the feud, it is difficult to conceive how a complete disseisin could take place without the consent, or connivance, of the lord.

1 Barr. R.  
110.

35. Lord Mansfield has therefore justly observed, that “the precise definition of what constituted a disseisin, which made the disseisor the tenant to the demandant’s *præcipe*, though the right owner’s entry was not taken away, was once well known, but it is not now to be found. The more we read, unless we are very careful to distinguish, the more we shall be confounded. For after the assise of novel disseisin was introduced, the legislature by many acts of parliament, and the courts of law by liberal constructions, in furtherance of justice, extended this remedy, for the sake of the owner, to every trespass or injury done to his real property, if, by bringing his assise, he thought fit to admit himself disseised.”

Abeyance of  
the Freehold.  
1 Inst. 342 b.

36. Where there is no person *in esse* in whom the freehold is vested, it is said to be in abeyance; that is in expectation, remembrance, and contemplation of the law. But it is a principle of the highest antiquity that there should always be a known and particular owner of every freehold estate, so that it

should never, if possible, be in abeyance. This rule was established for two reasons: 1. That the superior lord might know on whom he was to call for the military services that were due for the feud; for otherwise the defence of the realm would have been considerably weakened. 2. That every stranger, who claimed a right to any particular lands, might know against whom he ought to bring his *præcipe* for the recovery of them, as no real action could be brought against any person but the actual freeholder.

Dyer, 71 a.  
Hob. 338.

37. In consequence of this doctrine, it is a rule of law, that a freehold estate cannot be created to commence *in futuro*; because in that case the freehold would be in abeyance from the execution of the conveyance to the moment when the estate created was to commence.

1 Inst. 217 a.  
5 Rep. 94 b.

38. One of the few instances in which a freehold estate can be in abeyance is where the parson of a church, or other ecclesiastical person, dies: for in that case the glebe, &c. is in abeyance, till a successor is appointed.

Lit. § 647.

39. All natural persons, born within the dominions of the crown of England, are capable of holding freehold estates; unless they are attainted of treason or felony, or have incurred the penalties of a *pre-munire*; in those cases they are considered as civilly dead, and therefore incapable of possessing any real property.

Who may  
have Free-  
hold Estates.

40. Aliens, that is, persons born out of the dominions of the crown of England, except the children and grandchildren of natural-born subjects, are incapable of holding freehold estates; unless they are naturalized by act of parliament, or made denizens by the king's letters patent.

1 Inst. 2 b.  
Tit. 29. c. 2.

41. Bodies corporate, whether sole or aggregate, ecclesiastical or lay, may hold those freehold estates that have been transmitted to them by their predecessors. They are however prohibited by several antient and modern laws, usually called the statutes of mortmain, from purchasing more lands, without licence from the crown; nor is even such licence, in all cases, sufficient.

Estates in  
Fee Simple.

42. Estates of freehold are either estates of inheritance, or not of inheritance. The former are again divided into inheritances absolute, or fee simple, and inheritances limited, one species of which is called fee tail.

43. “Tenant in fee simple (says Littleton, § 1.) is he which hath lands or tenements to hold to him and his heirs for ever, and it is called in Latin *feodum simplex*; for *feodum* is the same that inheritance is, and *simplex* is as much as to say lawful or pure; and so *feodum simplex* signifies a lawful or pure inheritance.”

Wright's  
Ten. 149.

44. Littleton has been censured for annexing an improper meaning to the word *feodum* in this definition; and it has been contended that the word *feodum* signifies land holden of a superior lord, by military or other services. But although this was certainly the original meaning of the word; yet when the feudal law was fully established here, and it was universally acknowledged that all the lands in England were held mediately or immediately of the king; the word *feodum*, or fee, became generally used to denote the quantity of estate or interest in the land. Thus it appears from Bracton, that the word *feodum* was often used, at the time when he wrote, in both these senses. *Et sciendum quod feodum est id quod quis tenet, ex quacunque causa, sibi et hæredibus suis.—Item*

Bract. 263 b.

*dicatur feodum alio modo ejus qui alium feoffat, et quod quis tenet ab alio ; ut si sit qui dicat, talis tenet de me tot feoda per servitium militare.* And it is evidently for the purpose of denoting the quantity of interest, that the word *feodum* is used, in pleading an inheritance in the king, viz. *Rex seisitus fuit in dominico suo ut de feodo* ; where the word *feodum* cannot possibly import an estate holden, the king not holding of any superior lord, but merely denotes an inheritance.

45. An estate in fee simple is the entire and absolute property of the land ; from which it follows that no person can have a greater estate or interest. And whenever a person grants an estate in fee simple, he cannot make any further disposition of it, because he has already granted the whole interest ; consequently nothing remains in him. An estate in fee simple may however be granted on condition ; and in devises, and deeds deriving their effect from the statute of uses, an estate in fee simple may be rendered defeasible on the happening of some future event.

Lit. § 11.  
Vaugh. 269.

46. Tenant in fee simple is the absolute master of all houses and other buildings erected on the land ; as also of all wood growing thereon, for trees are considered as parcel of the inheritance, and the law does not favour the severance of them from the freehold, because they would be thereby wasted and destroyed. He is also entitled to all mines of metal, except gold and silver ; and to work and dispose of all minerals and fossils which are under the land.

ante, § 3.  
Lyddall v.  
Weston,  
2 Atk. 19.

47. We have seen that the law requires the freehold should never, if possible, be in abeyance. But where there is a tenant of the freehold, the remainder or reversion in fee may exist for a time without any

Abeyance of  
the Fee.

particular owner; in which case it is said to be in abeyance. Thus, if an estate be limited to A. for life, remainder to the right heirs of B., the fee simple is in abeyance during the life of B., because it is a maxim of law, that *nemo est hæres viventis*.

48. The law, however, does not favour the abeyance of the fee simple, for in that case many operations are suspended. The particular tenant, or person in possession of the freehold, is rendered punishable at law for waste; for a writ of waste can only be brought by one entitled to the fee simple. The title, if attacked, could not formerly be completely defended; for there was no person in being whom the tenant of the freehold could pray in aid to support his right: nor could the mere right itself, if subsisting in a stranger, be recovered in this interval; for in a writ of right patent, a tenant for life could not join the mise, on the mere right. In modern times the courts do not favour the abeyance of the fee simple; because it is a restraint on alienation.

All other  
Estates  
merge in  
the Fee.

49. All inferior estates and interests in land are derived out of the fee simple; therefore whenever a particular estate, or limited interest in land, vests in the person who has the fee simple of the same land, such particular estate, or limited interest, is immediately drowned or merged in it; upon the principle that *omne majus continet in se minus*. \*

2 F. Wms.,  
604.

50. Where a sum of money is charged upon a real estate, which estate comes to the person entitled to the money; if in fee, the charge is merged. But where the money is secured by a term, or other legal

---

\* There is one exception to this rule as to estates tail, which will be mentioned in Title 2.



estate, in a third person, there the charge is not merged.

51. A term of 500 years was vested in trustees to secure a daughter's portion, payable at eighteen or marriage; the fee descended to the daughter, who afterwards died an infant about eighteen, having made a nuncupative will, and thereby devised all in her power to her mother. It was decreed by Lord Somers, and affirmed by the House of Lords, that this portion was not merged, but should go to the mother.

Thomas v. Keymish,  
2 Vern. 348.  
Powell v. Morgan,  
Id. 90.  
Chester v. Willes,  
Amb. 246.

52. The law has annexed to every estate and interest in lands, tenements, and hereditaments, certain peculiar incidents, rights, and privileges, which in general are so inseparably attached to those estates, that they cannot be restrained by any proviso or condition whatever.

Incidents  
to a Fee.

53. Of the several incidents inseparably annexed to an estate in fee simple, the first is an unlimited power of alienation. Any restriction therefore of this power, annexed to the creation of an estate in fee simple, would be absolutely void.

Alienable.

54. This unlimited power of alienation comprises in itself all inferior powers; so that a tenant in fee simple may create any inferior estate or interest out of his own. Therefore a custom that a tenant in fee simple cannot demise his lands for more than six years, is void; because it is contrary to the freedom of the estate of one who hath a fee simple.

Salford's  
Case, Dyer,  
357 b.

55. An estate in fee simple will descend to the heirs general of the person who was last seised thereof, whether male or female, lineal or collateral. It is for this reason that the word simple is added to the word fee, importing an absolute inheritance, clear of any condition, limitation, or restriction, to par-

Descendible  
to Heirs  
General.  
Tit. 29.c. 3.

ticular heirs ; in contradistinction to another class of estates of inheritance, which are only descendible to some particular heirs ; of which an account will be given in the next title.

Subject to  
Curtesy and  
Dower.

56. Estates in fee simple are subject to curtesy and dower, which will be noticed under these respective titles.

Liable to  
Debts.

57. Estates in fee simple are liable to the payment of all debts contracted by the tenant, for which he has acknowledged any security on record ; or has bound himself and his heirs by any deed or instrument under his seal ; which latter are called debts by specialty, and his heir is bound to satisfy those debts, as far as the land descended to him from such ancestor will extend ; which sufficient lands are called, in law, assets by descent.

Davy v.  
Pepys,  
Plowd. 439.  
Buckley v.  
Nightingale,  
1 Stra. 665.

58. By the common law, if the heir had aliened the assets, before an action was brought against him for the recovery of a debt due by his ancestor, the creditor was without any remedy. But now by the statute 3 Will. & Mary, c. 14. § 5. it is enacted, “ That in all cases where any heir at law shall be liable to pay the debts of his ancestor, in regard to any lands, tenements, or hereditaments descended to him, and shall alien or make over the same, before any action brought or process sued out against him ; that such heir at law shall be answerable for such debt or debts, in an action or actions for debt, to the value of the said land so by him sold, aliened, or made over ; in which case creditors shall be preferred, as in actions against executors or administrators. And such execution shall be taken out upon any judgement or judgements so obtained against such heir, to the value of the same land, as if the same were his own proper debt or debts : saving that the lands, tene-

ments, and hereditaments, *bona fide* aliened, before the action brought, shall not be liable to such execution."

59. Estates in fee simple are not in general liable to the payment of simple contract debts—a doctrine not very consonant to natural justice. But by the statute 13 Eliz. c. 7., when a man is declared a bankrupt, the commissioners have a full power to dispose of all his lands and tenements for payment of all his debts.

60. Where a trader died before he was declared a bankrupt, his real estate was not liable to his simple contract debts. But now, by the statute 47 Geo. III. sess. 2. c. 74., it is enacted, "that when any person, being at the time of his death a trader within the bankrupt laws, shall die seised of, or entitled to, any real estate, which he shall not by his last will have charged with the payment of his debts; and which would have been assets for the payment of his debts due on any specialty, in which the heirs were bound; the same shall be assets, to be administered in courts of equity for the payment of all the just debts of such person, as well debts due on simple contract as on specialty: provided that all creditors by specialty shall be paid the full amount of their debts before any creditors by simple contract, or by specialty, in which the heirs are not bound, shall be paid any part of their demands."

61. The personal estate is however the first and immediate fund for the payment of debts. And though a person charge his real estate, by his will, with the payment of all his debts, yet that does not exempt the personal estate from being first applied for that purpose; unless the testator expressly exonerate it.

Ancaster  
v. Mayer,  
1 Bro.R. 454.  
Burton v.  
Knowlton,  
3 Ves. 107.  
Brummell  
v. Prothero,  
Id. 111.  
1 Cox's R.  
185.

Noke  
v. Darby,  
1 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 506.

62. Even a testamentary disposition of the personal estate will not exempt it from being applied in payment of debts: for a court of equity will suppose the intention of the testator to have been, that only the residue of his personal estate, after payment of debts, should go to the legatees; unless a contrary intention evidently appears.

Of Crown  
Debts.

2 Inst. 19.

63. Lord Coke says that, at common law, the king was entitled to have execution of the body, goods, and lands of his debtor, by virtue of his royal prerogative. By the 8th chapter of *Magna Charta*, it was stipulated that the king's bailiffs should not seize any lands or rent for debt, as long as the goods and chattels of the debtor sufficed. *Nos vero nec ballivi nostri non sesiemus terram aliquam vel redditum pro debito aliquo, quamdiu catalla debitoris presentia sufficiunt; et ipse debitor paratus est satisfacere.* Lord Coke observes that this was an act of grace, restraining the power which the king had before.

Dyer, 67 b.  
Att. Gen.  
v. Resby,  
Hard. 378.

2 Inst. 19.

64. Where the goods and chattels of the debtor are not sufficient, his real estates become liable. Where the debt is of record, or by specialty, the process is by writ of extent, or *extendi facias*, returnable in the court of exchequer, by which the sheriff is directed to inquire, by the oaths of lawful men, what lands and tenements the debtor had at the time of the debt contracted. Where the debt arises on simple contract, the practice of the exchequer is, on affidavit of the debt, to direct a commission to inquire of it; and, on inquisition returned, the debt is recorded; and an extent issues.

4 Term R.  
408.

Favel's Case,  
Dyer, 160 a.  
224 b.

Anon. Saville,  
53.

65. Where the king's debtor dies, the crown may notwithstanding seize his lands and goods. And it is said by Fanshawe, remembrancer of the queen, that after the death of any debtor to the crown, process

shall issue against the executors, the heir and the terretenants, all together.

66. In a modern case the court of exchequer said, that whenever an extent might have issued in a man's lifetime, a writ of *diem clausit extremum* may issue against the estate of a simple contract debtor, where such debt was found by inquisition; though the person was not the king's debtor by record at the time of his death. Rex v. Mit-  
chener,  
Bunb. 118.

67. It is not necessary there should be any contract with the king, to make a person a crown debtor. For it was resolved in 2 Eliz. that if any money, goods, or chattels of the king come to the hands of any subject, by matter of record, or by matter in *fait*, the land of such subject is charged therewith. How con-  
tracted.  
Plowd. 321.

68. Sir Walter Mildmay had received annually out of the exchequer £50, as a fee for his diet, for 30 years together; which was paid by the command of the lord treasurer, who had authority by privy seal to make allowance and payment of all fees and dues; but in truth this was not any fee. The question was, whether Sir Walter's executor should be charged with these sums, so received. It was adjudged that he should be charged; for this payment, by the appointment of the lord treasurer, was not allowable; the privy seal not being an authority to dispose of the queen's treasure, unless where it was due. And he disposing of it otherwise, was out of his authority; therefore the money so paid was a debt due to the crown. Dodding-  
ton's Case,  
Cro. Eliz.  
545.

69. The Earl of Devon being master of the ordnance, obtained of King James I. a privy seal, authorizing him to take and sell broken and unserviceable iron ordnance; the same having theretofore been Earl of  
Devon's Case,  
11 Rep. 89.

taken and enjoyed by the masters of the ordnance; by virtue of which the earl took several pieces of iron ordnance, and sold them for his own use. The question was, whether the earl's executors might be charged to the king, for the conversion of the said ordnance.

It was resolved that the privy seal, being made on a false suggestion, was void: therefore that the earl's executors were bound to account with the crown for the broken ordnance.

ante, § 68.

70. It is said, in *Doddington's* case, that the party receiving must know that it is the king's money. For if a person sells land to a receiver of the king, who pays him for it with the king's money, and the vendor is not privy to it, he shall not be answerable.

*Brassey v. Dawson*,  
2 Stra. 978.

71. In a modern case it was held that land tax money, in the hands of the collector, was a crown debt.

Bind the  
Lands when  
contracted.  
*Gilb. Exch.*  
c. 26.  
*Tit. 14.*  
*Tit. 32. c. 8.*

72. Lord Chief Baron Gilbert says, all debts due to the king bind the lands of the debtor, from the time the same were contracted. For the debts that were of record always bound the lands of the debtor; and the debts not of record, by the statute 33 Hen. VIII. c. 39. bind as a statute staple. For all lands being held mediately or immediately of the crown, when any debt was recorded of any person, it laid the estate as liable to that debt, as if it had been a reservation in the first patent. Therefore as the king could seize for the nonpayment of the reserved rents, so he could seize the lands for any debt with which they were charged.

73. In consequence of this doctrine, if a person becomes bound to the king in a bond, and process is issued on it, the writ warrants the sheriff to inquire

of and seize the lands of the debtor, which he had at the day when the bond was executed. But if a bond is assigned to the king, the process shall not be to inquire of and seize the lands which the obligor had when he entered into the bond; but only the lands which the obligor had when the bond was assigned.

74. By the statute 13 Eliz. c. 4. § 1. it is enacted, that all the lands, &c. which any treasurer or receiver of the courts of exchequer, or duchy of Lancaster, treasurer of the chamber, cofferer of the household, treasurer for the wars, or of the admiralty or navy, or the mint, receiver of any sums of money imprest, or otherwise, for the use of the queen, her heirs or successors, customer, collector, or farmer of the customs, within any port of the realm, receiver general of the revenues of any county or counties, answerable in the receipt of the exchequer, or the duchy of Lancaster, hath, while he remains accountant, shall, for the payment of the queen, her heirs or successors, be liable and put in execution, in like manner as if the same treasurer, receiver, &c. had, the day he became first officer or accountant, stood bound by writing obligatory, having the effect of a statute staple, to her majesty, her heirs or successors, for payment of the same.

75. Where lands are once liable to a crown debt, the lien continues, into whose hands soever they pass, even though conveyed by the debtor *bonâ fide*, to a purchaser, for a valuable consideration.

Into whose Hands soever they pass.

Vide Tit. 32.  
c. 26. Co. Lit. 209.  
non a

76. The only proper and legal discharge of a debt due to the crown is an acquittance from the officers of the exchequer, which is usually called a *quietus*; because it generally concluded with these words, *abinde recessit quietus*. By the statute 27 Eliz. c. 3.

How discharged.

Poole v. Shergold,



1 Cor's R.  
160.  
Vide Tit. 14.

§ 8. it is enacted, that if an accountant or debtor to the crown obtains a *quietus* in his lifetime, his lands shall not be sold after his death.

Estates in  
Fee forfeited  
for Treason,  
&c.  
2 Hawk. P.C.  
c. 4. § 1.

77. Estates in fee simple are forfeited to the crown by attainder of treason; and the lands whereof a person attainted of treason dies seised in fee, become actually vested in the crown without any office; because they cannot descend, on account of the corruption of blood of the person last seised; and the freehold shall not be in abeyance.

1 Inst. 390 b.

78. This forfeiture relates backwards to the time when the crime was committed; so as to avoid all intermediate sales and incumbrances; but not those made before.

1 Hale P. C.  
360.  
1 Salk. 85.

79. In cases of petty treason and felony, the estate is only forfeited to the king for a year and a day; which was formerly called the *annum diem et vastum*; after that period, in consequence of the corruption of blood, it escheats to the lord of whom it is held.

Tit. 30.

And for Dis-  
claimer.  
Dissert. c. 1.  
§ 84.

80. An estate in fee simple is still so far considered as a strict feud, and the tenant thereof so far bound to perform the feudal duties and services which remain due, that if he disclaims upon record to hold his lands of his lord, it will operate as a forfeiture of his estate; and the lord may thereupon have a writ of right upon a disclaimer, for the recovery of the land. But if the lord accepts rent from the tenant after the disclaimer, he will be thereby barred of this writ.

1 Inst. 102 a.  
Finch, 270.  
Booth R. A.  
133.  
3 Leon. 271,  
272.

Qualified  
Fees.  
1 Inst. 1 b.  
Plowd. 557.

81. Lord Coke says—"Of fee simple it is commonly holden that there be three kinds, viz. fee simple absolute, fee simple conditional, and fee simple qualified, or base fee. But the more genuine and apt division were, to divide fee, that is inheritance, into three parts; viz. simple or absolute, conditional, and qualified, or base. For this word simple properly ex-



cludeth both conditions and limitations that defeat or abridge the fee.”

82. The nature of an estate in fee simple absolute has been already explained. But where an estate limited to a person and his heirs has a qualification annexed to it, by which it is provided that it must determine whenever that qualification is at an end ; it is then called a qualified or base fee. As in the case of a grant to A. and his heirs, tenants of the manor of Dale ; whenever the heirs of A. cease to be tenants of the manor of Dale, their estate determines. 1 Inst. 27 a.

83. Lord Hale gives the following instance of a qualified or base fee. King Henry III. *dedit manerium de Penrith et Sourby Alexandro regi Scotiæ et hæredibus suis, regibus Scotiæ.* Alexander died, not leaving any heir king of Scotland, but only daughters. *Et ea de causa* King Edward I. recovered seisin ; and the coheirs of Alexander were excluded. Idem, n. 6.

84. In a modern case the Judges of the Court of King’s Bench certified to the Court of Chancery, that a devise to trustees and their heirs, upon trust to pay the testator’s debts and legacies ; and after payment thereof, to his sister for life, &c. gave a base fee to the trustees, determinable on payment of the debts and legacies. Willington v. Willington, 1 Black. R. 645.

85. When a person holds an estate to him and his heirs, as long as A. B. has heirs of his body, this is a species of qualified or base fee ; of which an account will be given in the next title. 10 Rep. 97 b.

86. The proprietor of a qualified or base fee has the same rights and privileges over his estate, till the qualification upon which it is limited is at an end ; as if he were tenant in fee simple. With respect to conditional fees, they will be treated of in the next Title. Plowd. 557.

## TITLE II.

## ESTATE TAIL.

## CHAP. I.

*Of the Origin and Nature of Estates Tail.*

## CHAP. II.

*Of the Power of Tenant in Tail over his Estate,  
and the Modes of barring it.*

## CHAP. I.

*Of the Origin and Nature of Estates Tail.*

- |                                                |                                                           |
|------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Of Conditional Fees.</i>                 | 23. <i>What may be entailed.</i>                          |
| 8. <i>Statute De Donis.</i>                    | 30. <i>Who may be Tenants in Tail.</i>                    |
| 12. <i>Description of an Estate Tail.</i>      | 31. <i>Incidents to Estates Tail.</i>                     |
| 13. <i>Tail General and Special.</i>           | 32. <i>Power to commit Waste.</i>                         |
| 14. <i>Tail Male and Female.</i>               | 33. <i>Subject to Curtesy and Dower.</i>                  |
| 17. <i>Estates in Frank Marriage.</i>          | 38. <i>But not to Merger.</i>                             |
| 19. <i>Estates Tail are held of the Donor.</i> | 40. <i>Tenant in Tail has a Right to the Title Deeds.</i> |
| 22. <i>Modes of creating an Estate Tail.</i>   | 41. <i>Is not bound to pay off Incumbrances.</i>          |

## SECTION 1.

Of Condi-  
tional Fees.

**D**ONATIONS of land were originally simple and pure, without any condition or modification annexed to them ; and the estates created by such donations were held in fee simple. In course of time however it became customary to make donations of a more limited nature, by which the gift was restrained to some particular heirs of the donee, exclusive of

others; as to the heirs of a man's body, by which only his lineal descendants were admitted, in exclusion of collateral heirs; or to the heirs male of his body, in exclusion both of collateral heirs, and lineal female heirs.

2. Thus Bracton, in treating of donations, says— Lib. 2. c. 6.

*Item sicut ampliari possunt hæredes, sicut prædictum est, ita coarctari poterunt per modum donationis, quod omnes hæredes generaliter ad successionem non vocantur. Modus enim legem dat donationi, et modus tenendus est contra jus commune, et contra legem, quia modus et conventio vincunt legem. Ut si dicatur—Do tali tantam terram cum pertinentiis in N. habendum et tenendum sibi et hæredibus suis, quos de carne sua et uxore sibi desponsata procreatos habuerit. Vel sic—Do tali, et tali uxori suæ, vel cum tali filia mea, &c. habendum et tenendum sibi et hæredibus suis, de carne talis uxoris, vel filię exeuntibus, vel procreatis vel procreandis : quo casu cum certi hæredes exprimuntur in donatione, videri poterit quod tantum sit descensus ad ipsos hæredes communes per modum in donatione appositum ; omnibus aliis hæredibus suis a successione penitus exclusis, quia hoc voluit donator.*

Fleta lib. 3.  
c. 9.  
Britton, c. 36.

3. These limited donations were evidently derived from the *feudum talliatum*, of which an account has been already given. They were probably introduced into England about the end of the reign of King Henry II., or that of one of his sons : for Glanville, who gives a very accurate account of the different estates that were known in his time, makes no mention whatever of limited donations ; whereas we have seen that Bracton, who wrote in the reign of King Henry III., has given a full description of them.

Dissert. c. 1.  
§ 75.

4. The evident object of these limitations was to restrain the donees from disposing of the estates thus

given ; but the general propensity which prevailed about the reign of Edward I. to favour a liberty of alienation, induced the judges to construe limitations of this kind in a very liberal manner. Instead of declaring that the estates must descend to those heirs who were particularly described in the grant, according to the evident intention of the donors, and the strict principles of the feudal law\* ; and that the donees should not, in any case, be enabled by their alienation to defeat the succession of those who were mentioned in the gift, or the donor's right of reverter ; they had recourse to an ingenious device, taken from the nature of a condition. Now it is a maxim of the common law, that when a condition is once performed, it is thenceforth entirely gone ; and the thing, to which it was before annexed, becomes absolute, and wholly unconditional.

Tit. 13. c. 2.

Plowd, 235.  
241.

1 Inst. 19 a.

2 — 333.

7 Rep. 34 b.

5. The judges, reasoning upon this ground, determined that these estates were conditional fees ; that is, were granted to a man and the heirs of his body, upon condition that he had such heirs : therefore, as soon as the donee of an estate of this kind had issue born, his estate became absolute, by the performance of the condition ; at least for these three purposes : 1. To enable him to alien the land, and thereby to bar, not only his own issue, but also the donor of his right of reverter. 2. To subject him to forfeit the estate for treason or felony ; which, till issue born, he could not do, for any longer term than that of his

---

\* Jus feudale non solum talliis non adversari, sed maximè eis favere constat : non solum quod nullas fæminas ad successionem admittet, sed multo magis, quod tenorem successionis semper servandum jubeat ; hæreditatemque secundum eam deferendam expressè jubeat—*Craig, Lib. 2. Tit. 16. § 3.*

own life; least the right of inheritance of the issue; and that of reverter of the donor, might be thereby defeated. 3. To enable him to charge the lands with rents and other incumbrances, so as to bind his issue.

6. The donee of a conditional fee might also alien *Plowd, 241.* the lands, before issue had; nor could the donor have entered in such a case, because that would have been contrary to his own donation, which limited the lands to the donor and his issue. And if the donee had issue born, after the alienation, the donor was excluded during the existence of such issue. The issue were also bound by the alienation of their ancestor, though previous to their birth; because they could only claim in the character of his representatives, and were therefore barred by his acts. But where the donee of a conditional fee aliened before he had issue, such alienation did not bar the donor's right of reverter, whenever there happened a failure of issue; because the subsequent birth of issue was not a sufficient performance of the condition to render the precedent alienation valid.

7. Where the person, to whom a conditional fee *7 Rep. 34 b.* was limited, had issue, and suffered it to descend to such issue, they might alien it: because, having succeeded by descent to the estate of their ancestor, who had acquired a power of alienation by having issue, they took the estate in the same manner, discharged from any restraint whatever. But if the issue did not alien, the donor would still be entitled to his *1 Inst. 19 a.* right of reverter; as the estate would have continued subject to the limitations contained in the original donation.

8. From this mode of construing conditional fees, *Statute de Donis.* the purposes for which they were intended were

completely frustrated; and therefore the nobility, whose object was to perpetuate their possessions in their own families, procured the statute of Westm. 2. 13 Edward I., usually called the statute *De Donis Conditionalibus*, to be made; which, after reciting the right of alienation assumed by the donees of conditional fees, proceeds in these words—*Dominus rex statuit quod voluntas donatoris, secundum formam in charta doni sui manifestè expressam, de cætero observetur, ita quod non habeant illi, quibus tenementum sic fuit datum sub conditione, potestatem alienandi tenementum sic datum, quo minus, ad exitum illorum quibus tenementum sic fuerit datum, remaneat post eorum obitum; vel ad donatorem, vel ad ejus hæredem, si exitus deficiat, revertatur; per hoc quod nullus sit exitus omnino; vel si aliquis exitus fuerit, et per mortem deficiet, hærede de corpore hujusmodi exitus deficiente.*

1 Burr. 115.

9. This statute, as Lord Mansfield has justly observed, only repeated what the law of tenures had said before, that the tenor of the grant should be observed: therefore the judges, in the construction of it, determined that where an estate was limited to a man and the heirs of his body, the donee should not in future have a conditional fee; but divided the estates, by creating a particular estate in the donee, called an estate tail, subject to which the reversion in fee remained in the donor.

2 Inst. 335.  
Plowd. 248.

10. In consequence of this construction, estates limited in this manner are not conditional; nor is the right of entry of the donor, on failure of issue of the donee, considered as arising from a breach of the condition, but as a right of reverter accruing to the donor on the natural expiration of the estate granted. The statute rejects the erroneous opinion which had been held by the judges, that a donation

of this kind created a conditional fee ; and declares that it vests an estate of inheritance in the donee, and some particular heirs of his, to whom it must descend ; and that the estate of the donor is a reversion, expectant on the determination of that estate. Plowd. 242.

11. The statute *De Donis* was made in the reign of a prince who, from the great number and excellence of his laws, has justly acquired the title of the English Justinian. It is therefore highly probable that he was induced, by some motives unknown to modern times, to give his assent to a law which, by allowing the nobility to entail their estates, made it impossible to diminish the property of the great families ; and at the same time left them all means of increase and acquisition. 1 Inst. 392 b.

12. An estate tail may be described to be an estate of inheritance, created by the statute *De Donis Conditionalibus* ; which is descendible to some particular heirs only of the person to whom it is granted, not to his heirs general. It is called an estate tail, or a fee tail, from its similarity to the *feodum talliatum* ; which appears to have been well known at that time ; as it is mentioned in the 46th chapter of this statute ; where, in enumerating several kinds of estates, it is said, *ad terminum vitæ, vel annorum, vel per feodum talliatum*. Description of an Estate Tail.

13. Littleton says, tenant in tail is in two manners ; tenant in tail general, and tenant in tail special. Where lands are given to a man, and the heirs of his body, without any farther restriction, it is an estate in tail general, because how often soever such donee in tail be married, his issue by every such marriage is capable of inheriting the estate tail. If the gift is restrained to certain heirs of the Tail General and Special. Lit. § 13—15

donee's body, exclusive of others ; as where lands are given to a man and the heirs of his body, on Mary his present wife to be begotten ; it is an estate in tail special ; and the issue of the donee by any other wife is excluded.

Tail Male  
and Female.  
Lit. § 21, 22.  
1 Inst. 25 a.  
n. 1.

14. If lands are given to a person and the heirs male of his or her body, this is called an estate in tail male, to which the heirs female are not inheritable. On the other side, if lands are given to a person and the heirs female of his or her body, this is called an estate in tail female, to which the heirs male are not inheritable.

Lit. § 24.

15. In all instances of special entails, which limit the lands to one particular class of heirs, no descendant of the donee can make himself inheritable to such a gift, unless he can deduce his descent through that particular class of heirs to which the succession of the land was limited. Therefore if lands be given to a man and the heirs male of his body, and he has issue a daughter, who has issue a son, this son can never inherit the estate ; for being obliged to claim through the daughter, he must necessarily shew himself out of the words of the gift, which limited the lands to the heirs male only of the donee, which the daughter cannot be.

1 Inst. 25 b.

16. For the same reason, if lands be given to a man and the heirs male of his body, remainder to him and the heirs female of his body ; and the donee has issue a son, who has issue a daughter, who has issue a son ; this son cannot inherit either of the estates ; because he cannot deduce his descent wholly either through the male or the female line.

Estates in  
Frank Mar-  
riage.  
Lit. § 17.

17. It was formerly a practice for a person to give lands to another, as a marriage portion with his daughter or cousin ; to hold to the husband and



wife in frank marriage, by which the lands became descendible to the issue of such marriage. Thus Glanville says—*Liberum dicitur maritagium, quando aliquis liber homo aliquam partem terræ suæ dat cum aliqua muliere alicui in maritagium.* Finch says that land could not be given in frank marriage with a man that was cousin to the donor, but always with a woman. Lib. 7. c. 18. B. 2. c. 3.

18. The judges had construed gifts in frank marriage in the same manner as donations to persons and the heirs of their bodies; by which means they were considered as conditional fees, and consequently were alienable after issue had. But this construction being evidently contrary to the intention of the persons who had created such estates, the statute *De Donis*, after reciting the case of a gift in frank marriage, comprises it in the remedial part of that law, by which means gifts of this kind became estates in tail special; and the donees were restrained from alienating them. 1 Inst. 21 a.

19. We have seen that in consequence of the statute *Quia Emptores*, where a person conveys away his whole estate, he cannot reserve any tenure to himself. This statute only extends to those cases where the entire fee simple is transferred; therefore, where a tenant in fee simple grants an estate tail out of it, the tenant in tail will hold of the donor, and not of the chief lord. Estates Tail are held of the Donor. Dissert. c. 21 § 14. 1 Inst. 23 a. 2—505. Plowd. 237.

20. If the donor of an estate tail grants over his reversion to a stranger, the donee will hold of such stranger. But if lands be given to A. in tail, with remainder in fee to a stranger, the donee of the estate tail will hold of the chief lord; because the whole estate is conveyed away. 2 Rep. 92 a. 2 Inst. 505. Dyer, 362 b.

21. Where the tenant in tail has also the reversion in fee in himself, as he cannot hold of himself, it being a maxim in law that *nemo potest esse tenens et dominus*, he shall hold of the superior lord.

Modes of  
creating an  
Estate Tail.

22. The statute *De Donis* speaks only of three modes of creating an estate tail; namely, by a gift to a man and his wife, and to the heirs of their bodies; a gift in frank marriage; and a gift to a person and the heirs of his body issuing. Yet if lands be given to a person and his heirs, and if the donee dies without heirs of his body, that it shall remain to another, this shall be an estate tail, by the equity of the statute; although it be out of the words. For the makers of the act did not mean to enumerate all the forms of estates tail, but to put these as examples: so as all manner of estates tail, general or special, are within the purview of the act. At common law the interest of the donor was infringed and eluded, which was contrary to right and good conscience; therefore the statute being made to restrain that vicious liberty of breaking such intents, which was suffered by the common law, shall be extended by equity.

Vide Tit. 32.  
c. 20.

What may be  
entailed.

23. With respect to the kind of property on which the statute *De Donis* was meant to operate, the only word in the statute is *tenementum*, which has been stated to signify every thing that may be holden, provided it be of a permanent nature: so that not only lands may be entailed, but also every species of incorporeal property of a real nature; as will be shewn hereafter.

1 Inst. 20 a.  
n. 4.

24. Mr. Hargrave observes that two things seem essential to an entail within the statute *De Donis*: one, that the subject be land, or something of a real

nature; the other, that the estate in it be an estate of inheritance. It is not however necessary that the thing to be entailed should issue out of lands; for if it is annexed to lands, or in anywise concerns lands, or relates to them, it may be entailed.

25. Thus Lord Coke says, that estovers, commons, or other profits whatsoever, granted out of land, may be entailed. So the office of serjeant of the Common Pleas, and the office of keeper of a church, may be entailed, as also the office of steward, receiver, or bailiff of a manor. 1 Inst. 20 a. 7 Rep. 33 b.

26. It has been stated that money, directed to be laid out in the purchase of land, is considered in equity as land. In such a case, if the land to be purchased is directed to be conveyed to a person in tail, he will be considered, in equity, as tenant in tail of the money till the purchase is made. Tit. 1. § 6.

27. As to inheritances merely personal, which neither issue out of, nor relate to, land, or some certain place; and which are not demandable, *ut tenementa*, in a *præcipe*, they cannot be entailed within the statute *De Donis*. So that when things of this nature are limited to a person and the heirs of his body, the donee takes a conditional fee, and may dispose of the property as soon as he has issue. 1 Inst. 20 a.

28. An annuity which only charges the person of the grantor, and not his lands, though it may be granted in fee, cannot be entailed. In a modern case, Lord Hardwicke held that an annuity in fee simple, granted by the crown out of the four and a half *per cent.* duties, payable for imports and exports at the island of Barbadoes, was merely a personal inheritance; not entailable within the statute *De Donis*; therefore that being settled upon A. and the heirs of his body, it was a conditional fee at com- Idem. Stafford v. Buckley. 2 Ves. 170.

mon law ; so that A. having issue might alien it, and thereby bar the possibility of reverter.

Holderness v.  
Carmarthen,  
1 Bro. R.  
377.

29. It was held by Lord Thurlow, in a modern case, that an annuity granted by act of parliament out of the revenues of the post-office, redeemable upon payment of a sum of money, to be laid out in land, was a personal inheritance only, not entailable within the statute *De Donis* ; for that notwithstanding the power reserved to the crown of laying it out in land, the parties had a right to treat it as an annuity ; and the court of chancery would not keep the objection, of its being land, in contemplation from century to century, because of the possibility of substituting the money in the place of the annuity.

Who may be  
Tenants in  
Tail.

Willion v.  
Berkeley,  
Plowd. 227.  
7 Rep. 32 a.

30. All natural persons capable of holding estates of inheritance in land may be tenants in tail. It was determined in 4 Eliz. that the king was within the statute *De Donis*, as well as a common person ; because that statute was made to remedy the error which had crept into the law, that the donees had the power of alienating an estate, given to him and the heirs of his body after issue had, and to restore the common law in this point to its right and just course ; which it did, by restoring to the donor the observance of his intent. And when the statute *De Donis* ordained that the will of the donor should be observed, it made his will to be a law, as well against the king as against another.

Incidents to  
Estates Tail.

31. Estates tail, like estates in fee simple, have certain incidents annexed to them, which cannot be restrained by any proviso or condition whatever.

Power to  
commit  
Waste.

32. The first of these is, that as tenant in tail has an estate of inheritance, he has a right to commit every kind of waste ; by felling timber, pulling

down houses, opening and working mines, &c. ; but this power must be exercised during the life of the tenant in tail ; for, at the instant of his death it ceases. If therefore a tenant in tail sells trees growing on the land, the vendee must cut them down during the life of the vendor ; otherwise they will descend to the heir as parcel of the inheritance.

Perk. § 58.  
Plowd. 259.  
11 Rep. 50a.

33. It is said by Clark Just. in 27. Eliz. that if tenant in tail grants all his estate, the grantee is punishable for waste. So if the grantee grants it over, his grantee is also punishable.

3 Leon. 121.

34. The Court of Chancery will not, in any case whatever, restrain a tenant in tail from committing waste.

35. Thus Lord Talbot is reported to have said that in Mr. Saville's case, who being an infant, and tenant in tail in possession, in a very bad state of health, and not likely to live to full age, his guardian cut down a quantity of timber just before his death, the remainder man applied for an injunction to restrain him, but could not prevail.

Cases Temp.  
Talbot, 16.

36. A person settled lands on his daughter and the heirs of her body, and took a bond from her not to commit waste. The bond was put in suit, but the court held it to be an idle bond, and decreed it to be delivered up to be cancelled.

Jervis v.  
Bruton,  
2 Vern. 251.

37. Estates tail are subject to curtesy and dower, which are incidents inseparably annexed to them ; as will be noticed under these titles.

Subject to  
Curtesy and  
Dower.

38. It has been stated that whenever a particular estate in land vests in the person who has the fee simple of the same land, such particular estate is immediately drowned or merged in it. In consequence of this principle, if an estate had been given before the statute *De Donis* to A. and the heirs of his body, it would have merged, if the fee simple

But not to  
Merger.  
Tit. I. § 49.

2 Rep. 61 a.  
Plowd. 296.

was limited to A. by the same conveyance, or came to him afterwards. But it was determined by the judges in the reign of Edward III. that an estate tail could not be merged, surrendered, or extinguished, by the accession of the greater estate: so that a man may have at the same time, and in his own right, both an estate tail, and the immediate reversion in fee simple, in the same land.

39. The reason of this determination was, that the object of the statute *De Donis* being to render estates tail unalienable, if they were allowed to merge in the fee simple, an obvious mode of destroying them might have been adopted, by the tenant in tail's purchasing the reversion. There is however one case in which an estate tail merges in the reversion, which will be stated hereafter.

Tit. 35. c. 9.  
Tenant in Tail  
has a Right  
to the Title  
Deeds.  
Papillon v.  
Voice, 2 P.  
Wms. 471.

40. Tenant in tail, having an estate of inheritance, has a right to all deeds and muniments belonging to the lands; which the Court of Chancery will order to be given up to him.

Is not bound  
to pay off In-  
cumbrances.

41. Tenant in tail having only a particular estate, and not the entire property, he is not bound to pay off any charges or incumbrances affecting the estate: but where a tenant in tail does pay off an incumbrance charged on the fee simple, the presumption is, that such payment was made in exoneration of the estate; because he may, if he pleases, acquire the absolute ownership.

Jones v.  
Morgan,  
1 Bro. R.  
206.  
11 Ves. 277.

Kirkham v.  
Smith,  
Tit. 15. c. 4.

42. The tenant in tail may however in a case of this kind, by taking an assignment of the incumbrance to a trustee for himself, or by several other acts, charge the estate with the payment of such incumbrance.

Shrewsbury  
v. Shrews-  
bury, 1 Ves.  
Junr. 227.

43. The Earl of Shrewsbury being tenant in tail under an act of parliament, which restrained him from alienation, unless he conformed to the established

religion, and being a Roman catholic, paid off a sum of £15,000 charged on the estate for his sisters' portions, without taking any assignment of the term by which that sum was secured; or any declaration of trust of it for himself. In 1751 Lord S. by deed, reciting that he was seised of the freehold, subject to this charge, that he had paid off the portion of one of his sisters, and part of the portion of another, and that as none of the portions had been raised under the term, he had a right to have them raised for himself: He in consideration of £1000 conveyed an advowson, being part of the premises comprised in the term, to one Robinson; the trustees consented, and were parties, upon condition that the consideration should go in discharge of the portions. Lord S. died in 1787, leaving a will, but without taking any notice of his right to be reimbursed this sum, or doing any other act by which his intention could be known.

A bill was brought by his personal representative against the next tenant in tail, and the trustees of the term, praying that they might be compelled to raise such sums as were paid by the late earl to his sisters.

Lord Thurlow said that, in the transaction of 1751 respecting the advowson, there was a perfect and distinct recognition that the circumstance of paying off the charge did make Lord S. a creditor; and decreed for the plaintiff. 15 Ves. 173.

44. It was formerly held, that a tenant in tail was not even bound to keep down the interest of any incumbrances charged on the estate. It has been since resolved, that in some cases he is bound to keep down the interest. Tit. 15. c. 4.

## TITLE II.

## ESTATE TAIL.

## CHAPTER II.

*Of the Power of Tenant in Tail over his Estate,  
and the Modes of barring it.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                   |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>1. <i>Can only alien for his own Life.</i></p> <p>4. <i>His Alienation not absolutely void.</i></p> <p>6. <i>Sometimes a Discontinuance.</i></p> <p>9. <i>Sometimes voidable by Entry.</i></p> <p>11. <i>Creates a base Fee.</i></p> <p>13. <i>Cannot create an Estate to commence after his Death.</i></p> <p>16. <i>Exception.</i></p> <p>19. <i>The Issue not bound by his Ancestor's Contracts.</i></p> | <p>26. <i>Unless he confirms them.</i></p> <p>28. <i>Nor subject to his Debts.</i></p> <p>29. <i>Except Crown Debts.</i></p> <p>34. <i>Tenants in Tail may make Leases.</i></p> <p>35. <i>Are subject to the Bankrupt Laws.</i></p> <p>37. <i>And to Forfeiture for Treason.</i></p> <p>43. <i>But not for Felony.</i></p> <p>44. <i>Modes of barring Estates Tail.</i></p> <p>50. <i>And Money entailed.</i></p> |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

Can only  
alien for his  
own Life.

§ 650.

Walsing-  
ham's Case,  
Plowd. 561.  
contra.

**T**HE statute *De Donis*, affecting a perpetuity, restrains the tenant in tail from alienating his estate, by any mode whatever, for a greater term than that of his own life. Thus Littleton says—"If tenant in tail grants all his estate to another, the grantee has no estate but for term of life of the tenant in tail, and the reversion of the tail is not in the tenant in tail, because he has granted all his estate and rights: But the reversion and inheritance of the tail, during the life of the tenant in tail, is in abeyance.

2. It is however observable that the words of the statute *De Donis*, by which the alienation of an estate



tail is prohibited, only extend to the original donee, and not to his issue. *Nec habeant illi, quibus tene-  
mentum sic fuerit datum, potestatem alienandi*. But still the prohibition was extended by the judges to the issue, *in infinitum*. And Broke says, the omission of the heirs of the donee in the statute was a misprision of the clerk.

Plowd. 13.  
T. Jones,  
239.  
Ab. Tit. Par-  
liam. 91.

3. Lord Coke, in his comment on this statute, says—“It was adjudged by Beresford that the issues in tail should not alien, no more than they to whom the land was given; and that was the intent of the makers of the act; and it was but their negligence that it was omitted, as there it is said. In this case, by way of purchase, the land is given to the donees, and by way of limitation to the issues in tail; and therefore, by a benign interpretation, the purview of this extends to the issues in tail.”

2 Inst. 336.

4. Although the statute *De Donis* restrains tenants in tail from alienating their estates for any longer term than that of their own lives; yet this must not be understood literally, that the grantee has only an estate for the life of the tenant in tail, which determines *ipso facto* by the death of the tenant in tail. All that is meant by it is, that the grantee's estate is certain and indefeasible, during the life of the tenant in tail only; upon whose death it becomes defeasible by his issue.

His Aliena-  
tion not  
absolutely  
void.

2 Ld. Raym.  
779.  
Vide Machill  
v. Clarke,  
infra.

5. It is however otherwise where a thing is granted out of an estate that is entailed, as a rent; for such grant becomes absolutely void by the death of the grantor, and can never be made good.

Walter v.  
Bould,  
Bulst. 32.

6. The law considers the tenant in tail as having not only the possession, but also the right of possession and inheritance in him; he is therefore allowed to alienate them by certain modes of con-

Sometimes  
a Discon-  
tinuance.

Lit. § 595.  
2 Inst. 335.

veyance, so as to take away the entry of the issue, and drive him to his action; which is called a discontinuance. For, as Lord Coke says—"Seeing he had an estate of inheritance, the judges compared it to the case where a man was seised in right of his wife, or a bishop in right of his bishopric, or an abbot in right of his monastery.

1 Inst. 325 a.

Driver v.  
Hussey,  
1 H. Black.  
269.

7. An estate tail may be discontinued by five different modes of conveyance; namely feoffment, fine, recovery, release, and confirmation. But it is a rule of law, that in order to work a discontinuance of an estate tail, the person discontinuing must be actually seised by force of the entail.

Lit. § 625.  
1 Inst. 335 a.  
Walsing-  
ham's case,  
Plowd.  
552—562.

8. Where an estate tail is discontinued, the estates in remainder and the reversion are also in general discontinued. But where they are not discontinued, the estate tail is not discontinued; and therefore, if the reversion or remainder be in the king, the tenant in tail cannot discontinue the estate tail: for the king is a body politic of all others most high and worthy, out of whose person no estate of inheritance or freehold can pass, or be removed, without matter of record.

Sometimes  
voidable  
by Entry.  
Seymour's  
Case,  
10 Rep. 95.  
2 Ld. Raym.  
779—782.  
7 Term R.  
278.

9. A tenant in tail may also alienate his estate by other modes of conveyance which only transfer the possession, and not the right of possession. These alienations do not however become *ipso facto* void by the death of the tenant in tail, but may be avoided by the entry of the issue.

1 Inst. 51 a.

10. If a tenant in tail exchanges with a tenant in fee simple, it will be good, till it is avoided by the entry of the issue in tail.

Creates a  
Base Fee.  
Plowd.  
554—557.  
10 Rep. 96 a.

11. In all cases of alienation by tenants in tail, the alienee has an estate of inheritance, descendible to him and his heirs, as long as the tenant in tail

has heirs of his body, inheritable to the estate tail ; which is called a base or qualified fee. In many cases this estate may be avoided, after the death of the person who created it, by the action or entry of the issue in tail ; in some both the action and entry of the issue in tail are taken away. But till a base fee is determined, it has all the incidents of an estate in fee simple. Tit. 35. c. 9.

12. Where a tenant in tail makes a conveyance in fee for a valuable consideration, the Court of Chancery will decree him to make a good title. Mr. Justice Wright is reported to have said, that the court will not point out what title the tenant in tail shall make ; but will decree him to make such title as he is capable of doing. Sutton v. Stone, 2 Atk. 101.

13. Where a tenant in tail limits an estate to commence after his own death ; it is absolutely void, and he continues to be tenant in tail as before ; because there the issue in tail has a right paramount, *per formam doni*. Cannot create an Estate to commence after his Death.

14. A tenant in tail covenanted to stand seised to the use of himself for life, after to the use of his eldest son, and his heirs. It was resolved that the son should not have the land by this covenant ; for when the tenant in tail covenanted to stand seised to the use of himself for life, it was as much as he could lawfully do ; the limitation over was void ; and he was seised as before. Bedingfield's Case, Cro. Eliz. 895. 2 Rep. 52 a. Blithman's Case, Tit. 6. c. 3.

15. A tenant in tail covenanted, in consideration of natural love and affection, to stand seised to the use of himself for life, remainder to his eldest son in tail, &c. The question was, whether the tenant in tail had made any alteration in his estate by this covenant. Machill v. Clarke, 2 Ld. Raym. 778. 7 Mod. 18. 11 — 19.

Lord Chief Justice Holt delivered the opinion of the court. He said it had been made a question if  
 Vide Tit. 32. c. 10 & 11. tenant in tail bargained and sold, or leased or released, or covenanted to stand seised of lands entailed, to another in fee, whether the estate conveyed determined by the death of the tenant in tail, or continued till the actual entry of the issue in tail: he held that such estate continued till the actual entry of the issue in tail; for these reasons: 1. Because tenant in tail had an estate of inheritance in him; and before the statute *De Donis*, it was held that such estate was a fee simple conditional: then the statute made no alteration as to the tenant in tail himself, but only made provision that the issue in tail should not be disinherited by the alienation of his ancestor. By Coke Lit. 18. it appeared that a base fee might be created out of an estate tail; where it was said, that if a gift in tail was made to a villein, and the lord entered, he had a base fee. Then if a base fee might be created out of an estate tail, there was great reason that the bargainee, &c. of tenant in tail should have it. 2. The tenant in tail had the whole estate in him, therefore there was no reason why he could not divest himself of it, by grant, bargain, and sale, &c., since the power of disposition was incident to the property of every one. 3. It was no prejudice to the issue in tail, therefore no breach of the statute *De Donis*. Indeed there were strong words in the act for restraining alienations to the prejudice of the issue in tail, where it says, *Quod finis ipso jure sit nullus, &c.*; yet the construction of the said words had always been, that the entry of the issue was tolled by such fine, and he was driven to his formedon. Therefore if an act,

which drove the issue in tail to his formedon, would not be a breach of the statute ; much less would it be a breach of the statute to drive the issue in tail to enter, to avoid a bargain and sale by his ancestor. As to authorities, Seymour's case was in point, where it was held that the bargainee of tenant in tail had a descendible estate. In 3 Co. Rep. 84 *b.* the case in Littleton, § 613, was put and considered ; and there it was held that the words ought not to be literally understood. Those of Littleton were, that if tenant in tail granted *totum statum suum* to I. S. and his heirs, and made him livery of seisin, yet his estate determined by the death of the tenant in tail. But this ought to be understood, that it was no discontinuance, but would drive the issue in tail to enter to avoid it. 4. That in this case the covenant to stand seised did not alter the estate tail, but it still continued. The reason was, that though the tenant in tail might make a conveyance of the estate in his lifetime, which should be good and binding, till avoided by the issue ; yet any conveyance which he made, to commence after his death, should be void ; if by possibility it might not take effect during his life. The estate, by this covenant, was to commence from and after the death of the tenant in tail ; and the instance put of a lease for years was apposite. If a tenant in tail made a lease for years not warranted by the statute 32 Henry VIII., to commence immediately, or which might possibly commence during his life, such lease was voidable only by his issue, on his death ; but if he made a lease to commence from and after his death, it was *ipso facto* void. Now this remainder was limited to commence from and after the death of the tenant in tail, therefore it was void ; it might be said that here

10 Rep. 95.  
Tit. 35. c. 12.

7 Mod. 26.

he covenanted to stand seised to the use of himself for life, the remainder over, so that the estate to arise upon the covenant to stand seised, did arise in his own lifetime. To this it was answered, that the covenant to stand seised to the use of one's self was void, except for the sake of the remainder over; that the remainder, being to commence after his death, was void; and the covenant to stand seised to his own use could not be good, for the sake of a void thing.

What was the reason that such estate was void, when it was limited to commence after the death of tenant in tail? It was because it was to commence at a time when the right of the estate, out of which it would issue, was in another person, by a title paramount to the conveyance, viz. *per formam doni*. A tenant in tail had an estate out of which he might carve other estates, provided he did it out of the estate in himself, so as to make it rightful in its creation, but otherwise not. For it would be injurious to make good a lease, or other estate, commencing upon the right of another, whose title was paramount to the lease or estate so made. In the principal case the issue in tail had a title paramount, the title of the remainder, by virtue of the covenant, the very minute the remainder would take effect; that was the only true reason; therefore to make such an estate to take effect upon the possession of the issue, whose title was paramount, would be to make an estate take effect by wrong, the very minute it had its creation.

Doe v.  
Rivers.

Tit. 5. c. 2.

Exception.

Adjudged that the remainder was void, and the estate tail not altered by this covenant.

16. It was however laid down in the preceding case, that an estate created by a tenant in tail, which must, or by possibility might, commence in the lifetime of the tenant in tail, was good.

17. Thus if a tenant in tail covenants to stand seised to the use of the covenantee for life, remainder to I. S. in fee, or to the use of I. S. for life, remainder to I. N. in fee; the remainder is good; till avoided by the entry of the issue in tail, although the tenant in tail dies before the remainder takes effect; because the estate for life takes effect immediately, and the remainder might by possibility have taken effect in the life of the tenant in tail.

2 Ld. Raym.  
782. 7 Mod.  
27.

18. So if tenant in tail releases to I. S. in fee, to the use of himself for life, remainder to I. N. in fee, after his death; this remainder is good, though it is to commence after the death of the tenant in tail; because it arises out of the estate of the releasee; which estate would have been good, till avoided by the entry of the issue in tail.

Idem.

Doe, v.  
Rivers,  
Tit. 5. c. 2,

19. The issue in tail is not bound, either at law or in equity, to complete any contract or agreement made by his ancestor, respecting the estate tail, because the issue claims, *per formam doni*, from the person by whom the estate tail was originally granted, and not from his ancestors.

The issue not  
bound by his  
Ancestor's  
Contracts.

3 Rep. 41 b.  
1 P. Wms.  
271.  
2 Ves. 634.

20. It was formerly, held that a covenant by a tenant in tail to levy a fine upon a valuable consideration, and a decree that he should do so, would bind the issue in tail. This doctrine was soon altered, and it was determined that a court of equity cannot dispense with any of those forms which the law requires to bar estates tail.

Hill v. Carr,  
1 Cha.  
Ca. 294.  
Cavendish  
v. Worsley,  
Hob. 203.  
2 Vent. 350.

21. A tenant in tail made a mortgage, without levying a fine, with a covenant for further assurance, and died. Lord Keeper Bridgeman would not compel the issue to make the assurance good; though the father might have done it by fine or recovery.

Jenkins  
v. Keymis,  
1 Lev. 237.



**Herbert v. Tream,**  
2 Ab. Eq. 28.

22. A tenant in tail entered into articles, concerning his lands, for payment of his debts; but died without doing any act to destroy the estate tail. It was decreed that this agreement could not be executed against the heir in tail.

**Sangon v. Williams,**  
Gilb. R. 164.  
**Weale v. Lower,**  
2 Vern. 306.  
1 P. Wms. 720.

23. A decree was obtained against a tenant in tail, who had contracted for the sale of his estate, and received a great part of the consideration, to compel him to levy a fine, and suffer a recovery. The tenant in tail stood out all process against him, to a contempt, and died. A bill was then brought against his issue to revive the decree against him, which was dismissed.

**Wharton v. Wharton,**  
2 Vern. 3.

24. A tenant in tail covenanted to settle a jointure on his wife. In order to perform his covenant, he acknowledged a fine, but died before it was perfected. The Court of Chancery refused to supply this defect against his issue.

**Luttrell v. Olmius,**  
Tit. 36. c. 11.  
Unless he confirms them.

25. Where a person is prevented from barring an estate tail by force and management, the Court of Chancery will compel the parties to act as if the recovery had been suffered.

26. If the issue in tail does any act towards carrying the contract or agreement of his ancestor into execution, it will then become binding on him; and he will be compelled, in equity, to perform it.

**Ross v. Ross,**  
1 Cha. Ca. 171.

27. Francis Ross having issue James his legitimate son, and John a bastard, devised lands to John in tail. James having copyhold lands by descent, James and John agreed to exchange their estates. The agreement being executed, James obtained a decree against John to levy a fine of his estate tail, and by that means to settle it on James. John died in contempt for not obeying the decree: his issue



entered on the copyhold estate, and continued in the enjoyment of it ; in consequence of which a bill was filed against him by James, to perform the agreement made by his father.

It was said by the court, that if a tenant in tail agrees to convey, he is bound by that agreement : if he dies without performing it, his issue is not bound to perform it. But if the issue accepts of the agreement, and enters, as in this case, on the lands, it then becomes his own agreement, and will bind him. So decreed against the defendant.

28. The issue in tail is not subject to any of the debts or incumbrances of his ancestor ; therefore if a tenant in tail acknowledges a statute or recognizance, upon which the land entailed is extended, the issue in tail may enter, upon the death of the ancestor, and oust the creditor.

Nor subject  
to his Debts.  
Bro. Ab. Tit.  
Recog. pl. 7.

29. Estates tail were not originally liable, in the hands of the issue, to the payment of debts due by the ancestor to the crown. But it is enacted by the statute 33 Hen. VIII. c. 39. § 75. That all manors lands, tenements, and hereditaments which shall come or be in the possession of any person or persons to whom the same shall descend, revert, or remain in fee simple, or in fee tail general or special, by, from, or after the death of any of his or their ancestors, whose heir he is ; which said ancestor or ancestors was or shall be indebted to the king, or to any person or persons to his use, by judgement, recognizance, obligation, or any other specialty, the debt whereof shall not be paid ; then and in such case the same manors, &c. shall be and stand charged and chargeable to and for the payment of the said debt.

Except  
Crown Debts.

30. Upon the construction of this act, it was resolved by the barons of the Exchequer in 41 Eliz.

Anderson's  
Case, 7 Rep.  
21.

ante, c. 1.  
§ 30.

Tit. 1. § 67.

on conference had with Popham, Ch. J. and divers other justices, 1. That before this statute, if tenant in tail became indebted to the king by judgement, recognizance, obligation, or otherwise, and died, the king should not extend the land in the seisin of the issue in tail; for the king was bound by the statute *De Donis*; as it was adjudged in Lord Berkeley's case. 2. That if the tenant in tail becomes indebted to the king, by the receipt of the king's money, or otherwise, unless it be by judgement, recognizance, obligation, or other specialty, and dies; the land in the seisin of the issue in tail shall not be extended for such debt of the king's. For this statute extends only to the said four cases; and all other debts remain at common law. 3. That if tenant in tail becomes indebted to the king by one of the four ways above mentioned in the said act, and dies; and, before any process or extent, the issue in tail, *bonâ fide*, aliens the land, it shall not be extended by force of the said act. For, as it appears by the words thereof, it makes the land in the possession or seisin of the heir in tail only, liable against the issue in tail, and not the alienee. For the makers of the act had reason to favour the purchaser, farmer, &c. of the heir in tail, more than the heir himself: because they are strangers to the debts of the tenant in tail, and came to the land *bonâ fide*, on good consideration. 4. That a debt originally due to a subject, to which the king becomes entitled by attainder, forfeiture, gift of the party, or any other collateral way, was not within the statute; which only extended to debts originally due to the king, by judgement, recognizance, obligation, or other specialty.

31. Where a person takes an estate tail, by gift from his ancestor, on good consideration, such estate

is not liable to a debt of the ancestor, contracted after the gift was made.

32. Foskew being seised in fee of the manor of S. in consideration of his son's marriage, covenanted to levy a fine of the said manor to the use of himself and his wife for their lives, remainder to the use of his son and his wife, and the heirs of their bodies. A fine was levied accordingly. Foskew afterwards acknowledged a recognizance to Queen Elizabeth, and died indebted to the crown. The manor of S. was extended for the queen's debt. Foskew's Case, 2 Leon, 90.

It was argued by Coke, that the manor was not chargeable by the stat. 33 Hen. VIII. For the object of that statute was to make lands entailed liable to the king's debts, where they were not so before, against the issue. But the words "was or shall be indebted" should not be intended after the gift made. That, "shall be," was to be intended of future debts, after the statute: whereas, at the time of the settlement, Foskew was not receiver or other officer to the queen. That this was not within the statute, for the words were, by gift of his ancestors. Here the son had not the manor by gift of his father, but rather by the statute of uses; and so he was in, in the *post*, not in the *per*, by his ancestor: for the fine was levied to divers persons, to the uses aforesaid; nor was the gift a mere gratuity, but in consideration of marriage; and the debt accrued not till after the gift.

He admitted that if there had been any fraud in the case, or any purpose in Foskew, when he made the conveyance, to become the king's debtor or officer, it would be within the statute, and the gift had been a mere gratuity. Resolved that the lands should be discharged.

Coxhead's  
Case, Moo.  
126.

33. One Hawthorn having an office which rendered him an accountant to the crown, became indebted to Queen Elizabeth by obligation. Two years after he covenanted with one Coxhead, in consideration of his son's marrying his daughter, to stand seised to the use of himself for life, remainder to the use of Coxhead and his daughter in tail. Hawthorn afterwards accepted another office of account, by reason of which he became indebted to the crown, and committed suicide.

The crown having seized his lands, Coxhead petitioned that they might be discharged : to which it was answered, that the lands were subject to what was due to the crown by reason of the first office, which he had before the conveyance, by the statute 13 Eliz. ; but as to the office which he had accepted after the conveyance, the arrears of that was not a charge upon the lands conveyed. Upon Coxhead's paying the arrears of the first office, he had an *amoveas manus*.

Tenants in  
Tail may  
make Leases.

Tit. 32. c. 5.

34. In conformity to the principle that a tenant in tail can only alien or charge his estate for his own life, all leases made by tenants in tail might have been avoided, after their death, by their issue. By the statute 32 Hen. VIII. c. 28. tenants in tail are enabled to make leases for three lives or 21 years, which shall bind their issue, but not the persons in remainder, or the reversioner.

Are subject  
to the Bank-  
rupt Laws.

35. By the statute 21 Ja. I. c. 19. § 12. the commissioners of bankrupts are enabled to convey any manors or hereditaments whereof any bankrupt is seised, of an estate tail in possession, reversion, or remainder, whereof no reversion or remainder is in the king, of the gift or provision of his majesty. It is further provided, that all such conveyances shall

be good against the said bankrupts, and the issue of their bodies, and against all persons whatever, whom the said bankrupts, by common recovery or other ways or means, might cut off or debar from any remainder, reversion, rent, profit, title, or possibility in, to, or out of the said manors, &c.

36. Where a bankrupt is tenant in tail in possession, the commissioners of bankrupts are enabled, by this statute, to convey the fee simple of the lands: Where he is tenant in tail in remainder, expectant on some preceding estate, the commissioners only acquire a base fee, determinable on failure of issue of the bankrupt. For the statute only enables the commissioners to make such a title as the bankrupt himself might have made. Now, as the bankrupt himself could not, without the concurrence of the person in possession, by recovery or otherwise, bar the remainder or reversion, the commissioners cannot do it. But as the bankrupt might have levied a fine of the estate, which would have barred his own issue, therefore the commissioners acquire a base fee.

Fearne's  
Op. 83.  
Pye v.  
Daubuz,  
3Bro. R. 595.

Tit. 36. c. 2.

Tit. 35. c. 9.

37. We have seen that conditional fees were liable to forfeiture for high treason, as soon as the donee had issue. When the statute *De Donis* was made, it was resolved that lands entailed were not forfeited for treason or felony, but for the life of the tenant in tail; one of the causes of this statute being to preserve the inheritance in the blood of those to whom the gift was made, notwithstanding any attainder of felony or treason.

And to For-  
feiture for  
Treason:

1 Inst. 392 b.

38. This exemption from forfeiture not being agreeable to the rapacious principles of Henry VIII., he had the address to procure a statute, 26 Hen. VIII. c. 13. whereby it is enacted, That every person convicted of high treason "shall lose and forfeit all such

lands, tenements, and hereditaments which any such offender or offenders shall have, of any estate of inheritance, in use or possession, by any right, title, or means, &c. at the time of any such high treason committed, or any time after."

39. By the statute 34 & 35 Hen. VIII. c. 20. estates tail of the gift of the crown were protected from forfeiture for treason. But by the statute 5 & 6 Edw. VI. c. 11. the former statute is repealed as to estates tail of the gift of the crown; which are again made forfeitable for treason.

Dowtie's  
Case,  
3 Rep. 10 b.

40. The statute 26 Hen. VIII. does not extend to attainders by parliament, or where the party stood mute. But by the statute 33 Hen. VIII. c. 20. estates tail are forfeited by all manner of attainders of treason; the actual possession is also transferred, and vested in the crown presently by the attainder.

1 Inst. 372 b.  
Hawk. P. C.  
B. 2. c. 49.

41. Lord Coke has stated the effect of these statutes in the following words: "If tenant in tail in possession, or that hath a right of entry, be attainted of high treason, the estate tail is barred, and the land is forfeited to the king." It has however been determined that where a tenant in tail, with remainder to a subject, discontinues his estate before his attainder, his issue, having only a right of action, is not affected by it. But where the immediate reversion is in the crown, the tenant in tail cannot create a discontinuance; so that a right of entry remains in the issue, which is forfeited by the attainder.

3 Rep. 2 b.  
Cro. Car.  
428.

ante, § 8.

Plowd. 557.

42. Estates in remainder are not forfeited by the attainder of the person having the first estate tail: therefore if a tenant in tail, with remainder over, be attainted of high treason, the crown will thereby acquire a base fee, as long as there is issue of the person attainted; but upon failure of heirs of the

body of the person attainted, inheritable to the estate tail, the person in remainder, or his issue, will become entitled.

43. The statute 26 Hen. VIII. only extends to cases of high treason; therefore, as to felonies, the statute *De Donis* still remains in force, so that, by attainder of felony, estates tail are only forfeited during the life of the tenant in tail; the inheritance being preserved to the issue. And Lord Coke says, if tenant in tail of lands holden of the king be attainted of felony, and the king, after office, seizeth the same, the estate tail is in abeyance. But not for Felony.  
1 Inst. 392 b.  
  
Id. 345 a.

44. Estates tail had not existed a long time before they were found to be productive of all those inconveniences which must ever attend property that is unalienable. Thus Lord Coke says—"The true policy of the common law was overturned by the statute *De Donis Conditionalibus*, 13 Edw. I., which established a general perpetuity, by act of parliament, for all those who had or would have it; by force whereof all the possessions in England, in effect, were entailed accordingly; which was the occasion and cause of the said and divers other mischiefs: and the same was attempted and endeavoured to be remedied at divers parliaments; and divers bills were exhibited accordingly, (which I have seen), but they were always, on one pretence or other, rejected. But the truth was, that the lords and commons, knowing that their estates tail were not to be forfeited for felony or treason, as their estates of inheritance were, before the said act, (and chiefly in the time of Henry III. in the barons wars); and finding that they were not answerable for the debts or incumbrances of their ancestors; nor did the sales, alienations, or leases of their ancestors bind Modes of barring Estates Tail.  
  
6 Rep. 40 b.



them, for the lands which were entailed to their ancestors ; they always rejected such bills.”

Vol. 2. p. 142.

45. It appears from the Rolls of Parliament, that in 17 Edw. III. the commons petitioned the king that the statute of Westm. 2. might be declared, in what degree the issue in tail might alien ; to which his majesty answered, that the law formerly used in this case should continue.

46. The impossibility of obtaining a legislative repeal of the statute *De Donis* induced the judges to adopt various modes of evading its effects ; and of enabling tenants in tail to charge or alien their estates. The first of these was founded on the idea of a recompence in value ; in consequence of which the judges held that the issue in tail was bound by the warranty of his ancestor, where assets of equal value descended to him from such warranting ancestor.

Tit. 36.

47. The next was, that a feigned recovery should bar the issue in tail, and the remainders and reversion ; a doctrine established in the reign of Edward IV. The last was by the legislature, who made two acts of parliament in the reigns of Henry VII. and Henry VIII., by which a fine is declared to be a bar to the issue in tail.

Tit. 35.

Tit. 36. c. 10.

48. By the statute 34 & 35 Hen. VIII. c. 20. estates tail granted by the crown, as a reward for services, are protected from the general operation of fines and recoveries, and are by that means rendered absolutely unalienable.

49. By the statute 42 Geo. III. c. 116. § 52. tenants in tail are enabled to convey such parts of their estates as shall be deemed eligible and necessary to be sold for the redemption of the land tax charged thereon, by deed indented and enrolled, or



registered in the manner prescribed by this act, in which it is declared that every such deed shall be as effectual as if the tenant in tail had levied a fine, or suffered a recovery thereof.

50. It has been stated that money, agreed or directed to be laid out in the purchase of land, is considered in equity as land. In cases of this kind, where the land was directed to be conveyed to a person in tail, it was a settled rule in Chancery, that wherever a fine, which may be levied at any time, would have rendered the party absolute owner of the land, he was entitled to receive the money immediately. If a recovery, which can only be suffered in term time, was necessary, there the Court of Chancery would direct the money to be actually laid out in the purchase of land; in order to give the persons in remainder their chance of the first tenant in tail's dying before he could suffer a recovery.

And Money entailed.  
Tit. 1. § 6.  
Edwards v. Warwick,  
2 P. Wms. 171.

51. By the statute 39 & 40 Geo. III. c. 56. reciting the practice of courts of equity, as stated in the preceding section, it is enacted, that courts of equity, on petition of the first tenant in tail, and of the party having any prior estate, being adults, or of *femes covert*, being separately examined, may order such money to be paid to them, or applied as they shall appoint.

52. Upon a petition under this act, by a tenant for life, and the first of several tenants in tail in remainder, Lord Rosslyn said, that having consulted Lord Kenyon, Lord Eldon, and the Master of the Rolls, as to the manner in which the act should be executed, they had agreed that it would be proper not to order the money to be paid out of court, till such time as the tenant in tail might actually have suffered a recovery of the land. The court made

Lowton v. Lowton,  
5 Ves. 12. n.

the order ; but directed that it should have no effect unless the tenant in tail should be living on the second day of the next term.

6 Ves. 116,  
576.

8 Ves. 609.

It is also now settled that in cases of this kind there must be a reference to the master to inquire whether the parties had in any manner incumbered their interests in the money.

## TITLE III.

### ESTATE FOR LIFE.

#### CHAP. I.

*Of the Nature of an Estate for Life, and its Incidents.*

#### CHAP. II.

*Of Waste by Tenants for Life,*

---

#### CHAP. I.

*Of the Nature of an Estate for Life, and its Incidents.*

- |                                            |                                                        |
|--------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. Description of.                         | 30. But must keep down the Interest.                   |
| 2. How created.                            | 31. May alien their Estates.                           |
| 10. Held of the Grantor.                   | 33. When they may keep the Title Deeds.                |
| 11. Not entailable.                        | 36. What Acts create a Forfeiture.                     |
| 15. Subject to Merger.                     | 46. Of General Occupancy.                              |
| 17. Tenants for Life entitled to Estovers. | 52. Of Special Occupancy.                              |
| 23. And to Emblements.                     | 57. Ecclesiastical Persons are quasi Tenants for Life. |
| 28. May pray in Aid.                       |                                                        |
| 29. Not bound to pay off Incumbrances.     |                                                        |

---

#### SECTION 1.

**A**N estate for life is a freehold interest in lands, the duration of which is confined to the life or Description of. lives of some particular person or persons ; or to the happening or not happening of some uncertain event. It is in most respects similar to the *ususfructus* of the civil law ; which is thus defined in Justinian's Institutes : — *Ususfructus est jus alienis rebus utendi fruendi, salva rerum substantia.* For the Lib. 2. tit .4.

tenant for life has a right to the possession, and annual produce of the land, during the continuance of his estate; without having the *proprietas*, that is, the absolute property and inheritance of the land itself; which is vested in some other person.

**How created.** 2. Estates for life are of two sorts; either expressly created by deed, or some other legal assurance, or else deriving their existence from the operation of some principle of law.

3. The first of these, which is the subject of the present title, arises where lands are conveyed to a man for the term of his own life, or that of any other person, or for more lives than one: in all which cases he is called tenant for life, except where he holds during the life of another; and then he is called tenant *pour auter vie*.

4. When a person having an estate for his or her own life, either by express limitation, or by the operation of some principle of law, grants it over; the grantee becomes tenant *pour auter vie*.

5. By the statute 19 Cha. II. c. 6. § 2., it is enacted, That if the persons for whose lives estates are granted shall go abroad, and no sufficient proof be made that they are alive; in any action commenced for the recovery of the lands, by the lessors or reversioners, the judge shall direct the jury to give their verdict as if the persons so remaining abroad were dead. And it has been held that a remainder man is within this statute.

Holman  
v. Exton,  
Carth. 246.  
Vide stat. 6.  
Ann. c. 18.  
2 Cox. R.  
373.  
1 Inst. 41 b.

6. If lands are conveyed to a person for his own life, and that of A. and B. the grantee has an estate of freehold determinable on his own death, and the deaths of A. and B.; nor can there be any merger of the freehold, during the lives of A. and B. into the estate which the lessee has for his own life; because

though an estate for a man's own life is greater than an estate for the life of any other person ; yet here the lessee has not two distinct estates in him, but only one freehold, circumscribed with that limitation, as the measure of its continuance.

7. The estates for life mentioned in the preceding sections will generally endure as long as the life or lives for which they are granted. But there are some estates for life which may determine upon future contingencies, before the death of the persons to whom they are granted.

8. Thus if an estate be given to a woman, *dum sola fuerit*, or *durante viduitate*, or to a man and a woman during coverture, or as long as the grantee shall dwell in a particular house ; in all these cases the grantees have estates for life, determinable upon the happening of these events.

9. If a manor generally worth £10 a year be granted to a person till he has received out of it £100, this will give him an estate for life : for as the profits are uncertain, and may rise and fall, no precise time can be fixed for the determination of the estate.

10. Tenants for life hold of the grantors by fealty, and such other reservations as are contained in the deed by which the estate is created. Where there is no reservation, they hold by fealty only ; this estate not being comprehended within the provisions of the statute *Quia Emptores*.

11. An estate for life is not capable of being entailed under the statute *De Donis* ; for all estates tail must be estates of inheritance. Therefore, where an estate for life or lives is limited to a person and the heirs of his body, the latter words only operate as a description of the persons who shall take as special occupants, during the life or lives for which

1 Inst. 42 a.

1 Inst. 42 a.  
6 Rep. 35 b.

Held of the  
Grantor.

Lit. § 132.

Dissert. c. 3.  
§ 22.

Not entail-  
able.

Tit. 2. c. 1.  
§ 24.

Low v.  
Burton, 3 P.  
Wms. 262.

the estate is held, and the grantee takes the absolute property, which he may dispose of by deed.

Grey v.  
Mannock,  
cited, 6 Term  
R. 292.

12. A lease for three lives was devised to trustees, in trust for B. for life, remainder to F. for life, remainder to her first and other sons in tail, with limitations over. B. died. Sir F. Mannock, who was the first son of F. in the lifetime of his mother, then in possession, did by fine *sur concessit*, and deed of uses, limit the estate to himself and his heirs.

Upon his mother's death he entered, surrendered the subsisting lease, and took a new one for fresh lives. Subsequent to this he made his will, and devised his estate to his wife, who contracted for the sale of it. The purchaser having some doubt whether the limitations were well barred, a bill was brought for performance of the contract.

Lord Nottingham said, this was a descendible freehold, not intailable within the statute *De Donis*; therefore no common recovery could be suffered of it. But the person who would have been tenant-in-tail, had it been an inheritance, was entitled to the absolute ownership; as, at common law, the conditional fee became absolute by the parties having issue. Decreed performance of the contract.

Blake v.  
Blake, cited  
3 P. Wms. 10.

13. R. Blake devised a lease for three lives to trustees, in trust for his son R. Blake, and the heirs male of his body; and in case he should die without issue, then for the plaintiff, his other son, in like manner. R. Blake the son surrendered the old lease, and took a new one for three lives, to him and his heirs. R. Blake the son died without issue, having by his will disposed of the lease. A bill was filed by his second son to have the benefit of the new lease; insisting that the surrender of the old lease, and the taking of the new one, were not sufficient to bar the

limitation to the second son ; and that those claiming under R. Blake the son ought to be declared trustees of the new lease, for the plaintiff.

The Court of Exchequer was of opinion that R. Blake the son being tenant in tail \*, a court of equity could not have called upon him to have declared such a trust in his lifetime ; that there was no stronger equity against his representatives ; and dismissed the bill.

1 Cox's Rep.  
266.  
Cooper's  
R. 178.

14. This doctrine was fully confirmed by Lord Kenyon in a modern case, who also inclined to the opinion that a person having an estate of this kind might dispose of it by will. Lord Redesdale has said he could find no decision that at all warrants Lord Kenyon's *dictum* : that he found from his note of the case of Blake v. Blake, that though the estate was devised ; the argument did not turn on the will, nobody conceiving that the estate would pass by it, if the *quasi* estate tail subsisted at the death of the testator.

Doe v. Lux-  
ton, 6 Term  
R. 291.

Rep. in  
Ireland,  
V. 1. p. 294.

15. An estate for life is subject to merge in the inheritance ; therefore, whenever the tenant for life acquires the absolute property or inheritance of the lands, his estate becomes merged or drowned in the fee simple.

Subject to  
Merger.  
1 Inst. 338 b.

16. An estate *pour auter vie* will also merge in an estate for a man's own life ; the latter being most valuable. Thus, if an estate be limited to a person for the life of another, remainder to himself for his own life, the first estate is merged.

Dyer, 10 b.  
11 Rep. 83 b.

17. Every tenant for life is entitled to estovers ; that is, to allowance of necessary wood, which he may take upon the land, without any assignment, unless

Tenants for  
Life entitled  
to Estovers.  
1 Inst. 41 b.

---

\* This must be a mistake ; he was *quasi* tenant in tail.

he is restrained by special covenants : for *modus et conventio vincunt legem* ; but affirmative covenants do not restrain.

Gloss.

18. Sir Henry Spelman says the word estovers, *estoverium*, is derived from the French word *estoffe*, material : it is used in this sense in the statute Westm. 2. c. 25. which gives an assise of novel disseisin *de estoveriis bosci*. There are three kinds of estovers, or botes, as it is called in the old Saxon dialect ; namely house bote, which is two-fold, *estoverium ardendi et ædificandi* ; plough bote, *estoverium arandi* ; lastly, hay bote, *estoverium claudendi*.

1 Inst. 41 b.  
13 Rep. 68.

Dyer 19 b.  
pl. 115.  
Hob. 173.

19. It was resolved in 28 Hen. VIII. that where a lessor covenanted with a lessee that he should have thorns for hedges, by the assignment of the lessor's bailiff, the lessee might cut thorns without assignment ; for what the law gives by implication in the lease, that he may take without assignment. Otherwise, where the lessee covenants negatively, that he will not take without assignment.

† Inst. 53 b.  
54 b.  
Vin. Ab.  
Waste, M.

20. It is laid down by Lord Coke, that tenants for life may cut down timber trees, at seasonable times, for the reparation of houses or fences ; but a tenant for life cannot cut down timber to build new houses, or to repair those that he himself has improperly suffered to fall into decay.

21. Where a tenant for life cuts down more timber than is necessary, it is waste, though he assert that he cut down the timber to employ it in future reparations.

Gorges v.  
Stanfield,  
Cro. Eliz.  
593.

22. In an action of waste, for cutting down 300 oaks, the defendant, as to 200 of them, pleaded that the houses let to him were ruinous, &c. and that he cut them down to repair those houses ; as to the



residue, that he cut them down, and kept them to be used in reparations, *tempore opportuno*, &c.

The plaintiff demurred in law, but the court held it no plea; for if it should, every farmer might cut down all the trees growing on the land, when there was not any necessity of reparations. As to waste by tenants for life, it will be treated of in the next chapter.

23. Where a tenant for life dies before harvest time, his executors will be entitled to the crops then growing on the lands, as a return for the labour and expence of tilling the ground; which the law calls emblements. And to Emblements.

24. This rule extends to every case in which the estate for life determines by the act of God, or the act of the law; but not where it is determined by the act of the tenant. Thus, if a woman who holds lands *durante viduitate*, which is an estate for life, sows them, and afterwards marries, she will not be entitled to emblements; because her estate determined by her own act. Oland's Case, 5 Rep. 116 a.

25. If an estate be made to a husband and wife during coverture, and the husband sows the lands, and afterwards they are divorced, *causa præcontracta*, the husband will be entitled to emblements. For although the suit is the act of the party, yet the sentence which dissolves the marriage is the judgment of the law; *et judicium redditur in invitum*. Idem.

26. If A., seised in fee of land, sows it with grain, and after grants it to B. for life, remainder to C. B. dies before severance, C. shall have the corn, and not the executors of B.; for the reason of industry and charge is wanting. Hob. 132.

27. The word emblements only extends to such vegetables as yield an annual profit; so that if a 1 Inst. 55 b.

**Latham v. Atwood,**  
**Cro. Car.**  
**515.**

**May pray in Aid.**  
**Booth's Real Act. 60.**

**Not bound to pay off Incumbrances.**  
**1 Bro. R.**  
**208. 218.**  
**1 Ves. Jun.**  
**233.**

**But must keep down the Interest.**  
**Tracy v. Hereford,**  
**2 Bro. R. 128.**  
**Penryn v. Hughes,**  
**5 Ves. 99.**

**May alien their Estates.**

person who is tenant for life plants fruit trees, or oaks, ashes, elms, &c. or sows the ground with acorns, his executors will not be entitled to them. But if a tenant for life dies in August, before severance of the hops, his executors shall have them, though growing on antient roots.

28. In all real actions a tenant for life may pray in aid, or call for the assistance of the person entitled to the inheritance, to defend his title; because the tenant for life is not generally supposed to have in his custody the evidences necessary to establish the right to the inheritance.

29. A tenant for life is not subject to the payment of any principal sums charged on the inheritance; therefore, where a tenant for life pays off an incumbrance charged on the inheritance, he becomes a creditor on the estate for the sum so paid. For otherwise he must be supposed to have paid it for the benefit of the persons entitled to the inheritance. But if a tenant for life does any act which shews an intention of paying off the charge for the benefit of the inheritance, he will not in that case be deemed a creditor.

30. Tenants for life are, however, bound to keep down the interest of all incumbrances affecting the inheritance. And it has been lately determined, that the rents and profits of an estate for life must be applied, not only in payment of all interest due during the possession of the tenant for life, but also of all interest due before the commencement of that estate.

31. Every tenant for life has a right to the full use and enjoyment of the land, and of all its annual profits, during the continuance of his estate. He has also a power of alienating his whole estate and

interest, or of creating out of it any estate less than his own; unless he is restrained by condition.

32. If a tenant for life creates a greater estate than his own, it must necessarily be void, upon the principle that *nemo dat quod non habet*. And such conveyance will operate in many cases as a forfeiture of his estate, as will be shewn hereafter. But where the person who is entitled to the inheritance is a party to the deed, there the tenant for life may join with him in conveying away the entire inheritance.

33. Although every person having a freehold interest has a right to the custody of the title deeds; yet Lord Hardwicke has said, it was the common practice for the Court of Chancery to direct the title deeds to be taken from the tenant for life, and deposited in court, for the security of the persons entitled to the inheritance.

When they may keep the Title Deeds.

1 Atk. 431.  
2 P. Wms. 477.

34. It is however laid down in a modern case, that when the title deeds are in the hands of the tenant for life, the Court of Chancery will not take them from him; but when they are not in his hands, the court will not order them to be delivered to him. In a subsequent case it was said, that where the tenant for life was satisfied, and did not care about the deeds, but the remainder man was not satisfied, the court would take care of them, and not leave them in the hands of third persons.

Hicks v. Hicks, Dick. 650.

Ford v. Puring, 1 Ves. Jun. 72.

35. In a late case, Lord Eldon directed the title deeds of an estate to be delivered out of court, upon the application of trustees and tenant for life, founded on the authority of Lord Henley, who had stated it as his opinion, that the tenant for life should have the possession of the deeds, when they were not brought into court under an order for safe custody.

Duncomb v. Mayer, 8 Ves. 320.

What acts  
create a  
Forfeiture.  
Gilb. Ten.  
38.  
Wright's  
Ten. 203.

36. Estates for life are still considered in some respects as strict feuds, being forfeitable for many of the causes for which feuds were formerly forfeited. Thus where a tenant for life takes upon him to convey a greater estate or interest than that which he has, whereby the estate in remainder or reversion is divested, such conveyance will operate as a forfeiture of his estate for life; because it is a renunciation of the feudal connexion between him and his lord, and the person in remainder or reversion may enter for the forfeiture.

37. Alienations of this kind may be either by deed or by matter of record. By deed, as if a tenant for life makes a feoffment in fee to a stranger, it is a forfeiture; so if there be tenant for life, remainder to another for life, and both the tenants for life join in a feoffment in fee to a stranger, it is a forfeiture of both their estates.

1 Inst. 251 a.  
Tit. 32. c. 4.  
  
1 Roll. Ab.  
851.

38. If baron and feme tenants for life make a feoffment, this is a forfeiture during the coverture. So where the baron is seised in right of his wife, and the baron and feme make a feoffment; it is the same where the baron alone makes a feoffment. But in these cases it shall not be any forfeiture against the wife, after the death of her husband.

Tit. 32. c. 10.

39. There are however several modern modes of assurance which do not divest the estate in remainder or reversion; and therefore have not the effect of creating a forfeiture of an estate for life.

40. By matter of record; as where a tenant for life levies a fine, or suffers a common recovery, such assurances will in general operate as a forfeiture of his estate; unless the person in remainder or reversion is a party to them.

Tit. 35, 36.

41. Tenant for life may also forfeit his estate by disclaiming to hold of his lord; or by affirming or impliedly admitting the reversion to be in a stranger. This doctrine is founded on a rule of the feudal law, that if the vassal denied the tenure, he forfeited his feud. Now this denial may be when the vassal claims the reversion himself, or accepts a gift of it from a stranger, or acknowledges it to be in a stranger: for in all these cases he denies that he holds the feud from the lord. But as by the feudal law the vassal was to be convicted of this denial; so, in the English law, those acts which plainly amount to a denial must be done in a court of record, to make them a forfeiture: because such act of denial appearing on record is equivalent to a conviction upon solemn trial. All other denials that might be used by great lords for trepanning their tenants, and for a pretence to seize their estates, were, by our law, rejected, for such convictions might be obtained without any just cause; but the denial of the tenure upon record could never be counterfeited, or abused to any injustice.

Dissert.  
c. 1. § 84.

Bac. Ab. Est.  
for Life. C.

42. If therefore a tenant for life be disseised, and bring a writ of right, this is a forfeiture of his estate; because, by suing that writ, he admits the reversion in fee to be in himself, and by consequence denies that he holds over. So it is if, in a writ of right brought against him, he joins the mise on the mere right; for, by taking upon himself the privileges of tenant in fee, he admits the inheritance to be in himself, which is a denial of the tenure.

1 Inst. 251 b.

43. If a stranger brings an action of waste against a tenant for life, and he pleads *nul waste fait*, in bar to the action, this is a forfeiture: because by this plea he admits the stranger to be a proper person to punish the waste, if there had been any.

1 Inst. 252 a.  
1 Roll. Ab.  
853.

44. If the demandant in a real action recovers against the tenant for life, by default, or *nient dedire*, or by pleading covenantously, to the disherison of the person in reversion, these are forfeitures of his estate. For the tenant for life is intrusted with the freehold, and is to answer to stranger's *præcipes*, and defend his own, as well as the reversioner's, interest. But when he gives way to the demandant's action, he admits the right of the reversion to be in him, and consequently denies any tenure of his reversioner; which is a forfeiture.

P. C. V. 1.  
251.

3 Inst. 19.

Of General  
Occupancy.

1 Inst. 41 b.  
2 Comm.  
259.

Idem.

45. Estates for life are forfeited by attainder of treason or felony; and Lord Hale says, if tenant for life be attainted of treason, the king hath the freehold during the life of the party attainted. In the case of felony, the profits of the land are forfeited during the life of the tenant for life.

46. By the common law, where a person was tenant *pour auter vie*, and died during the life of *cestui que vie*, the person who first entered on the land after his death might lawfully retain the possession thereof, as long as *cestui que vie* lived, by right of occupancy; because it belonged to nobody.

47. Where the king had the reversion, no right of occupancy was allowed; for if the king's title and a subject's concur, the king's shall always be preferred: against the king therefore there could be no prior occupant.

48. There can be no occupant of incorporeal hereditaments, such as advowsons, rents, &c., of which notice will be taken hereafter.

Estates *pour auter vie* vest  
in Executors.

49. The right of general occupancy is now taken away by the statute 29 Cha. II. c. 3. § 12. which enacts—"That any estate *pour auter vie* shall be devisable by will, &c., and if no such devise thereof be made, the same shall be chargeable in the hands

of the heir, if it shall come to him by reason of, a special occupancy, as assets by descent, as in case of lands in fee simple. And in case there be no special occupant thereof, it shall go to the executors or administrators of the party that had the estate thereof by virtue of the grant; and shall be assets in their hands."

50. By the statute 14 Geo. II. c. 20. § 9. reciting the statute 29 Cha. II., and that doubts had arisen, where no devise had been made of such estates, to whom the surplus, after debts paid, should belong; it is enacted—"That such estates *pour auter vie*, in case there be no special occupant thereof, of which no devise shall have been made, according to the said act, or so much thereof as shall not have been so devised, shall go, be applied and distributed, in the same manner as the personal estate of the testator or intestate."

51. It was held by Lord Eldon, in a modern case, that the interest in an estate *pour auter vie* to a man, his executors, administrators, and assigns, beyond the debts, belongs to those who are entitled to the personal estate. Ripley v. Waterworth, 7 Ves. 425.

52. Where an estate was limited to a man and his heirs, or the heirs of his body, during the life of another person, no general right of occupancy could arise; for the heir, or heir of the body of such grantee, might and still may enter on the death of his ancestor, and hold the possession as special occupant; having an exclusive right, by the terms of the original contract, to occupy the lands during the residue of the estate granted. Of Special Occupancy.

53. It is stated in Roll's Abridgement, from a case in Dyer, that if a man leases land to one and his executors for the life of J. S., and ~~occupies~~ *occupies* ~~the~~ *the* ~~land~~ *land*, Tit. Occupant, G. pl. 2. Dyer, 323. pl. 10.



Buller v.  
Cheverton.

dies, the executors shall be special occupants, though it be a frank tenement. In the next paragraph Roll inserts a case directly contrary. If a man grants a rent to another, his executors and assigns, for the life of J. S., and after the grantee dies, making an executor, the executor shall not be a special occupant; because it is a frank tenement, which cannot descend to the executor.

Vol. 3. 466.

Irish Rep.  
V. 1. 289.

54. Lord Hardwicke is reported by Atkins to have cited the first of these cases, and to have assented to it. Lord Redesdale has expressed strong doubts as to this point; and has justly observed, that the title of an executor depends on his taking upon himself the administration of the will, therefore does not commence *instantly*, but by his subsequent act. As to an administrator, *ex necessitate* his title cannot commence *instantly*. It should therefore seem that the character of special occupant cannot properly belong to either. That, on the contrary, Lord Chief Baron Comyn, in his Digest, states the case in Dyer as having decided that the executor shall not have the land as special occupant; for an occupant has the freehold, which an executor cannot take; and refers to the second case stated in Roll as an authority for this point. That case, which was long subsequent to the case in Dyer, was certainly in conformity to the opinion of Comyn; and according to Salter v. Butler, Moo. 664. Cro. Eliz. 901. Yelv. 9. the law seemed to have been understood by Peer Williams as so settled; though he did not appear satisfied with it.

Tit. Estates,  
F. 1.

V. 3. 264.  
note D.

Tit. Estate  
for Life, 3.

55. It is however held by some, that an executor or administrator may take a freehold estate as special occupant, upon the authority of the following passage in Bacon's Abridgement, supposed to have been



written by Lord Chief Baron Gilbert :—" If a lease be made of land to J. S., his executors and assigns, during the life of B., the executors of J. S. shall be the special occupants if he die in the life of B. ; for though it be a freehold, which in due course of law would not go to executors, yet they may be designed, by the particular words in the grant, to take as occupants ; and such designation will exclude the occupation of any other person ; because the parties themselves, who originally had the possession, have filled it up by this appointment."

Vide Ripley v. Waterworth, *infra*.

56. In a modern case it was held by Lord Kenyon and the other judges, that if an estate *pour auter vie* be limited to a man, his heirs, executors, administrators, and assigns ; it descends to the heir as a special occupant, in preference to the executors.

Atkinson v. Baker, 4 Term R. 229.

57. Archbishops and bishops were formerly considered as tenants in fee simple of the lands which they held in right of their churches. As to rectors, parsons, and vicars, Lord Coke says, that for the benefit of the church, and of their successors, they were in some cases esteemed in law to have a fee simple qualified ; but to do any thing to the prejudice of their successors, in many cases the law adjudged them to have in effect but an estate for life. Since the several statutes by which all ecclesiastical persons and corporations are restrained from alienation, except by leases for three lives or 21 years, they are generally considered as *quasi* tenants for life only.

Ecclesiastical Persons are *quasi* Tenants for Life, 1 Inst. 44 a. Id. 341 a. & b. Lit. § 648. *infra*, ch. 2.

Tit. 32. c. 2 & 5.

58. In consequence of this principle it is enacted by the statute 28 Hen. VIII. c. 11. § 6., that in case any incumbent, before his death, hath caused any of

his glebe lands to be manured and sown, at his own proper costs and charges, with any corn or grain, that then all the said incumbents may make and declare their testaments of all the profits of the corn growing upon the said glebe lands so manured and sown.

## TITLE III.

## ESTATE FOR LIFE.

## CHAP. II.

*Of Waste by Tenants for Life.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                          |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>2. <i>Different Kinds of Waste.</i><br/> 3. <i>Felling Timber.</i><br/> 13. <i>Pulling down Houses.</i><br/> 16. <i>Opening Pits or Mines.</i><br/> 20. <i>Changing the Course of Husbandry.</i><br/> 22. <i>Destruction of Heir Looms.</i><br/> 23. <i>Permissive Waste.</i><br/> 27. <i>Of the Action for Waste.</i><br/> 35. <i>Waste restrained in Equity.</i><br/> 42. <i>The Timber belongs to the Person entitled to the Inheritance.</i></p> | <p>50. <i>May be cut down by Order of Chancery.</i><br/> 55. <i>Of the Clause, "Without Impeachment of Waste."</i><br/> 62. <i>How far restrained in Equity.</i><br/> 70. <i>Is annexed to the Privy of Estate.</i><br/> 71. <i>Of partial Powers to do Waste.</i><br/> 74. <i>Of Waste by Ecclesiasticks.</i><br/> 83. <i>Of Accidents by Fire.</i></p> |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**A**LTHOUGH tenants for life are entitled to reasonable estovers, yet they are prohibited from destroying those things which are not included in the temporary profits of the land; because that would tend to the permanent and lasting loss of the person entitled to the inheritance. ante, c. 1. § 17.

2. This destruction is called waste. It is either voluntary, which is a crime of commission; or permissive, which is a matter of omission only. Voluntary waste chiefly consists, 1. In felling timber trees. 2. Pulling down houses. 3. Opening mines or pits. 4. Changing the course of husbandry. 5. Destroying heir looms. Different Kinds of Waste.

Felling  
Timber.

1 Inst. 53 a.

11 Rep. 48 b.

3. The first kind of waste consists in felling timber trees, except for estovers; because they are not deemed part of the annual produce of the land, but belong to the owner of the inheritance: and therefore the tenant for life has only a qualified property in them, as far as they afford him shade and shelter, and a right to take the masts and fruit. But all tenants for life have a right to cut down coppices and underwoods, at seasonable times, according to the custom of the country; for no advantage can arise to a tenant for life from woods of this kind, but by the sale of them.

11 Rep. 48 a.

1 Saund. 322.

n. 5.

4. In the case of leases for lives, where the timber is included, if the lessor fells the trees, the lessee may maintain an action of trespass against him, and will be entitled to recover damages adequate to the loss he sustains; because the lessee has, by his lease, a particular interest in the trees, such as the mast and fruit of them, and shade and shelter for his cattle; and may lop them, if they be not thereby injured. But the interest of the body of the trees remains in the lessor, as parcel of his inheritance; who may punish the lessee in an action of waste, if he fells or damages any of them. So that both the lessor and lessee have an interest in the trees; therefore if a stranger cuts them down, each of them shall have an action against him, to recover his respective loss.

Idem.

Foster v.

Spooner,

Cro. Eliz. 18.

5. Where the trees are excepted in the lease, which is usually done, the lessee has no interest whatever in them; and the lessor may have an action of trespass against him, if he either fells or damages them. The lessor has also a power, as incident to the exception, to enter upon the land, in order to fell and take away the trees; though this power, for the greater caution, is often expressly reserved.

Heydon v.

Smith,

Godb. 173.

Jackson v.

Cator,

5 Ves. 688.

6. Timber trees are those which serve for building or reparation of houses; such as oak, ash, and elm, of the age of twenty years and upwards. But where oak or ash are seasonable wood, and have been usually cut down at certain periods, it is said that it is not waste to cut them down at that time.

1 Inst. 53 a,  
2 — 643.

Vide 22 Vin.  
Ab. 442.

7. By the custom of some countries, certain trees, not usually considered as timber, are deemed to be such, being there used for building.

Thus it was held in 8 Ja. I., by Lord Chancellor Ellesmere, that, in the county of York, birch trees were timber, because they were used for building sheep-houses, cottages, and such mean buildings. And all the Justices at Serjeants' Inn were of opinion that in the county of York birch trees were timber, and belonged to the inheritance; therefore they could not be taken by the tenant for life.

Cumber-  
land's Case,  
Moo. 812.

8. Lord King has said, that it was the custom of the country that made some trees timber, which generally were not so; as horse-chesnuts and limes. So of birch, beech, and asp.\* As to pollards, notwithstanding what was said in Plowden 470. that these were not timber, and that tithes were to be paid of their loppings, which could not be if pollards were timber; yet, if the bodies were sound, he inclined to think them timber. *Secus* if not sound; they being in such case fit for nothing but fuel.

2 P. Wms.  
636.

Rex v.  
Minchin  
Hampton,  
3 Burr. 1308.

9. If a tenant for life tops timber trees, or does any thing else which causes them to decay, it is waste. So if he suffers the young germins or shoots to be destroyed, or stubs them up.

1 Inst. 53 a.  
Dyer, 65 a.

---

\* Walnut trees were formerly held not to be timber: but Lord King appears to have been of opinion that they were timber. *Id.* There is however no positive decision on this point.

1 Inst. 53 a.

10. Lord Coke says that cutting down willows, birch, beech, asp, maple, or the like, standing in the defence and safeguard of a house, is waste ; as also the stubbing up a quickset fence of white thorn, or suffering it to be destroyed. He also states that cutting dead wood is not waste ; but that turning of trees to coals for fuel, when there is sufficient dead wood, is waste.

Pigot v.  
Bullock,  
1 Ves. Jun.  
479.

12. Although tenant for life has a right to cut down underwood at proper seasons, according to the custom of the country, yet it was held in a modern case that a tenant for life has no property in the underwood till his estate comes into possession ; therefore he cannot have an account of what was cut wrongfully by a preceding tenant.

Pulling down  
Houses.  
1 Inst. 53 a.

13. Waste may be done in houses, by pulling them down, or by suffering them to be uncovered, whereby the timbers become rotten. If, however, a house be uncovered, when the tenant comes in, it is no waste to suffer it to fall down ; but it would be waste to pull it down, unless it is rebuilt.

Bro. Ab.  
Waste, pl. 93.

14. If a lessee razes the house, and builds a new one, which is not so large as the former, it is waste. But where an old house falls down, and the tenant builds a new one, it need not be so large as the old.

1 Inst. 53 a.

15. If glass windows, though put in by the tenant himself, be broken or carried away, it is waste. So it is of wainscot, benches, doors, furnaces, and the like, annexed or fixed to the house, either by the reversioner or the tenant.

Opening Pits  
or Mines.  
1 Inst. 53 b.  
54 b.

Saunders's  
Case, 5 Rep.  
12.

16. A tenant for life cannot dig for gravel, lime, clay, brick, earth, stone, or the like, unless for the reparation of buildings, or manuring of the land. Nor can he open a new mine ; but he may dig and take the profits of mines that are open.

17. Lord King has said, that a tenant for life of coal mines may open new pits or shafts for working the old vein of coals, otherwise working the same mines would be impracticable. Clavering v. Clavering, 2 P. Wms. 388.

18. If a person has mines within his land, and leases the land, and all mines therein, the lessee may dig for them; otherwise he can derive no advantage from them. Saunders's Case, 5 Rep. 12.

19. Where a person seised in fee of lands, in which there were mines unopened, conveyed those lands, and all mines, &c. to trustees and their heirs, to the use of A. for life, &c. A. having threatened to open the mines, the reversioner brought a bill in Chancery to stay him. It was argued on behalf of A. that the mines being expressly granted by the settlement with the lands, it was as strong a case as if the mines themselves were limited to A. for life, and like Saunders's case. But Lord Macclesfield said, that A. having only an estate for life, subject to waste, could no more open a mine, than cut down timber trees. On a rehearing, Lord King was of the same opinion. Whitfield v. Bewit, 2 P. Wms. 240.

20. The conversion of one kind of land into another, as the changing of meadow to arable, is also waste; because it not only changes the course of husbandry, but also the evidence of the estate. Changing the Course of Husbandry. 1 Inst. 53 b. Dyer, 37 a. 2 Roll. Ab. 814.

21. The plowing up, burning, and sowing of down land is waste. But in the present improved state of agriculture, I presume the old doctrine respecting the changing the course of husbandry would not be strictly adhered to. Worsley v. Stewart, infra. Gunning v. Gunning, 2 Show. R. 8.

22. As some chattels are considered in law as part of the inheritance, and called heir looms, so the destruction of them is waste. Thus, if a tenant for life of a park, vivary, warren, or dove house, Destruction of Heir Looms, Tit. 1. § 7. 1 Inst. 53 a. 2 — 304.

kills so many of the deer, fish, game, or doves, that there is not sufficient left for the stores, it is waste.

Permissive  
Waste.

1 Inst. 53 a.  
54 b.

23. Permissive waste chiefly consists in suffering the buildings on an estate to decay. But if a house be ruinous at the time when the tenant for life comes into possession, he is not punishable for suffering it to fall down ; for in that case he is not bound by law to repair it. Yet if he cuts down timber, and therewith repairs it, he may justify ; because, the law favours the maintenance of houses.

Wood v.  
Gaynon,  
Amb. 395.

24. The Court of Chancery will not decree a tenant for life to repair ; or appoint a receiver, with directions to repair : for it would tend to harrass tenants for life ; and suits of this kind would be attended with great expences, in depositions about repairs.

2 Roll. Ab.  
820.

25. It is a general rule that waste which ensues from the act of God is excusable. So that if a house falls, in consequence of a tempest, the tenant will be excused. But where a house is uncovered by a tempest, the tenant is bound to repair it, within a reasonable time, before the timbers grow rotten.

1 Inst. 53 b.  
Dyer, 33 a.

Moo. 69.

26. If the banks of a river are destroyed by a sudden flood, it is not waste. If the banks of the river Trent are unrepaired, it is waste ; because the Trent is not so violent but that the lessee, by his industry, may well enough preserve the banks.

Of the Ac-  
tion for  
Waste.

2 Inst. 145.

27. By the common law, where lands were granted to a person for life, he was not liable to an action for waste, unless he was restrained, by express words in his conveyance, from committing waste : because it was in the power of the person who created the estate to impose such terms on his tenant as he thought proper. This doctrine was found extremely inconvenient, as such tenants took advantage of the igno-



rance of their landlords, and committed acts of waste.

28. To remedy this grievance the statute of Marlbridge, 52 Hen. III. c. 24. gave to the owners of the inheritance an action of waste against tenants for life, in which they were entitled to recover full damages for the waste committed. As the recompence given by this statute was frequently inadequate to the loss sustained, the statute of Gloucester, 6 Edw. I. c. 5. increased the punishment, by declaring that the place wasted should be recovered, together with treble damages ; as an equivalent for the injury done to the inheritance.

2 Inst. 144.

Id. 299.

29. No person is entitled to an action of waste against a tenant for life, but he who has the immediate state of inheritance, expectant on the determination of the estate for life. If there is an estate of freehold *in esse*, interposed between the estate of the tenant for life who commits waste, and the subsequent estate of inheritance ; then during the continuance of such interposed estate the action of waste is suspended ; and if the first tenant for life dies during the continuance of such interposed estate, the action is gone for ever.

1 Inst. 53 b.

218 b. n. 2.

Paget's Case,

5 Rep. 76 b.

Bray v.

Tracy.

Cro. Ja. 688.

30. Where a tenant for life commits waste, and afterwards assigns over his estate, yet an action of waste may be brought against him.

2 Inst. 302.

31. If a woman lessee for life marries, and her husband commits waste, and after the wife dies, the action of waste is gone ; for the husband never had any estate but in right of his wife.

Clifton's

Case, 5 Rep.

75.

32. The statute of Marlbridge only prohibits farmers from committing waste ; yet if they suffer a stranger to do waste, they shall be charged with it : for it is presumed in law that the farmer may with-

stand it: *et qui non obstat, quod obstare potest, facere videtur.* Secondly, the law gives to every man his proper action; therefore the lessor shall have his action of waste against the lessee; and the lessee his action of trespass, against the person who committed the waste.

2 Saund.  
252. n. 7.

33. The late Mr. Serjeant Williams, in his excellent Notes on Saunders's Reports, observes that the action for waste is now very seldom brought; having given way to a much more expeditious and easy remedy, by an action on the case, in the nature of waste: which may be brought by the person in reversion or remainder for life or years, as well as in fee; and the plaintiff is entitled to costs, which he cannot have in an action of waste.

Turner v.  
Buck,  
22 Vin. Ab.  
523.

34. Lord Cowper says, that, without some particular circumstances, there is no remedy, in law or equity, for permissive waste, after the death of the particular tenant.

Waste re-  
strained in  
Equity.

Moor, 554.  
pl. 748.

35. It is said in 1 Roll. Ab. 377. pl. 13. that if there be lessee for life, the remainder for life, the remainder or reversion in fee, and the lessee in possession wastes the land; though he is not punishable by the common law, during the remainder for life, yet he may be restrained in Chancery, for this is a particular mischief. Lord Keeper Egerton is reported to have said that he had seen a precedent in the time of Richard II. where in such a case it was decreed in Chancery, by the advice of the Judges, on complaint of the remainder-man in fee, that the first tenant should not commit waste; and an injunction was granted.

36. The courts of equity have long pursued this principle, and will award a perpetual injunction against waste whenever the case requires it.

37. Mr. Worsley being tenant for life of a farm in Dorsetshire, consisting of poor arable land, with a sheep walk, and about 400 acres of down land, under the will of Lady Stewart, who also left a writing under her hand forbidding the ploughing of such land as ought not to be plowed; he ploughed up, broke, and burnt part of the down land. A perpetual injunction was granted by the court of Exchequer; and confirmed by the House of Lords.

Worsley v.  
Stewart,  
4 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 377.

38. A court of equity will also grant an injunction against waste *pendente lite*, and Lord Hardwicke has said it is not necessary the plaintiff should wait till waste is actually committed; for where an intention to commit waste appears, and the defendant insists on his right to commit waste, the court will grant an injunction.

2 Atk. 182.

39. The court of Chancery has also frequently granted an injunction against waste, where no action for waste lay at law.

40. There was a limitation in a settlement to a person for life, remainder to trustees to preserve contingent remainders, remainder to his first and other sons in tail, remainder to A. for life, remainder to his first and other sons in tail. The first tenant for life cut down timber; A. the second tenant for life, brought his bill for an injunction to stay waste. Lord Hardwicke said, that though A. had no right to the timber, yet if the first tenant for life should die without sons, the plaintiff would have an interest in the mast and shade of the timber. Therefore upon the authority of those cases, which had been very numerous in the court, of interposing to stay waste in the tenant for life, where no action could be maintained against him at law, as the plaintiff had not the immediate remainder; the injunction was granted.

Perrrot v.  
Perrot,  
3 Atk. 94.

*Farrant v. Lovell*,  
3 Atk. 723.

41. A bill was brought by a ground landlord to stay waste in an under lessee. Lord Hardwicke said, that a certificate being produced of the waste, he was of opinion the plaintiff had the same equity as in other cases of injunctions; and granted the injunction. In another case, he said that he would have no scruple to grant an injunction to stay waste in favour of an unborn child.

*The Timber belongs to the Person entitled to the Inheritance.*

*Bowle's case*,  
11 Rep. 79.

42. Although no action of waste lies where there is an intermediate estate; yet if waste be done, by felling timber trees, the person entitled, at that time, to the inheritance in fee or in tail, may seize them; or bring an action of trover for the recovery of them: for a tenant for life has but a special interest in trees growing on the land, so long as they are annexed to the land; but if he or any other person severs them from the land, the interest of the tenant for life in them is thereby determined; and they become the property of the owner of the inheritance.

43. It follows that where an estate is limited to several persons for life, with remainder to their first and other sons in tail, the first tenant in tail who is born becomes entitled to any timber felled by the tenant for life.

*Uvedale v. Uvedale*,  
2 Roll. Ab.  
119.

43. A feoffment was made to the use of A. for life, remainder to the use of his first and other sons in tail; remainder to B. for life, remainder to his first and other sons in tail. B. had issue a son, and after, A., not having any son, cut down timber. It was resolved that the son of B. might have an action of trover against A. for the timber: because the property of the trees was in him who had the inheritance of the land when they were cut; and though the remainder for life to B. was an impediment to an action of waste during his life, yet it was not any

impediment to his son, as to the property of the trees, when severed from the land; which B. could not have for the debility of his estate. And the possibility of the estate which might come to the son of A., if A. should have a son, was not any impediment; inasmuch as it was a mere possibility, which peradventure never would happen, and was nothing in law till it happened, and might be destroyed by the feoffment of A.

44. One seised in fee of lands, conveyed them to trustees and their heirs, to the use of A. for life, remainder to his first and other sons in tail, remainder to B. for life, remainder to his first and other sons in tail, remainder to his two sisters and the heirs of their bodies, remainder to the grantor in fee. A. and B. had no sons, and one of the sisters died without issue, by which the heir of the grantor, as to one moiety of the premises, had the first estate of inheritance. A. having cut down timber, sold it; the heir of the grantor brought his bill for an account of a moiety. It was objected that it would be more agreeable to the rules of equity, that the money produced by the sale of the timber should be brought into court, and put out for the benefit of the sons unborn, and which might be born: that these contingent remainders being *in gremio legis*, and under the protection of the law, it would be most reasonable that the money should be secured for the use of the sons, when there should be any born. But as soon as it became impossible there should be a son, then a moiety to be paid to the plaintiff. And the case would be the same if there were a son *in ventre matris*, or the plaintiff might bring trover; and then what reason had he to come into equity. Lord Macclesfield said, the right of this timber be-

Whitfield  
v. Bewitt,  
2 P. Wms.  
240.

longed to those who, at the time of its being severed from the freehold, were entitled to the first estate of inheritance; and the property became vested in them. As to the objection that trover would lie at law, it might be very necessary for the party who had the inheritance to bring his bill; because it might be impossible for him to discover the value of the timber, it being in the possession, and cut down by the tenant for life.

1 Bro. R. 194.  
3 — 37.

Pigot v. Bullock, *infra*.

Newcastle v. Vane, cited  
2 P. Wms.  
241.

The cause was reheard by Lord King, who was of the same opinion.

45. It is the same where timber is severed from the freehold by accident. Thus, where a great quantity of timber having been blown down by a storm at Welbeck, the seat of the Duke of Newcastle; though there were several tenants for life, with remainder to their first and other sons in tail, yet these having no sons born, the timber was decreed to belong to the first remainder-man in tail.

Vide Garth  
v. Cotton,  
Tit. 16. c. 7.

46. Where there are trustees to preserve contingent remainders, the Court of Chancery will not allow of waste by collusion, between the tenant for life and the person entitled to the first vested estate of inheritance; to the prejudice of persons not *in esse*.

47. Where the tenant for life has also the next existing estate of inheritance, subject to intermediate contingent remainders in tail; the Court of Chancery will not allow him to take advantage of that circumstance, by cutting down timber, but will preserve it for the benefit of the intermediate contingent remainder-men.

Williams v.  
Duke of  
Bolton, cited  
3 P. Wms.  
268.

48. The Duke of Bolton was tenant for life, with remainder to his first and other sons in tail, remainder to Mrs. Orde for life, remainder to her first and

other sons in tail, with estates to trustees to preserve the contingent remainders, remainder to the Duke in fee. The Duke had no son, but Mrs. Orde had a son born, who died soon after. The Duke cut down timber. Mrs. Orde had afterwards another son, who was a defendant in the cause. On the question to whom this timber should belong, Lord Thurlow was of opinion, that as it was not competent for the Duke to cut down timber in respect of his life estate, he should not take advantage of his own wrong. That the timber, although by severance it became personalty, was yet bound as far as it could be, to the uses of the realty. That the administrator of Mrs. Orde's first son was certainly not entitled; the child being dead at the time of the timber cut, neither could her second son claim it; for although he had a vested estate of inheritance, yet such estate was liable to be divested by the Duke's having a son. He therefore thought nobody was then entitled to it; but directed the Duke to pay into court the money for which the timber had been sold, and the interest thereof.

49. In pursuance of the above direction, the Duke of Bolton paid in the money arising from the timber; upon his death in 1794 Mr. Orde, the husband of Mrs. Orde, as administrator of his eldest son, presented a petition to have the money paid to him; the Court directed a bill to be filed. The defendants were the second son, who was tenant in tail in remainder of the estates, and the Duchess of Bolton, executrix of the late Duke.

*Powlett v. Duchess of Bolton,*  
3 Ves. Jun.  
374.  
1 Cox. Rep.  
72.

Lord Loughborough said, when the timber was cut, no doubt, at law, the Duke would have taken, being the first owner of the inheritance. But the Court very properly held, that he should not, by

Dare v.  
Hopkins,  
2 Cox's R.  
110.

May be cut  
down by  
Order of  
Chancery.

Claxton v.  
Claxton,  
2 Vern. 152.

a fraud on the settlement, which made him tenant for life, gain that advantage to himself in his reversion in fee; considering it as a wrong upon the settlement. The consequence was, that part of the property, which by the fraud was taken from the settlement, ought to be restored to it; that would carry it to all the uses. Mrs. Orde would be entitled to an estate for life, the children to estates in tail male; and he could not help the consequence of the reversion in fee going to the Duke.

50. The Court of Chancery has in some cases directed the timber growing on an estate, whereof a person was tenant for life, to be cut down for the purpose of paying legacies and debts, charged upon the inheritance.

51. A person devised his estate to his wife for life, remainder to A. B. and his heirs, upon condition that he should pay several legacies, at the times appointed in his will; if he did not pay them accordingly, the estate to go over. A. B. filed his bill in the Court of Chancery, stating that there was a great quantity of timber on the estate, which belonged to him; that he was willing it should be sold, and the legacies paid, but that the widow, who had barely an estate for life, and could make no profit thereof herself, in combination with the other remainder-man, designing to make the plaintiff forfeit his estate, by non-payment of the legacies; had refused him permission to fell the timber; though he offered satisfaction for any damages she should thereby sustain. He therefore prayed that he might have liberty to cut down and carry off the timber, and sell it for payment of the legacies.

The Court thought it reasonable that the plaintiff should have liberty to cut down and take off the tim-



ber; making satisfaction to the widow for breaking the ground &c. and referred it to the Master to see what quantity of timber was necessary to be felled for payment of the legacies, and what might be conveniently spared.

52. The Court of Chancery has also directed timber, in a state of decay, to be cut down for the benefit of the person entitled to the inheritance; provided no damage were done to the tenant for life.

53. Sir G. Ireland by deed granted a term for 500 years to the defendant and others, of his estates in Lancashire, to commence after his decease, for payment of debts and annuities; and by will devised the reversion and inheritance thereof to the plaintiff for life, without impeachment of waste, remainder to his first and other sons in tail. The testator being dead, and the trustees in possession under the trust, which was like to have a long continuance; the plaintiff brought his bill, setting forth that he was reduced to great want, that there was much decaying timber on the estate, which the trustees had no power to cut down, and prayed he might be permitted to take off the timber; allowing for what damage he did the estate. Although it was objected that the plaintiff might die before the trust was performed, and till then could not be let into possession; therefore to decree that he in the mean time might take off the timber, would be a prejudice to his sons, yet the Court decreed a commission to go, to take off timber for the plaintiff's relief and support, not exceeding £500.

*Aspinwall  
v. Leigh,  
2 Vern. 218.*

54. A. was tenant for life, remainder, as to one moiety, to B. in tail, and as to the other moiety to an infant. There was timber upon the premises greatly decaying, whereupon B. the remainder-man

*Bewick v.  
Whitfield,  
3 P. Wms.  
267.*

brought a bill, praying that the timber which was decaying might be cut down; and that B. and the infant might have the money. The tenant for life insisted on having a share of the money.

Lord Talbot said, 1. The timber while standing was part of the inheritance, but when severed, either by the act of God, as by tempest, or by a trespasser, belonged to him who had the first estate of inheritance in fee or in tail, who might bring trover for it. 2. The tenant for life ought not to have any share of the money arising from the sale of the timber; but since he had a right to what might be sufficient for repairs, and botes, care must be taken to leave enough upon the estate for that purpose; and whatever damage was done to the tenant for life on the premises ought to be made good to him. 3. With regard to the timber plainly decaying, it was for the benefit of the persons entitled to the inheritance that it should be cut down, otherwise it was of no value; but this should be done with the approbation of the Master; and trees, though decaying, if for the defence and shelter of the house, or for ornament, should not be cut down. B. to have one moiety of the money, and the other moiety to go to the infant.

Vide *Lee v. Alston*,  
1 Bro. R. 195.

Of the  
Clause,  
“without  
Impeach-  
ment of  
Waste.”

1 Inst. 220 a.  
11 Rep. 82 b.

55. It has been usual from very ancient times, where estates for life are expressly limited, to insert a clause that the tenant for life shall have the lands, “without impeachment of waste;” which words were originally held to exempt the tenant for life from the penalties of the statute of Marlbridge only; not to give the property of the thing wasted. But it is laid down by Lord Coke that the words *absque impetitione vasti*, that is, without any challenge or impeachment of waste, enable the tenant for life to cut down timber, and convert it to his own use. Otherwise if the

words were, “without impeachment of any action of waste.” For then the discharge would extend to the action only, and not to the property of the timber.

56. To the words, “without impeachment of waste,” are sometimes added, with full liberty to commit waste. And, in some instances, words of restriction are inserted, as, voluntary waste in houses only excepted. In the case of *Garth v. Cotton*, which will be stated in Title XVI. *Remainder*, the words were, “without impeachment of waste, except voluntary waste.” And Lord Hardwicke held that there the tenant was punishable for wilful waste, and had no interest in the timber, otherwise than the mast and shade, and necessary botes. But some eminent lawyers have lately held that the words “voluntary waste” only extend to houses, and not to timber trees.

57. It has been long fully settled that the words, without impeachment of waste, give to the tenant for life the property of all timber trees cut down, or blown down; and of all timber parcel of a building blown down. It has however been held, in a modern case, that a tenant for life without impeachment of waste cannot maintain trover for timber cut during a prior estate; but that it vests immediately in the owner of the inheritance.

*Pyne v. Don*,  
1 Term R.  
55.

*Pigot v. Bullock*,  
1 Ves. Jun.  
479.

58. Where a tenant for life, without impeachment of waste, makes a lease for years, and the lessee commits waste, no action of waste will lie against him: for the lease is derived out of an estate privileged; and if waste lay, it must be against the tenant for life who made the lease; and he was dispunishable.

*Bray v. Tracy*,  
*W. Jones*, 51.

Tit. 2. c. 1.  
§ 32.

59. The power which a tenant for life without impeachment of waste has over his estate, with respect to cutting down timber, must be exercised during his life; and cannot be delegated to any other person, so as to enable such person to execute it after his death.

3 Atk. 210.  
756.

60. Lord Hardwicke has said, that where there is tenant for life restrained from waste, remainder to another for life, without impeachment for waste; the Court of Chancery will not suffer any agreement between the two tenants for life, to commit waste, to take place, prior to the period at which the second tenant for life's power properly commences.

2 Atk. 383.

61. A tenant for life, without impeachment of waste, is notwithstanding obliged to keep tenants houses in repair, unless the charge is excessive; and shall not suffer them to run to ruin.

How far re-  
strained in  
Equity.

62. The clause without impeachment of waste is so far restrained in equity, that it does not enable a tenant for life to commit malicious waste, by pulling down houses: for in that case the Court of Chancery will not only stop him by injunction, but will also order him to repair them.

Vane v. Lord  
Bernard,  
2 Vern. 738.

63. Lord Bernard, on the marriage of his son, settled Raby Castle on himself for life, without impeachment of waste, remainder to his son for life, &c. Afterwards Lord B., having taken some dislike to his son, got 200 workmen together, and stripped the castle of the iron, lead, doors, &c. to the value of 3000*l*.

Rolt v.  
Somerville,  
2 Ab. Eq. 759.

The Court of Chancery immediately granted an injunction to stay committing of waste, in pulling down the castle; and, upon the hearing of the cause, decreed not only the injunction to continue,

but that the castle should be restored to its former condition.

64. The Court of Chancery will also restrain a tenant for life, without impeachment of waste, from cutting down timber, serving for shelter or ornament to a mansion-house; as also timber not fit to be felled.

65. A bill was brought by a remainder man to restrain a tenant for life, without impeachment of waste, from cutting down timber which served as ornament or shelter to the mansion-house, or which was unfit to be felled. Lord Hardwicke granted an injunction to restrain the defendant from cutting down trees standing in lines, avenues, or ridings in the park. Packington v. Packington, 3 Atk. 215.

66. An injunction was moved for to restrain Mr. Bowes, the husband of Lady Strathmore, who was tenant for life, without impeachment of waste, from cutting trees in the rides or avenues to the house, or that served for shade or ornament, or were unfit to be cut as timber. Aston v. Aston, 1 Ves. 264.  
O'Brien v. O'Brien, Amb. 107.  
Strathmore v. Bowes, 2 Bro. R. 88.

Lord Kenyon (M. R.) granted the injunction, saying it ought to include every thing useful or ornamental to the house; and said he thought himself bound to grant it as to the ornamental trees, though they should not be planted trees, but growing naturally; also to extend it to young saplings, and trees not fit to cut as timber. Downshire v. Sands, 6 Ves. 108.  
Tamworth v. Ferrers, Id. 419.  
Day v. Merry, 16 Ves. 375.

67. The Court of Chancery will not however, in cases of this kind, give any satisfaction to the remainder man for timber actually cut down. Rolt v. Somerville, 2 Ab. Eq. 759.

68. The Court of Chancery will not permit a tenant for life, without impeachment of waste, to commit double waste.

69. Lord Archer being tenant for life, without impeachment of waste, of an estate which was decreed Plymouth v. Archer, 1 Bro. R. 159.

to be sold, and the money invested in the purchase of another estate to be settled to the same uses, cut down timber.

Burges v.  
Lamb,  
16 Ves. 174.

Lord Thurlow held that Lord Archer's personal representatives were bound to account for the timber cut : for as Lord A. was to be tenant for life, without impeachment of waste, of the estate to be purchased, if he might commit waste upon the other estate, before it was sold, he would have the benefit of double waste.

Is annexed to  
the Privity of  
Estate.

11 Rep. 83 b.

70. The privileges given to a tenant for life, by the words, without impeachment of waste, are annexed to the privity of estate, and determine with it. Thus it is said, that if a lease be made to one for the term of another's life, without impeachment of waste, the remainder to him for his own life, he becomes punishable for waste ; for the first estate is gone and drowned.

Of partial  
Powers to  
do Waste.

71. Some cases have arisen where estates for life have been given, with partial powers of committing waste. And the Court of Chancery has interposed to restrain the tenants for life from exceeding such powers.

Hewit v.  
Hewit,  
Amb. 508.

72. Lands were devised to a person for life, with power to cut down such trees as four persons named in the will should allow of, or direct by writing. All these persons being dead, it was decreed that the power of cutting down timber remained ; but the Court would preserve the check. It was referred to the Master to see what trees were fit to be cut down.

Chamberlain  
v. Dummer,  
1 Bro. R. 166.  
3 — 549.

73. Mr. Dummer devised his estate at C. to his wife for life. In a codicil he said, " Whereas by my will my wife cannot cut any timber, now my will and mind is, that she may, during so long time as

she continues my widow, cut timber, for her own use and benefit, at seasonable times in the year.

Mrs. Dummer began to fell timber ; the person in reversion applied for an injunction. Lord Thurlow utterly rejected the idea that Mrs. Dummer was only to cut timber for her own use, or for estovers ; and thought her entitled to cut, not only such timber as would suffer by standing, but every thing which could fairly be called timber ; although she could not cut such sticks as would only make paling ; or saplins not proper to be cut as timber..

74. Bishops, rectors, parsons, vicars, and other ecclesiastical persons, being considered in most respects as tenants for life of the lands, which they hold *jure ecclesiæ*, if they cut down trees, unless for reparations, they may be punished for the same in the ecclesiastical courts ; as also by writ of prohibition.

Of Waste by Ecclesiastics, ante, c. 1. § 57.

Vin. Ab. Tit. Dilapidation.

75. By the statute 35 Edw. I. it is declared, that parsons shall not presume to fell trees growing in the church-yard, but when the chancel or the body of the church requires reparations. And Lord Coke has cited a case where, upon complaint to the king in parliament that the Bishop of Durham had committed waste by destroying timber, a prohibition had issued against him. In another case, he is reported to have said, that if a bishop cut down and sold trees, and did not employ them for reparation, and any one would move it, he would grant a prohibition out of the King's Bench.

11 Rep. 49 a.

Stockman v. Whither, Roll. Rep. 86.

76. The authority of this *dictum* has been doubted in a modern case, in which the Court of Common Pleas held that it had no power to issue an original writ of prohibition, to restrain a bishop from committing waste, in the possessions of his see, at least at the suit of an uninterested person ; and doubted

Jefferson v. Ep. Durham, 1 Bos. & Pul. 105.



whether even the Court of King's Bench had such a power.

Ackland v.  
Atwell.

77. It appears however, that the Court of Chancery has long exercised this kind of jurisdiction; for there is a case stated in 2 Roll. Ab. 813, in which Lord Keeper Coventry granted a prohibition, at the suit of a patron, against a prebendary, for having wasted the trees of his prebend; and this doctrine is now fully established.

Strachy v.  
Francis,  
2 Atk. 217.

78. The patron of a living moved for an injunction against the rector to stay waste, in cutting down timber in the church-yard. Lord Hardwicke said, that a rector might cut down timber for the repairs of the parsonage-house, or the chancel, but not for any common purpose: and this he might be justified in doing under the statute 35 Edw. I. stat. 2. that by the custom of the country he might cut down underwood for any purpose; but if he grubbed it up, it was waste. He might cut down timber likewise for repairing any old pews that belonged to the rectory; and was also entitled to botes for repairing barns and outhouses belonging to the parsonage. The injunction was granted.

Knight v.  
Moseley,  
Amb. 176.

79. A bill was brought by a patron against a rector to stay waste in digging stones, &c. on the glebe, other than what was necessary for repairing and improving the rectory; and for an account of what had been dug and sold. The defendant demurred as to the account; as also to the staying the digging of stones, other than for repairs and improvements: and by way of answer set out that the quarries were opened before.

The Court said, the parson had a fee simple qualified, under restrictions, in right of the church; but he could not do every thing that a private owner of



an inheritance could: he could not commit waste, nor open mines, but might work those already opened. Even a bishop could not. Talbot Bishop of Durham applied to parliament to enable him to open mines, but it was rejected. Parsons may fell timber, or dig stone to repair; they have also been indulged in selling such timber or stone, where the money has been applied in repairs. Injunctions have been granted even against bishops, to restrain them from felling large quantities of timber, at the instance of the Attorney General on behalf of the crown, the patron of bishopricks. If the demurrer had only gone to an account, it had been good; for the patron cannot have any profit from the living; but it was too general, and must be overruled.

Rutland's Case,  
1 Lev. 107.  
contra

80. In a modern case Lord Thurlow granted an injunction to stay waste, against the widow of a rector, during the vacancy, at the suit of the patroness.

Hoskins v. Featherstone,  
2 Bro. R. 552.

81. It was resolved in 4 Will. & Mary, that an action on the case for dilapidations might be sued against a late incumbent who had resigned a benefice, or against the personal representatives of a deceased rector or vicar, by the successor. And in a modern case it was held that an action for dilapidations also lay for the neglect of repairing a prebendal house, by a succeeding prebendary, against his predecessor, or his personal representative.

Jones v. Hill,  
Carth. 224.  
3 Lev. 268.

Radcliffe v. D'Oyley,  
2 Term R. 630.

82. By the statute 56 Geo. III. c. 52. the incumbents of any benefice, with the consent of the patron and the bishop, are enabled to pay the monies to arise by sale of any timber cut from the glebe lands of such benefice, either for equality of exchange, or for the price of any house or lands purchased by them, under the authority of a statute which will be stated hereafter.

Tit. 32. c. 2.

Of Accidents  
by Fire.

83.- At common law, tenants for life were not answerable for damages done by fire, whether it arose from accident or negligence. When the statute of Gloucester rendered tenants for life answerable for waste, without any exception, it rendered them responsible for all damages done by fire. But now by the statute 6 Ann. c. 31. § 6. it is enacted, "That no action, suit, or process whatsoever, shall be had, maintained, or prosecuted against any person in whose house or chamber any fire shall accidentally begin, or any recompence be made by such person for any damage suffered or occasioned thereby; any law, usage, or custom to the contrary notwithstanding."—By the 7th section of this statute it is provided, that nothing in this act shall defeat any contract or agreement made between landlord and tenant.

Chesterfield  
v. Bolton,  
2 Com. R.  
626.

84. In consequence of this last clause it has been determined, that where a tenant for life under a settlement covenanted to keep a house in good and sufficient repair, and the house was burnt down by accident, he was bound to rebuild it.

6 Term. R.  
651.

85. It is now become usual, where the intention of the parties is that the tenant shall not be liable to rebuild in case of accidental fire, to except it in the covenant to repair.

## TITLE IV.

*Estate Tail after possibility of Issue Extinct.*

- |                                                                                                                                     |                                                                                                                                                               |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>How it arises.</i><br>8. <i>It has some Qualities of an Estate Tail.</i><br>9. <i>But is in fact only an Estate for Life.</i> | 10. <i>This Tenant has the Property of the Timber.</i><br>12. <i>But is restrained from malicious Waste.</i><br>16. <i>His Privileges not grantable over.</i> |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**W**E now come to treat of those estates for life How it arises, which are derived from the operation of some principle of law. Of these the first is called an estate tail after possibility of issue extinct; which is thus described by Littleton: “Where tenements are given § 32. to a man and to his wife in especial tail, if one of them die without issue, the survivor is tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct.”

2. “So if they have issue, and the one die, albeit Idem. that during the life of the issue, the survivor shall not be said <sup>to be</sup> tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct; yet if the issue die without issue, so as there be not any issue alive which may inherit, by force of the entail, then the surviving party is tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct.”

3. “Also if tenements be given to a man and to Id. § 33. his heirs which he shall beget on the body of his wife; in this case the wife hath nothing in the tenements, and the husband is seised as donee in special tail: and in this case, if the wife die without issue of her body, begotten by her husband, then the husband is tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct.”

Littleton,  
§ 34.

4. “ And note that none can be tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct, but one of the donees, or the donee in especial tail. For the donee in general tail cannot be said to be tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct; because always during his life he may by possibility have issue, which may inherit by force of the same entail. And in the same manner the issue which is heir to the donees in especial tail, cannot be tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct, for the reason abovesaid.”

1 Inst. 28 a.

5. Nothing but a moral impossibility of having issue can give rise to this estate. Thus if a person gives lands to a man and his wife, and to the heirs of their two bodies, and they live to a hundred years, without having issue, yet they are tenants in tail; for the law sees no impossibility of their having issue.

Idem.

6. The impossibility of having issue must proceed from the act of God, and not from the act of the parties. For if lands be given to a man and his wife, and to the heirs of their two bodies, and after they are divorced, *causa præcontractus*, or *consanguinitatis*, their estate of inheritance is turned to a joint estate for life; and although they had once an inheritance in them, yet for that the estate is altered by their own act, and not by the act of God; viz. by the death of either party without issue, they are not tenants in tail after possibility of issue extinct.

Bowles's  
Case,  
11 Rep. 81 a.

7. A person may be tenant in tail, after possibility of issue extinct, of an estate in remainder, as well as of an estate in possession. Thus if a lease be made to A. for life, remainder to B. and his wife, in special tail; and B. dies without issue, his widow will immediately become tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct.

8. This estate, though, strictly speaking, not more than an estate for life, partakes in some circumstances of the nature of an estate tail. For a tenant in tail, after possibility of issue extinct, has eight qualities or privileges in common with a tenant in tail. 1. He is dispunishable for waste, because he continues in by virtue of the livery upon the estate tail; and having once had the power of committing waste, he shall not be deprived of it by the act of God. 2. He shall not be compellable to attorn. 3. He shall not have aid of the person in reversion; because he having originally the inheritance, by the first gift, has likewise the custody of the writings, which are necessary to defend it. 4. Upon his alienation no writ of entry *in consimili casu* lies. 5. After his death no writ of intrusion lies. 6. He may join the mise in a writ of right in a special manner. 7. In a *præcipe* brought by him, he shall not name himself tenant for life. 8. In a *præcipe* brought against him, he shall not be named barely tenant for life.

It has some Qualities of an Estate Tail.

1 Inst. 27 b.

2 Inst. 302.

1 Roll. R. 184.

9. There are however four qualities annexed to this estate, which prove it to be in fact only an estate for life. 1. If this tenant makes a feoffment in fee, it is a forfeiture; because having no longer a descendible estate in him, he cannot transfer it to another, without the prejudice and disherison of the person in remainder. 2. If an estate tail or in fee descends upon him, the estate tail after possibility of issue extinct is merged. 3. If he is impleaded, and makes default, the person in reversion shall be received; as upon default of any other tenant for life. 4. An exchange between this tenant, and a bare tenant for life, is good: for, with respect to duration, their estates are equal.

But is in fact only an Estate for Life.

Tit. 32. c. 6.

This Tenant has the Property of the Timber.

10. It is said by Wray, Chief Justice, that if this tenant fells the trees, the person entitled to the

4 Rep. 63 a. inheritance shall have them; for inasmuch as he has but a particular estate for life in the land, he cannot have an absolute interest in the trees: but he shall not be punished in waste, because his original estate was not within the statute of Gloucester. This is denied by Lord Coke, who is reported to have said, that at common law this tenant had a fee, and consequently full power to fell and dispose of the trees; and notwithstanding the statute *De Donis* had made the estate to be only for life, yet the privilege and liberty was not taken away.

1 Roll. R.  
184.

Williams v.  
Williams,  
15 Ves. 419.

11. In a late case Lord Eldon held that a tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct, being punishable for waste by law, has equally with tenant for life, without impeachment of waste by settlement, an interest and property in the timber.

But is re-  
strained from  
malicious  
Waste.

12. The Court of Chancery, by analogy to the rule adopted in the case of tenant for life, without impeachment of waste, will restrain persons seised of estates tail, after possibility of issue extinct, from pulling down houses, cutting down trees planted for shelter or ornament; or any other kind of malicious waste.

Abraham  
v. Bubb,  
2 Freem. 53.  
2 Show. 68.

13. A woman being tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct, and having married again, her second husband felled some trees in a grove that grew near, and was an ornament to, the mansion-house. Having an intent to fell the rest, the person in remainder preferred his bill to restrain her from felling those trees. The court discovered a strong inclination to grant the injunction; but the case was referred.

Anon,  
2 Freem. 278.

14. A woman, tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct, was restrained from committing waste, in pulling down houses, or felling trees, which stood in defence of the house; and also fruit-trees in the garden. But for some turrets of trees which stood

a land's length or two from the house, the court would grant no injunction, because she had by law power to commit waste ; and yet she was restrained in the particulars aforesaid, because that seemed malicious.

15. On a motion for an injunction to stay a jointress, tenant in tail after possibility of issue extinct, from committing waste ; it was urged that she being a jointress within the statute 11 Hen. VII. ought, in equity, to be restrained from cutting timber, that being part of the inheritance, which by the statute she was restrained from alienating. The court granted an injunction against wilful waste in the site of the house, and pulling down houses.

Cook v. Whaley, 1 Ab. Eq. 400.

16. The privileges which this tenant enjoys arise from the privity of estate, and because the inheritance was once in him ; therefore if he grants over his estate to another, his grantee will be bare tenant for life.

His Privileges not grantable over.

17. Thus where a tenant of this kind granted over his estate, the grantee was compelled to attorn as a bare tenant for life ; and so to be named in a *quid juris clamat*. For although it were true that a tenant of this kind was not compellable to attorn, yet that was a privilege annexed to his person, not to the estate ; but by the assignment the privity was altered, and the privilege gone.

Apreece's Case, 3 Leon, 241.

**TITLE V.**

**CURTESY.**

**CHAP. I.**

*Origin of Estates by the Curtesy, and Circumstances required to their Existence.*

**CHAP. II.**

*Of what Things a Man may be Tenant by the Curtesy and Nature of this Estate.*

---

**CHAP. I.**

*Origin of Estates by the Curtesy, and Circumstances required to their Existence.*

- |                                              |                                           |
|----------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------|
| 1. Origin of Curtesy.                        | 19. In the Lifetime of the Wife.          |
| 3. Description of.                           | 21. And capable of inheriting the Estate. |
| 5. Circumstances necessary to its Existence. | 25. 4 <sup>o</sup> Death of the Wife.     |
| 6. 1 <sup>o</sup> Marriage.                  | 26. Curtesy in Gavel-kind.                |
| 8. 2 <sup>o</sup> Seisin.                    | 27. Who may be Tenants by the Curtesy.    |
| 17. 3 <sup>o</sup> Issue.                    |                                           |
| 18. Who must be born alive.                  |                                           |

---

**SECTION 1.**

Origin of  
Curtesy.

**T**HE second estate for life derived from the common law is that which a husband acquires in his wife's lands, by having issue by her ; which is called an estate by the curtesy of England : for before issue had, the husband has only an estate during the joint lives of himself and his wife.



2. Littleton says this estate is so called, because it is peculiar to England. This is a mistake; for the custom that a husband who had issue should retain the lands of his deceased wife, during his life, prevailed among all the northern nations, and is to be found in the laws of Normandy. It is said in Horne's *Mirror* to have been established in England by King Henry I. This is extremely probable; as there is a full account of it in the treatise that bears the name of Glanville, which was written in the reign of Henry II.

§ 35.

c. 1. § 3:

Lib. 7. c. 18.  
Bract. 437 b.

3. An estate by the curtesy is thus described by Littleton: "Where a man taketh a wife seised in fee simple, or in fee tail general, or seised as heir in special tail, and hath issue by the same wife, male or female, born alive, albeit the issue after dieth or liveth, yet if the wife dies, the husband shall hold the land during his life, by the law of England."

Description  
of.  
§ 35.

4. Sir Joseph Jekyll has observed that the husband's tenancy by the curtesy has no moral foundation, and is therefore properly called a tenancy by the curtesy of England—that is, an estate by the favour of the law of England.

2 P. Wms.  
703.

5. Littleton's description of curtesy points out four circumstances as absolutely necessary to the existence of this estate; namely, 1. Marriage; 2. Seisin of the wife; 3. Issue; 4. Death of the wife.

Circumstances  
necessary  
to its Exist-  
ence.

6. With respect to the marriage, it must be between persons capable of contracting together, and duly celebrated.

1. Marriage.

It should however be observed, that although, where a marriage is void, the husband does not acquire a title to curtesy; yet if it be only voidable, and is not annulled during the life of the wife, the husband will be tenant by the curtesy: for no marriage can be

2 Burn Eccl.  
Law, 458.

avoided by the ecclesiastical courts, after the death of either of the parties.

7. With respect to the mode of proving the fact of marriage, it will be stated in the next title.

2. Seisin.

1 Inst. 29 a.

Vide Doct. &  
Stud. Dial. 2.  
c. 15.

8. As to the seisin of the wife, or of the husband in right of his wife, it is a circumstance absolutely necessary. With respect to corporeal hereditaments, there must be a seisin in deed. Thus Lord Coke says, if a man dies seised of lands in fee simple, or fee tail general, and the lands descend to his daughter who marries, has issue, and dies before entry, the husband shall not be tenant by the curtesy. Yet in this case the wife had a seisin in law. But if she or her husband had entered during her life, he would have been tenant by the curtesy.

1 Inst. 30 a.

9. The time when the seisin commences, whether before or after issue had, is immaterial. For if a man marries a woman seised in fee, is disseised, and then has issue, and the wife dies, he shall enter and hold by the curtesy: so if he has issue, which dies before the descent of the lands on the wife.

1 Inst. 29 b.  
n. 3.

10. If a woman, tenant in tail general, makes a feoffment in fee, and takes back an estate in fee, and marries, has issue, and dies; the issue may in a formedon recover the land against his father; because he is to recover by force of the estate tail, as heir to his mother, and is not inheritable to his father.

Mr. Hargrave has observed upon this passage, that the husband could not have curtesy in respect of the fee, because that was defeated by the son's recovery in the formedon; nor in respect of the tail, because the wife's feoffment, before the marriage, had discontinued it; consequently there could be no seisin of it during the marriage.

11. It has been stated that the possession of a lessee for years is the possession of the person to whom the inheritance descends, even before the receipt of rent. And if lands which are let for years descend upon a married woman, who lives beyond the day on which the rent becomes due, without receiving it, yet her husband will be entitled to curtesy. Tit. 1. § 28.

12. An estate tail descended from her brother to Alice Richardson, who was married, and had issue; the lands were let on leases for years, and the rents were payable at Michaelmas and Lady-day. The tenants being greatly in arrear, Alice did not receive any of the Lady-day rents, but died four months after that time; nor did any other person receive rent during her life. The question was, whether her husband was entitled to be tenant by the curtesy. De Gray v. Richardson,  
3 Atk. 469.

Lord Hardwicke said, if Alice had died before Lady-day, there could not have been a doubt of the husband's right to curtesy; because he could do nothing till the rent became due. The only objection arose from the neglect of the husband in not distraining for the rent which became due at Lady-day. The receipt of rent would have amounted to an actual seisin. If the representatives of the brother had received any rent during the life of the wife, it would have been a material objection; but no part of the rent which accrued after the death of the brother was ever received by the wife, or by any other person; so that the possession of the lessee was the possession of the wife; nor could there be any other without making the husband a trespasser. Decreed that the husband was entitled to be tenant by the curtesy.

**Tit. 8. c. 1.** 13. A devise to executors for payment of debts does not prevent the descent of the freehold and inheritance; from whence it follows that, in a case of this kind, there will be curtesy.

**Guavara's Case, 8 Rep. 96 a.** 14. A person, who had issue a daughter, devised his lands to his executors for payment of his debts, and until his debts were paid. The executors entered. **vide Tit. 8. c. 1.** The daughter married, had issue, and died: afterwards the debts were paid. It was resolved that the husband should be tenant by the curtesy.

**1 Inst. 29 a. 32 a.** 15. Where the estate of the wife is let for life, before the marriage; the husband cannot acquire a seisin thereof, and will not therefore be entitled to curtesy. If a rent be reserved, it seems doubtful whether the husband will be entitled to it. In a similar case Lord Coke was of opinion that the wife should have dower.

**Tit. 6. c. 8.** 16. With respect to the seisin which is necessary, in incorporeal hereditaments, to give a title to curtesy it will be stated in Title XXI. *Advowson*, and the subsequent titles.

**3<sup>d</sup> Issue. 1 Inst. 30 a. 67 a.** 17. The third circumstance required to the existence of an estate by the curtesy is issue; after which the husband was formerly allowed to do homage alone, and was called tenant by the curtesy initiate. Such issue must however have the following qualities: to entitle the husband to curtesy: 1. It must be born alive; 2. In the lifetime of the mother; 3. Be capable of inheriting the estate.

**Who must be born alive.** 18. By the old law it was deemed necessary that the child should be heard to cry: and that circumstance was to be proved by persons who actually heard it, not by those who learned it by hearsay. **Bract. 438 a.** Littleton however appears to have doubted whether it was necessary to prove that the child cried; and Lord

Coke deduces an argument from the form of pleading in cases of this kind, to prove that any other evidence would be sufficient.

19. The issue must be born in the lifetime of the wife: so that if the wife dies in childbed, and the issue is taken out of the womb by the Cæsarean operation, the husband will not be entitled to curtesy. For at the instant of the mother's death he was clearly not entitled, as having had no issue born, but the land descended to the child, while in his mother's womb; and the estate, being once so vested, shall not be taken from him.

*In the Life-time of the Wife.*

*1 Inst. 29 b.  
8 Rep. 35 a.*

20. It is immaterial whether the issue be born before or after the seisin of the wife. Thus if, after issue is born, lands descend to the wife, be the issue dead or alive at the time of the descent, the husband shall be tenant by the curtesy. So if, after the death of the issue, the wife acquires lands in fee, and dies without having had any other issue, her husband shall be tenant by the curtesy. For the having issue and being seised during the coverture is sufficient, though it be at several times.

*8 Rep. 35 b.*

*13 Rep. 23.*

21. The issue must be such as is capable of inheriting the estate: therefore if lands be given to a woman, and the heirs male of her body, who has issue a daughter only, her husband will not be tenant by the curtesy.

*And capable of inheriting the Estate.*

*1 Inst. 29 b.  
8 Rep. 35 b.*

22. If a woman seised in fee marries, has issue, and then the husband dies, and she takes another husband, and has issue by him, though the first issue be living, yet the second husband shall be tenant by the curtesy; because his issue by possibility may inherit, if the first issue die without issue.

*8 Rep. 34 b.*

23. It is a rule of law that no person can be heir to an ancestor, unless such ancestor died seised:

*Tit. 29. c. 3.*

hence probably arose the doctrine which requires an actual seisin in the wife; for, without such an actual seisin, her issue would not be capable of inheriting from her.

1 Inst. 40 a.

24. If the wife has issue, and after is attainted of felony, so as the issue cannot inherit to her, yet the husband shall be tenant by the curtesy, in respect of the issue born before the felony, which by possibility might then have inherited. But if the wife had been attainted of felony before issue had, although she had issue afterwards, the husband would not be tenant by the curtesy.

4° Death of the Wife.

25. The fourth and last circumstance necessary to give a title to curtesy is the death of the wife; by which the estate of the husband becomes consummate.

Curtesy in Gavel-kind.

26. By the special custom of gavel-kind, a husband who survives his wife is entitled to a moiety of her lands, whether he has issue or not; but which, in conformity to the custom of Normandy, is forfeited by a second marriage. Mr. Robinson, in his treatise on Gavel-kind, observes that this was formerly called the Man's Free Bench; and cites a record of 21 Edw. I. in which the custom is recognized.

Who may be Tenants by the Curtesy.

27. As to the persons who are capable of acquiring an estate of this kind, it will be sufficient to observe, that all those who are capable of taking freehold estates, may be tenants by the curtesy.

7 Rep. 25 a.  
1 Vent. 417.

28. An alien cannot be tenant by the curtesy, for although he may take an estate by purchase, for the benefit of the crown, yet he cannot take an estate by act of law: for the law will not transfer an estate to a person who cannot keep it, but must immediately give title to another. If an alien be made a denizen, and afterwards has issue, he may be tenant

by the curtesy, in respect of such issue ; though he would not be entitled on account of issue had before.

29. Persons attainted of treason or felony cannot be tenants by the curtesy ; for, being *extra legem positi*, they are become incapable of deriving any benefit from the law ; and by consequence, of this in particular, which intended to give the inheritance only to those who were capable of holding it during their lives.

Bro. Ab.  
Curtesy, 15.

## TITLE V.

## CURTESY.

## CHAP. II.

*Of what Things a Man may be Tenant by the Curtesy,  
and Nature of this Estate.*

- |                                                       |                                                  |
|-------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Estates in Fee Simple.</i>                      | 18. <i>Estates not of Inheritance.</i>           |
| 5. <i>Estates Tail.</i>                               | 22. <i>Estates in Joint-tenancy.</i>             |
| 11. <i>Estates in Coparcenary and<br/>Common.</i>     | 23. <i>Reversions and Remainders.</i>            |
| 12. <i>Trust Estates.</i>                             | 24. <i>Lands assigned for Dower.</i>             |
| 13. <i>Money to be laid out in Land.</i>              | 25. <i>Copyhold Estates.</i>                     |
| 15. <i>Equities of Redemption.</i>                    | 26. <i>Nature of this Estate.</i>                |
| 16. <i>Incorporeal Hereditaments.</i>                 | 31. <i>Forfeitable for Alienation.</i>           |
| 17. <i>What Things are not liable to<br/>Curtesy.</i> | 33. <i>But not for Adultery.</i>                 |
|                                                       | 34. <i>This Tenant punishable for<br/>Waste.</i> |

## SECTION 1.

Estates in  
Fee Simple.

437 b.

Bro. Ab.  
Estate, 25.

**I**T appears from Glanville, lib. 7. c. 18. that the right to curtesy was originally confined to the *maritagium* of the wife ; but was soon extended to all the lands whereof the wife was seised, whether she acquired them by inheritance, or as a *maritagium*, or by donation ; as is stated by Bracton. And Littleton's description of curtesy extends to all estates in fee simple.

2. If a woman, tenant in tail, after possibility-of issue extinct, takes a husband, has issue, and the fee simple descends upon her, the husband will be entitled to curtesy ; because, by the descent of the fee, the estate tail after possibility was merged ; and the wife became tenant in fee simple executed.



3. A man may be tenant by the curtesy of a capital messuage, though it be *caput baroniæ* or *comitatus*, as also of a castle, which serves for the public defence of the realm, and of a manor with all its rights and appurtenances. 1 Inst. 30 b.

4. Where by articles previous to marriage a woman granted to her intended husband, during their joint lives, the interest of her money, and the rents of her estate, of which she was seised in fee, to maintain the house, &c.; Lord Hardwicke held that this was not intended to abridge the husband's legal rights; therefore that he was entitled to be tenant by the curtesy of the estate whereof his wife was seised at the time of the marriage; as well as to an estate which came to her after. *Stedman v. Pulling*, 3 Atk. 423.

5. Before the statute *De Donis*, conditional fees were subject to curtesy. When that statute converted them into estates tail, husbands were allowed to be tenants by the curtesy of them also. *Estates Tail.*

6. Where lands were given, before the statute *De Donis*, to a man and a woman, and the heirs of their bodies to be begotten, the course of descent was in some degree changed by their having issue; for then the land became descendible to all the heirs of the donee's body, and also liable to the curtesy of a second husband. To prevent this, it was enacted by the statute *De Donis*, that where lands were given in this manner, a second husband should not be tenant by the curtesy. 8 Rep. 35 b. 2 Inst. 336.

7. In Littleton's description of curtesy, it is confined to women seised as heirs in special tail. There can be no doubt however but that the husband of a woman donee in special tail would be also entitled to curtesy.

8. It was formerly doubted whether a man could be tenant by the curtesy of an estate tail, after failure of issue capable of inheriting the estate; by which the estate tail was in fact determined, and the donor's right to the reversion accrued. But it has been resolved that, in a case of this kind, the husband should have his curtesy.

Paine's Case,  
8 Rep. 34.  
1 Inst. 30 a.

9. A man, having issue two daughters, gave lands to the elder, and the heirs of her body; remainder to the younger, and the heirs of her body. The elder daughter married, and had issue born alive, that died; afterwards she herself died. The younger daughter entered upon the husband of the elder, who claimed to be tenant by the curtesy. It was objected that the husband should not in this case be tenant by the curtesy, because the estate of the wife was determined; and the estate of the husband, which was derived out of that of the wife, could not continue longer than the primitive estate endured; for, *cessante statu primitivo, cessat derivativus*. But it was answered and resolved, that at common law, if lands had been given to a woman and the heirs of her body, and she had taken a husband, and had issue, and the issue had died, and the wife had died without issue, whereby the inheritance of the land reverted to the donor; in that case the estate of the wife was determined, and yet the husband should be tenant by the curtesy; for that was *tacite* implied in the gift: that the husband was therefore entitled in this case to hold the estate tail during his life, as tenant by the curtesy. The estate by the curtesy was not derived merely out of the estate of the wife, but was given to the husband by the privilege and benefit of the law: for as soon as the husband had issue, his title became

initiate, and could not afterwards be defeated by the death of the issue; which, being the act of God, ought not to turn to his prejudice.

10. Curtesy is an incident so inseparably annexed to an estate tail, that it cannot be restrained by any proviso or condition whatever. 1 Inst. 224 a.  
6 Rep. 41 a.

11. A man may be tenant by the curtesy of an estate in fee or in tail, held in coparcenary or in common with other persons; of which an account will be given under those titles. Estates in  
Coparcenary  
and Com-  
mon.  
Tit. 19 & 20.

12. Although curtesy is a right derived from positive institution, not from any moral principle, yet it is much favoured in equity: for trust estates are liable to curtesy, and the courts of equity will assist a tenant of this kind in removing trust terms for years; of which an account will be given hereafter. Trust  
Estates.  
  
Tit. 12. c. 2.

13. It has been stated to be a rule in equity, that money agreed or directed to be laid out in the purchase of land shall be considered as land to all intents and purposes. Upon this principle it is held, that a man may be tenant by the curtesy of money agreed or directed to be laid out in the purchase of land. Money to be  
laid out in  
Land.  
Tit. 1. § 6.

14. A person devised 300*l.* to her daughter Mary, to be laid out by her executrix in the purchase of land, and settled to the only use of her said daughter and her children; if she died without issue, the lands to be equally divided between her brothers and sisters. The plaintiff married Mary the legatee, and had issue by her. She and her children being dead, and the money not laid out in land, the bill was, that the plaintiff might either have the money laid out in the purchase of land, and settled on him for life, as tenant by the curtesy; or have the interest of it during his life. Sweetapple  
v. Bindon,  
2 Vern. 536.

Cunningham  
v. Moody,  
1 Ves. 174.  
Dodson  
v. Hay,  
3 Bro. R. 404.  
S. P.

Equities of  
Redemption.

Incorporeal  
Heredita-  
ments.

What Things  
are not liable  
to Curtesy.

Estates not of  
Inheritance.

Boothby v.  
Vernon,  
9 Mod. 147.

Roberts v.  
Dirwell,  
Tit. 38.

The Court observed, that if this had been an immediate devise of land, the devisee would have been tenant in tail, consequently the husband would have been tenant by the curtesy. It was therefore decreed that the money should be considered as land; and that the plaintiff should have the interest and produce thereof during his life, as tenant by the curtesy.

15. An equity of redemption of an estate in fee simple is subject to curtesy; of which an account will be given in Title XV. *Mortgage*.

16. Some incorporeal hereditaments, such as advowsons, tithes, commons, and rents, are liable to curtesy; of which an account will be given under those respective titles.

17. Having stated the different kinds of property which are liable to curtesy, it will now be necessary to examine what things are not subject to this right.

18. No estates in land are subject to curtesy but estates of inheritance; for an estate by the curtesy is a continuation of the inheritance, and therefore there can be no tenant by the curtesy, unless the children take the inheritance. And it is absolutely necessary, that the moment the husband takes as tenant by the curtesy, the inheritance should descend upon the children.

19. Lands were devised to Ann Boothby and her assigns for her life; if she married, and had issue male of her body living at the time of her death, then to such issue male and his heirs male for ever. Ann Boothby married, had issue, and died in the lifetime of her husband.

It was held that the inheritance never having been vested in the wife during her life, her husband could not be tenant by the curtesy.

20. Lands were devised to A. and her heirs ; if she died before her husband, he to have 20*l.* a year ; the remainder to go to the children. The wife died before her husband. The Court said it was a rule, in the case of a tenancy by the curtesy, that the estate should come out of the inheritance, and not out of the freehold ; therefore the husband was not entitled to curtesy.

*Sumner v. Patridge,*  
2 Atk. 47.

21. A woman tenant in tail, previous to her marriage, conveyed her estate, by lease and release, to trustees, to the use of her husband for life, remainder to herself for life, remainder to the first and other sons of the marriage. The woman died in the lifetime of her husband ; and it was held that the husband did not take any estate under the settlement, because it was not competent to the wife to pass the estate by such a conveyance, to the prejudice of her issue, after her death, and that he did not take an estate by the curtesy ; because, the instant the marriage took effect, the estate was vested in the husband during the joint lives of himself and his wife ; consequently there never was one moment during the coverture when the wife was seised of an estate tail in possession ; which was necessary in order to make the husband tenant by the curtesy.

*Doe. v. Rivers,*  
7 Term R. 276.

*Tit. 2, c. 2,*  
§ 18.

22. Estates in fee or in tail, which are held in joint-tenancy, are not subject to curtesy ; of which the reason will be given in that title.

*Estates in Joint-tenancy.*  
*Tit. 18.*

23. Lord Coke says, a man shall not be tenant by the curtesy of a reversion or remainder expectant upon an estate of freehold, unless the particular estate be determined during the coverture. But a man is entitled to curtesy of a reversion expectant on an estate for years, because the wife was seised of the freehold.

*Reversions or Remainders.*  
1 Inst. 29 a.

*ante, c. 1.*  
§ 12.

Land assigned for Dower.

24. A man cannot be tenant by the curtesy of lands, which are assigned to a woman for her dower; of which the reason will be given in the next title.

Copyhold Estates.

25. Copyhold estates are not liable to curtesy by the common law. There are however many manors in which the husband of a female copyholder is, by particular custom, entitled to his wife's estate, if he survives her; of which an account will be given in Title X. *Copyhold.* But a man may be tenant by the curtesy of the rents and services due for copyholds, where his wife was seised of the manor.

Nature of this Estate.

26. An estate by the curtesy is no more than a bare estate for life, nor has this tenant any more privileges than a mere tenant for life. By the custom of Normandy it was determinable upon the second marriage of the tenant, which, we have seen, is still the case in gavel-kind lands.

3 Rep. 22 b.  
Dyer, 51 b.  
a. 17.

27. An estate by the curtesy is considered in many respects as a continuation of the wife's estate; therefore the husband is entitled to all those rights and privileges which his wife would have had if she were alive, and which were annexed to her estate.

Bro. Ab.  
Præcipe, 38.

28. No entry is necessary to complete this estate; for, on the death of the wife, the law adjudges the freehold to be in the husband immediately, as tenant by the curtesy.

1 Atk. 606.

29. Where an estate, of which a man is tenant by the curtesy, is charged with the payment of a sum of money, the person entitled to the inheritance can oblige the tenant by the curtesy to keep down the interest, as well as any other tenant for life.

8 Rep. 36 a.  
2 Inst. 301.

30. The tenant by the curtesy shall be attendant on the lord paramount for the services due in respect to the lands that he holds by this title.

31. If a tenant by the curtesy aliens in fee, or in tail, or for the life of the grantee, it is a forfeiture of his estate; and the person in reversion may, by the statute of Westminster 2. c. 24. have a writ of entry in *consimili casu*.

Forfeitable  
for Alienation.

2 Inst. 309.

32. Tenants by the curtesy are restrained from barring the heirs of their wives by warranty without assets.

Tit. 32. c. 24.

33. A husband does not forfeit his right to an estate by the curtesy by leaving his wife, and living in adultery with another woman.

But not for  
Adultery.

3 P. Wms.  
276.

34. It appears to have been doubtful whether a tenant by the curtesy was punishable at common law for waste; therefore it was enacted by the statute of Gloucester, 6 Edw. I. c. 5. that a writ of waste might be brought against him; and that he should incur the same penalties for committing waste, as any other tenant for life.

This Tenant  
punishable  
for Waste.

2 Inst. 145.  
301. 353.

35. There is such a privity of estate between the tenant by the curtesy and the heir, that at common law, although both had, as it were by consent, granted away their estates, yet no action of waste lay against any other than the tenant by the curtesy; nor against him, by any other than the heir at law. By the statute of Gloucester, c. 5. a remedy is provided for the grantee of the reversion, against a tenant by the curtesy, so long as he continues his estate; or against his assignee. But while the heir keeps his reversion, the tenant by the curtesy is liable to his action of waste, notwithstanding any assignment; the statute having provided no remedy for this case.

2 Inst. 301.

2 Bac. Ab.  
8vo, p. 230.

36. It appears somewhat doubtful whether tenant by the curtesy is within the statute 6 Anne, c. 31. respecting accidental fire.

1 Inst. 57 a.

n. 1.

Tit. 3. c. 2.

§ 83.

TITLE VI.

DOWER.

CHAP. I.

*Origin and different Kinds of Dower.*

CHAP. II.

*Circumstances required to give a Title to Dower, and what Persons are capable of it.*

CHAP. III.

*Of what Things Dower may be; and Nature of this Estate.*

CHAP. IV.

*Assignment of Dower, and Modes of recovering it.*

CHAP. V.

*What will operate as a Bar or Satisfaction to Dower.*

»

---

CHAP. I.

*Origin and different Kinds of Dower.*

- |                                      |                                     |
|--------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 2. <i>Origin of Dower.</i>           | 14. <i>Dower ex Assensu Patris.</i> |
| 8. <i>Dower at Common Law.</i>       | 16. <i>Dower de la plus Belle.</i>  |
| 9. <i>Dower by Custom.</i>           | 17. <i>Dower is a moral Right.</i>  |
| 13. <i>Dower ad Ostium Ecclesiæ.</i> |                                     |

---

SECTION 1.

**T**HE third estate for life derived from the law is that which a widow acquires in a certain portion of her husband's real property, after his death,



for her support and maintenance; which is called dower.

2. The idea of dower is derived from the Germans, among whom it was a rule, that a virgin should have no marriage portion, but that her husband should allot a part of his property for her maintenance, in case she survived him. Thus Tacitus says—*Dotem non uxor marito, sed uxori maritus offert.*

Origin of  
Dower.

3. When the Germans established themselves in the southern parts of Europe, and reduced their customs into writing, they fixed the portion of the husband's estate which he might allot to his wife for her dower. The Longobardic code directed that it should consist of a fourth part, the Gothic of a tenth; and in process of time regular forms were invented for the purpose of constituting dower.

Du Cange,  
voce *Dos.*  
Baluz. Form.  
V. 2. 414. 937.  
Marculphi  
Form. c. 15.

4. The Saxons, like all the other German nations, were well acquainted with the custom of dower; for it appears from the laws of King Edmund, that a widow was entitled to a moiety of her husband's property for her life; but which she forfeited by a second marriage. And in the Appendix to Somner's Gavel-kind there is a Saxon charter, entitled *Chirographum pervetustum de nuptiis contrahendis, et dote constituenda*; in which particular lands, together with thirty oxen, twenty cows, ten horses, and ten bondmen, are appointed for the wife's dower.

Lindbebrog,  
LL. Sax.  
Tit. 7.

5. It is not known whether the Conqueror made any alteration in the Anglo-Saxon custom respecting dower: so that it probably continued to consist of a moiety of the husband's lands, upon condition that the widow remained chaste and unmarried. By the charter of King Henry I. this condition of chastity and widowhood was only required where there was issue.

Blackst.  
Tracts, 286.

Lib. 6. c. 1,  
2. &c.

6. The law of dower was altered in the reign of Henry II. for Glanville states it thus : Every man was bound, both by the civil and ecclesiastical law, to endow his wife, at the time of his marriage, either by naming the dower in particular, or by endowing her generally of all his lands. If he endowed her generally, then the wife was entitled to her *dos rationabilis*, which was one third of her husband's freehold. If he named a dower which amounted to more than a third, it was not allowed, but reduced to a third. Nor was the wife entitled to dower out of any of her husband's subsequent acquisitions, unless he specially engaged before the priest to endow her of them. These regulations are exactly similar to those contained in the *Grand Coustumier* of Normandy.

c. 101.

7. Nothing is mentioned in King John's *Magna Charta*, or the charter of 1 Hen. III. respecting dower; but in the charters of 1217 and 1224 it is declared that dower should consist of a third part of all the lands which the husband held during his life, unless the wife had been endowed of a smaller portion at the church-door. *Assignetur autem ei pro dote sua tertia pars totius terræ mariti sui, quæ fuit sua in vita sua, nisi de minori fuerit dotata ad ostium ecclesiæ.*

2 Inst. 16.

Dower at  
Common  
Law.

8. There are now subsisting four sorts of dower. The first is dower at common law, which appears to have been finally established by *Magna Charta*; and is thus described by Littleton, § 36.—“Tenant in dower is where a man is seised of certain lands and tenements in fee simple, fee tail general, or as heir in special tail, and taketh a wife and dieth; the wife, after the decease of her husband, shall be endowed of a third part of such lands and tenements as were her husband's at any time during the coverture; to have and to

hold to the same wife in severalty; by metes and bounds, for term of her life; whether she hath issue by her husband or no, and of what age soever the wife be, so as that she be past the age of nine years, at the time of the death of her husband."

9. Dower by custom is where a widow becomes entitled to a certain portion of her husband's lands, in consequence of some local and peculiar custom. In cases of this kind the wife cannot waive the provision thereby made for her, and claim dower at common law, because all customs are equally antient with the common law.

Dower by Custom.  
1 Inst. 33 b.

10. Thus by the custom of Gavelkind, the widow is entitled to a moiety of all the lands and tenements which her husband held by that tenure. This was formerly called free bench, and is forfeitable by a second marriage, or by having a bastard child. It is observable, that this species of dower is precisely similar to that which existed in the time of the Saxons.

Robinson's Gav. 159.  
17 Edw. 2.  
St. 1. c. 16.

11. Littleton says, that, in some burroughs, by custom, the wife shall have for her dower all the tenements that were her husband's; which is also called free bench.

Lamb. Arch. 60.

12. By the custom of most manors of which lands are held by copy of court roll, the widows of copyholders are entitled to a certain part of their husband's lands, and sometimes to the whole; as their dower or free bench.

§ 166.

vide Tit. 10.

13. Dower *ad ostium ecclesie* is, where a man of full age, when he comes to the church door to be married, after troth plighted, endows his wife of a certain portion of his land. This is in all probability the most antient species of dower.

Dower ad Ostium Ecclesie.  
Lit. § 39.  
Bract. Lib. 2. c. 39.

14. Dower *ex assensu patris* was only a species of dower *ad ostium ecclesie*, made when the husband's

Dower ex assensu Patris.

father was alive, and the son, with his consent expressly given, endowed his wife, at the church door, of a certain part of his father's lands.

Lit. § 41.

15. These two last kinds of dower were not absolutely binding on the wife; for she might refuse them after her husband's death, and claim her dower at common law. Which was probably the reason that they soon fell into disuse.

Dower *de la plus belle*,  
Lit. § 48.

16. There was another kind of dower, called *de la plus belle*; which was where a man held some lands by knight service, and others in socage, and the widow occupied the lands held in socage as guardian in socage; if in such a case the widow claimed dower out of the lands held by knight service, the guardian in chivalry might pray that she should be endowed, *de la plus belle*, of the lands held in socage; in order to prevent dismembering the lands held by knight service, which were appropriated to the service of the realm.

The abolition of military tenures has put an end to this kind of dower.

Dower is a  
moral Right.

2 P. Wms.  
702.

17. It has been stated that curtesy is founded on positive institutions; but dower is not only a civil, but also a moral right. Thus Sir Joseph Jekyll says, "the relation of husband and wife, as it is the nearest, so it is the earliest; and therefore the wife is the proper object of the care and kindness of the husband. The husband is bound by the law of God and man to provide for her during his life; and after his death the moral obligation is not at an end, but he ought to take care of her provision during her own life. This is the more reasonable, as, during the coverture, the wife can acquire no property of her own. If before her marriage she had a real estate, this by the coverture ceases to be hers; and the right

thereto, while she is married, vests in her husband. Her personal estate becomes his absolutely, or at least is subject to his control ; so that unless she has a real estate of her own (which is the case of but few), she may by his death be destitute of the necessities of life ; unless provided for out of his estate, either by a jointure, or dower. As to the husband's personal estate, unless restrained by special custom, which very rarely takes place, he may give it all away from her. So that his real estate, if he has any, is the only plank she can lay hold of, to prevent her sinking under her distress. Thus the wife is said to have a moral right to dower."

## TITLE VI.

## DOWER.

## CHAP. II.

*Circumstances required to give a Title to Dower, and what Persons are capable of it.*

- |                                |                                 |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. Circumstances required.     | 22. 3° Death of the Husband.    |
| 2. 1° Marriage.                | 23. Who may be endowed.         |
| 5. How it must be proved.      | 24. Who are incapable of Dower. |
| 6. Effect of Divorces.         | 25. Aliens.                     |
| 12. 2° Seisin of the Husband.  | 27. Jewesses.                   |
| 20. Seisin of Gavelkind Lands. | 28. Women Stolen.               |

## SECTION 1.

Circumstances required.

**L**ITTLETON's Description points out three circumstances as absolutely necessary to create a title to dower; namely, marriage, seisin, and death of the husband.

1° Marriage.

2. With respect to the marriage, it must be between persons capable of contracting together, and duly celebrated; for it is a maxim of law, *ubi nullum matrimonium, ibi nulla dos*.

1 Inst. 32 a.

Id. 33 a.

3. Although the marriage be had before the parties are of sufficient age to consent, yet Lord Coke says, if the wife be past the age of nine years, at the time of her husband's death, she shall be endowed; of what age soever her husband be, although he were but four years old. Wherein it is to be observed, that

Dyer, 369 a.

although *consensus non concubitus facit matrimonium*; and that a woman cannot consent before twelve years, nor a man before fourteen; yet this inchoate and imperfect marriage, from which either of the parties

Id. 368 b.

may at the age of consent, disagree, shall entitle the wife to dower : therefore it is accounted in law, after the death of the husband, *legitimum matrimonium quoad dotem*.

4. It has been stated, that although a marriage be voidable, yet if it be not avoided in the life-time of the parties, it cannot be annulled after. And if a marriage *de facto* be voidable by divorce, whereby the marriage might have been dissolved, and the parties freed *a vinculo matrimonii*, yet if the husband die before any divorce ; then, for that it cannot after be annulled, his wife *de facto* will be endowed.

Tit. 5. c. 1. § 6.

1 Inst. 33 b.

5. In actions for curtesy or dower, the fact of marriage cannot be tried by a jury, but only by the bishop's certificate, upon the plea of *ne unques accouplé in loyal matrimony*. Because the direct jurisdiction, in questions concerning the legality of marriage, belongs to the ecclesiastical courts, and the sentences of those courts on this head are in general conclusive to the temporal courts.

How it must be proved.

Robins v. Crutchley, 2 Wils. R. 122. Ilderton v. Ilderton, 2 H. Black. 145.

6. A divorce *propter sevitiā et metum* is no bar of dower ; because it does not dissolve the bond of matrimony ; but it is only a permission to the parties to live separate, in order that the wife may be secure from the husband's cruelty.

Effect of Divorces. 1 Inst. 32 a.

7. Lord Coke says a divorce, on account of adultery, is no bar of dower, because it does not dissolve the marriage, but only separates the parties *a mensa et thoro* ; and the marriage still remains in force. In Rolls Abridgment is the following passage—" If the wife be divorced for adultery, which does not dissolve the bond of marriage, by the canon law, nor of our church in this realm, but is only *a mensa et thoro* ; yet this shall bar her of her dower."

Idem.

Tit. Dower, P. 13.

Lady  
Stowell's  
Case,  
God. 145.  
Noy 108.  
Shute v.  
Shute, Prec.  
in Cha. 111.

8. Lord Coke's doctrine is however supported by a determination of the Court of Common Pleas in 2 James. And by a case in 1700, where a woman, who had been divorced *a mensa et thoro*, claimed her dower in Chancery, and Sir Thomas Trevor, M. R. said—"as to the dower, whether you are entitled to it, go to law, there being no impediment, and therefore as to that, the bill must be dismissed." In this case the divorce was probably obtained on account of adultery.

infra, c. 5.

9. If a woman elopes from her husband, and lives in adultery, she will thereby lose her dower.

1 Inst. 33 a.

10. A divorce *causa præcontractus, consanguinitatis, affinitatis, or frigiditatis*, bars the wife of dower; for these dissolve the *vinculum matrimonii*, and leave the parties at liberty to marry again. But the marriage must be dissolved in the life-time of the husband.

2<sup>o</sup> Seisin of  
the Husband.  
1 Inst. 31 a.

Tit. 1. § 24.

11. The second circumstance required to the existence of dower is, that the husband should be seised, sometime during the coverture, of the estate whereof the wife is dowable. There is however no necessity for a seisin in deed, as in the case of curtesy, a seisin in law will be sufficient; otherwise it would be in the husband's power, either by his negligence or his malice, to defeat his wife of that subsistence, after his death, which the law has provided for her. And she cannot enter to gain a seisin in her own right, as her husband may do in lands descended to her; in order to entitle himself to curtesy.

Perk. 366.

Lit. § 448.

Perk. 371.

12. Where the ancestor dies seised, and the heir, being married, dies without making an actual entry on the lands, his widow shall notwithstanding be endowed; for by the descent of the land upon the



heir, he acquired a seisin and freehold in law, though not in deed. It would be the same if soon after the death of the ancestor a stranger had entered on the land and abated: for between the death of the ancestor, and the entry of the abator, there was a space of time during which the heir had a seisin in law.

13. If however the heir had married, after the entry of the abator, and had died without making an entry, his widow would not be entitled to dower: because the seisin in law which the heir had acquired, upon the death of his ancestor, was divested by the abatement, before the marriage: so that the heir had neither a seisin in law, nor in deed, during the coverture. Perk. 367.

14. Where lands are conveyed to a married man, by a deed deriving its effect from the statute of uses, his wife will be entitled to dower, though the husband does not enter; because by the operation of that statute a seisin in deed is transferred. Tit. 11. c. 3.

15. Lord Coke says, if a man makes a lease for life, reserving rent to him and his heirs, then marries and dies; his wife shall not be endowed of the reversion, because there was no seisin in deed or in law of the freehold; nor of the rent, because the husband had but a particular estate therein, and no fee simple. But if a man makes a lease for years, reserving rent, then marries, and dies, his wife shall be endowed; because he continues to be seised of the freehold and inheritance. 1 Inst. 32 a.

16. If a person devises lands to his executors for payment of his debts, and after his debts paid, to his son in tail; and the son marries, and dies before the debts are paid: his wife shall have dower; because the estate of the executors is only a chattel interest, 1 Inst. 41 a.  
8 Rep. 96 a.  
2 Vern. 404.

and the freehold vested in the son, on the death of his father. But the wife's dower will not commence till the debts are paid.

2 Comm.  
132.

Broughton  
v. Randall,  
Cro. Eliz.  
502. Noy 64.

17. Sir W. Blackstone says, if the land abides in the husband for the interval of but a single moment, it seems that the wife shall be endowed thereof; and mentions a very extraordinary case, where the father and son where both hanged in one cart, but the son was supposed to have survived the father, by appearing to struggle longest, whereby he became seised of an estate in fee by survivorship; in consequence of which seisin his widow had a verdict for her dower.

1 Inst. 31 b.

18. It is however laid down by Lord Coke, that, of a seisin for an instant, a woman shall not be endowed. This position is thus explained by Blackstone:—"The seisin of the husband for a transitory instant only, when the same act which gives him the estate, conveys it also out of him again (as where by a fine land is granted to a man, and he immediately renders it back by the same fine), such a seisin will not entitle the wife to dower, for the land was merely in *transitu*, and never rested in the husband; the grant and render being one continued act."

2 Comm.  
131, 2.

1 Inst. 31 b.  
Amcotts v.  
Catherick,  
Cro. Ja. 615.  
1 Atk. 442.

19. Sir Joseph Jekyll has also said that a woman is not entitled to dower out of an instantaneous seisin. The cognizee of a fine is not so seised as to give his wife a title to dower; nor in the case of a use, has the widow of a trustee any claim to dower, from such a momentary seisin in her husband.

Seisin of  
Gavelkind  
Lands.

20. Lambard, in his perambulation of Kent, has advanced an opinion that a seisin in law is not sufficient to entitle a woman to dower of gavelkind lands; because the words of the custom are: "*De tenements dont son baron mourust vestu et seisi*;" which only extends to lands whereof the husband was

actually seised: and customs derogatory to the common law ought to receive a strict construction.

21. Mr. Robinson has controverted this opinion, and observed, that whatever may be the strict literal sense of the word *vestu*, it can scarce be sufficient to add so unreasonable a qualification to the custom, as that the neglect of the husband in gaining an actual seisin, by entry, shall prejudice his wife; without a strong usage accordingly.

Gavelkind.  
117.

22. The last circumstance required to the existence of an estate in dower, is the death of the husband; by which the wife's estate is consummate. But it is said that nothing but the natural death of the husband will give a title to dower. Though there are some authorities to prove that banishment by abjuration, or by parliament, which is a civil death, will have the same effect.

3<sup>o</sup> Death of  
the Husband.

1 Inst. 33 b.  
Id. 132 b.  
Jenk. Cent. 1.  
Ca. 4.

23. With respect to the persons capable of being endowed, all women who are natural-born subjects, and have attained the age of nine years, are, by the common law, entitled to dower; although their husbands should be but four years old. Lord Coke says, if a man marries a woman who is only seven years old, and afterwards aliens his land, and the wife attains the age of nine years, and then the husband dies; she shall be endowed. For though she was not absolutely dowable at the time of her marriage, yet she was conditionally dowable, if she attained the age of nine years, before the death of her husband.

Who may be  
endowed.

1 Inst. 33 a.

24. Notwithstanding the favour which the common law shews in general to widows, yet there are some cases in which women are disabled from having dower.

Who are in-  
capable of  
Dower.

Aliens.

Tit. 5. c. 1.  
§ 28.

Jenk. Cent. 1.  
Ca. 2.

25. Alien women are not generally capable of acquiring dower, for the same reason that an alien man cannot be tenant by the curtesy. But by the *Lex Coronæ*, an alien queen is entitled to dower. And in consequence of a petition from the Commons, an act of Parliament was made in 8 Henry V. not printed among the statutes, by which all alien women who from thenceforth should be married to English men, by licence from the King, are enabled to have dower, after their husband's death ; in the same manner as English women.

Rot. Parl.  
Vol. 4. 128.  
Id. 130.

1 Inst. 31 b.  
33 a.  
13 Rep. 23.

26. If an alien woman be naturalized by act of parliament, she then becomes entitled to dower, out of all the lands whereof her husband was seised during the coverture. Where an alien woman is created a denizen, she becomes entitled to dower, out of all the lands whereof her husband was seised at the time when she was created a denizen ; but not out of any lands whereof he was seised before, and which he had aliened.

Jewesses.

1 Inst. 31 b.

27. If a Jew born in England marries a Jewess also born in England, and the husband is converted to the Christian faith, and purchases lands, his wife shall not be endowed, if she continues a Jewess.

Women  
stolen.

28. By the statute 6 Richard II. st. 1. c. 6. it is enacted, that whenever any woman is ravished, that is stolen ; and afterwards consents to live with such ravisher ; she shall be *ipso facto* disabled from having dower.

## TITLE VI.

## DOWER.

## CHAP. III.

*Of what Things Dower may be had ; and Nature of this Estate.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Estates in Fee Simple.</i><br>4. <i>Estates Tail.</i><br>7. <i>Qualified or base Fees.</i><br>9. <i>Estates in Coparcenary or in Common.</i><br>10. <i>Reversions after Estates for Years.</i><br>12. <i>Equities of Redemption of some Kinds.</i><br>13. <i>Incorporeal Hereditaments.</i><br>14. <i>Where a Widow has an Election.</i><br>15. <i>What Things are not liable to Dower.</i><br>16. <i>Estates in Joint-tenancy.</i> | 17. <i>Estates not of Inheritance.</i><br>18. <i>Wrongful Estates.</i><br>20. <i>Lands assigned for Dower.</i><br>24. <i>A Castle.</i><br>25. <i>Uses and Trusts.</i><br>26. <i>Mortgages.</i><br>27. <i>Where Dower and Curtesy cease with the Estate.</i><br>28. <i>Nature of this Estate.</i><br>30. <i>The Dowress entitled to Emblements.</i><br>31. <i>Restrained from Alienation.</i><br>33. <i>And from Waste.</i><br>35. <i>Not subject to her Husband's Incumbrances.</i> |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**A** Woman is entitled to dower out of all the lands whereof her husband was seised in fee simple, at any time during the coverture ; and also of all the profits arising out of such lands ; as mines, minerals, &c. In a modern case, the Court of Common Pleas certified to the Court of Chancery, that dower was due of mines of coal and lead wrought during the coverture, whether by the husband, or by lessees for years, paying pecuniary rents, or rents in kind, and whether the mines were under the husband's own land, or had been absolutely granted to him, to take

*Estates in Fee Simple.*

*Stoughton v. Leigh, 1 Taunt. 402.*

the whole *stratum* in the land of others. But the dower was not due of mines or *strata* unopened whether under the husband's land, or the soil of others.

1 Inst. 32 a. 2. A woman is dowable of the profits of a mill, park, a dove-house, or fishery; so of the profits of courts, fines, and heriots.

Buckeridge v. Ingram. 1 Ves. Jun. 652. 3. A woman is entitled to dower out of share in the navigation of the river Avon.

Estates Tail. 4. A woman is also entitled to dower out of estates whereof her husband is seised in tail general or special, if her issue be capable of inheriting there. And dower is an incident so inseparably annexed to an estate tail, that it cannot be restrained by any proviso or condition whatever.

Idem 31 b. 5. Although the estate tail should determine at the death of the husband without issue capable of inheriting it, yet the wife shall be endowed; because dower is a condition *tacite* annexed to the gift of every estate tail.

Blithman's Case, Cro. Eliz. 280. 6. If a tenant in tail covenants to stand seised to the use of himself for life, remainder to the use of his eldest son in tail; and afterwards marries and dies, his widow shall be endowed. Because when a tenant in tail limits an estate for his own life, he has executed all the power that he had; and the remainder is merely void; so that he continues tenant in tail as before.

Qualified or base Fees. Tit. 1. § 75. 7. A woman is dowable of a qualified fee, as long as it continues; therefore in the case of a limitation to A. and his heirs, tenants of the manor of Dale, the widow of A. would be entitled to dower.

Plowd. 557. 8. It is the same of a base fee. So that if a tenant in tail conveys his estate by fine to A. and his heirs, by which he acquires an estate to him and his heirs,

as long as the tenant in tail has heirs of his body, the wife of A. will be entitled to dower against her husband's heirs.

9. Widows are dowable of estates held in coparcenary, or in common, of which an account will be given under those titles.

Estates in Coparcenary or in Common.

10. It has been stated that a woman is not entitled to dower out of an estate in remainder or reversion, expectant on an estate of freehold; because the husband has no seisin. But a woman is dowable of a reversion expectant on a term for years; because the husband is seised of the freehold.

Reversions after Estates for Years. ante, c. 2. § 15.

11. Thus if a man before his marriage makes a lease for years, reserving rent, his wife will be entitled to a third of the land for her dower; and also to a third of the rent, as incident to the reversion. If no rent be reserved on the lease, then, although the widow may recover a third of the reversion, yet the judgement will be with a *cessat executio* during the term. In some cases a court of equity will assist the dowress in removing the term; and in others not: of which an account will be given in a subsequent title.

1 Inst. 32 a.

Tit. 12. c. 3.

12. Where lands are mortgaged for a term of years only, a woman will be entitled to dower out of the equity of redemption. But if lands are mortgaged in fee, the wife will not be entitled to dower.

Equities of Redemption of some Kinds. Vide Tit. 15. c. 3.

13. A widow is dowable of several incorporeal hereditaments; such as advowsons, tithes, commons, offices, franchises, and rents; as will be shewn under those respective titles.

Incorporeal Hereditaments.

14. There are some cases where a widow has a right of election, as to the property out of which she is dowable. Thus if the husband exchanges his lands for others, his widow shall have her election to

Where a Widow has an Election. 1 Inst. 31 b.

be endowed, either of the lands given, or of those taken, in exchange ; because her husband was seised of both during the coverture.

There are some other cases where the widow has a right of election, which will be stated hereafter.

What Things  
are not liable  
to Dower.

15. Having enumerated the different kinds of property which are liable to dower, I shall now examine what things are not subject to this claim.

Estates  
in Joint-  
tenancy.  
Tit. 18.

16. Estates held with others in joint-tenancy are not subject to dower, the reason of which will be given in that title.

Estates not  
of Inheri-  
tance.

17. An estate in dower is a continuation of the husband's estate, and is therefore only incident to estates of inheritance, not to estates which the husband has for life. It is not only necessary that the husband should have an estate of inheritance, to entitle his wife to dower ; but the estate must be *simul et semel* in him.

Bates v.  
Bates,  
Tit. 32. c. 23.  
Hooker v.  
Hooker,  
Tit. 16. c. 6.  
Wrongful  
Estates.  
1 Inst. 31 b.  
Fitz. N. B.  
149.

18. A widow is not dowable of a wrongful estate. So that if a tenant in tail discontinues in fee, afterwards marries, disseises the discontinuee, and dies seised ; his wife shall not have dower ; because the issue is remitted to the antient entail, and the estate which the husband had during the coverture was wrongful.

Tit. 29. c. 1.

Idem.

19. So where a man having title to lands, enters and disseises the tenant, and dies seised, and his heir enters ; by which he is remitted to the antient right ; the widow of the disseisor is not entitled to dower, because her husband's estate was wrongful.

Lands as-  
signed for  
Dower.  
1 Inst. 31 a.  
4 Rep. 122 a.

20. A widow is not dowable of lands assigned to another woman in dower. Thus, if the ancestor of a married man dies, and he endows the widow of such ancestor of one-third of the lands which descended to him, and dies ; his widow will only be entitled to



a third of the remaining two-thirds. For it is a maxim of law, that *dos de dote peti non debet*, this rule is to be found in Glanville; the reason is, that when the heir endows the widow of the ancestor, the assignment defeats the seisin which the heir acquired by the descent of the lands to him; so that the widow is in possession of the estate of her husband; and the heir is considered as never having been seised of that part. Lib. 6. c. 17. infra, c. 4.

21. In the same manner, if a woman on whom lands descend, endows her mother, afterwards marries, has issue, and dies in the life-time of her mother; her husband will not be entitled to an estate by the curtesy in those lands, whereof the mother was endowed; because the daughter's seisin was defeated by the endowment. Bro. Ab. Curtesy, 10.

22. The rule of *dos de dote* is only applied where dower is actually assigned; if no dower be assigned, it does not take place.

23. Lands subject to a title to dower, were devised to a person in fee; he died, leaving a widow, who sued for dower, and recovered a third part of the whole; without any regard to the title of dower in the widow of the testator; who had not made any claim to it. The Court held, that as the testator's widow had not recovered dower, it was to be laid out of the case: so that the dower of the devisee's widow, was not to be looked upon as *dos de dote*. Hilchins v. Hilchins, 2 Vern. 403.

24. It appears from *Magna Charta*, that a widow was not dowable of a castle or fortress; nor even of a capital messuage, where it was *caput comitatus*, or *baronia*. This doctrine must however be understood to be applicable to baronies by tenure only; therefore the circumstance of a person's being created a baron by letters patent, by a title taken from a principal mansion-house in his possession, will not make A Castle. 2 Inst. 16. 1 — 31 b. Gerrard v. Gerrard, 1 Tit. 26.

that house *caput baroniæ* ; so as to exclude the widow from claiming dower out of it.

Uses and  
Trusts.

25. A widow was never allowed dower of a use, nor is she now entitled to dower out of a trust estate ; of which the reasons will be given hereafter.

Tit. 11 & 12.

Mortgages.

26. A widow is not entitled to dower out of an estate conveyed to her husband by way of mortgage, of which an account will be given in that title.

Where  
Dower and  
Curtesy cease  
with the  
Estate.

27. It has been stated, that in the case of an estate tail, the dower of the wife, and the curtesy of the husband, continue after the estate is determined.

But there are several other cases where dower and curtesy cease upon the determination of the estate.

Lit. § 393.

ante, § 18,  
19.

1. Where the fee is evicted by a title paramount, both dower and curtesy necessarily cease. 2. Where the seisin of the husband is wrongful, and the heir is remitted, by which the wrongful estate is determined ;

Tit. 13. c. 2.

the right to dower ceases. 3. Where the donor enters for a breach of a condition, the right to dower and cur-

10 Rep. 97 b.

tesy are defeated. 4. Where a person has a qualified or base fee, the right to dower and curtesy ceases

Buckworth  
v. Thirkell,  
Tit. 38. c. 17.

when the estate is determined. 5. Where an estate in fee is made determinable upon some particular event, if that event happens, dower and curtesy cease with the estate.

Nature of  
this Estate.

28. The interest which widows acquired by way of dower, was seldom greater than for their own lives ; unless it was otherwise stipulated at the time of the marriage. And in England dower does not appear to have ever consisted of more than an estate for life.

29. Before the abolition of military tenures, the dowress was attendant on the heir, or whoever else was entitled to the reversion, for the third part of the services ; and still she holds of the heir by fealty.

The assignment of dower by the heir being a species of subinfeudation, not prohibited by the statute *quia emptores*; because the heir does not depart with the fee. Gilb. Uses, 357.

30. At common law a dowress could not devise corn which she had sown, nor did it go to her personal representatives; but became the property of the reversioner. Because the widow being entitled to an immediate assignment of dower, after the death of her husband, if the lands happened to be sown at that time, she had the benefit of it, which made her case different from that of other tenants for life, who are seldom put into possession of lands that are sown. It was however provided by the statute of Merton 20 Henry III. c. 2. that a dowress might dispose, by will, of the growing corn; otherwise that it should go to her executors. The Dowress entitled to Emblements. 2 Inst. 80.

31. Tenants in dower were under the same restraints respecting alienation as other tenants for life. But where a dowress aliened by feoffment, and the feoffee died seised, whereby the entry of the person in reversion was taken away, he could have no writ of entry *ad communem legem*, until after the decease of the tenant in dower; and then the warranty, which at that time was usually inserted in all deeds, barred the reversioner, if he was heir to the dowress; to remedy this, the statute of Gloucester 6 Edward I. c. 7. provided, that upon the alienation in fee, or for life, of a tenant in dower, she shall forfeit her estate; and the heir shall have a writ of entry *in casu proviso*, in the lifetime of the dowress. Restrained from Alienation. 2 Inst. 309.

32. By the statutes 11 Henry VII. c. 20. and 32 Henry VIII. c. 36. it is declared that no feoffment, fine, recovery or warranty, by tenant in dower, shall create a discontinuance of the inheritance, or take Tit. 36. c. 10.

away the entry of the heir, or person in reversion: but that all such acts shall operate as a forfeiture of her estate.

And from  
Waste.  
1 Inst. 57 a.  
s. 1.

33. Tenants in dower are not entitled to commit any kind of waste. It is somewhat doubtful whether they are within the statute 6 Ann. c. 31. respecting accidental fire.

ante, § 1.

34. It was lately held by the Court of Common Pleas, that if land assigned for dower contain an open mine of coal or lead, the dowress may work it for her own benefit.

Not subject  
to her Hus-  
band's In-  
cumbrances.  
1 Inst. 46 a.  
4 Rep. 65 a.

35. The widow holds her dower discharged from all incumbrances created by her husband, after the marriage, because upon the husband's death, the title of the wife being consummate, has relation back to the time of the marriage; and to the seisin which her husband then had; both of which precede such incumbrances.

1 Inst. 31 a.  
Vide Fitz.  
N. B. 150.

36. Dower is even protected from distress for a debt contracted by the husband to the crown, during the marriage.

## TITLE VI.

## DOWER.

## CHAP. IV.

*Assignment of Dower, and modes of recovering it.*

- |                                                     |                                              |
|-----------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Necessity of an Assignment.</i>               | 24. <i>Effect of an Assignment of Dower.</i> |
| 3. <i>Who may assign Dower.</i>                     | 27. <i>Actions for recovering Dower.</i>     |
| 7. <i>How it is to be assigned.</i>                 | 28. <i>May be obtained in Equity.</i>        |
| 20. <i>Remedies against an improper Assignment.</i> |                                              |

## SECTION I.

**U**PON the death of the husband, the right to dower, which the wife acquired by her marriage, becomes consummate: but unless the precise portion of land which she is to have is particularly specified, as used to be the case in dower *ad ostium ecclesiae*, she cannot enter, till dower is assigned to her. For she might, in that case, choose whatever part of the lands she pleased; which would be injurious to the heir. The widow has therefore no estate in the lands of her husband till assignment, for the law casts the freehold on the heir immediately upon the death of the ancestor.

Necessity of  
an Assign-  
ment.

Gilb. Ten.  
26.

2. A widow could not formerly obtain an assignment of her dower without paying a fine to the lord; nor could she marry a second husband without his licence. It was even usual for lords to force widows to marry, merely for the purpose of obtaining a fine. It was therefore provided by the charter of Henry I. and also by *Magna Charta*, that widows should not

2 Comm. 135.  
2 Inst. 16.

be forced to marry; or be obliged to pay a fine for the assignment of their dower.

Who may  
assign  
Dower.  
Gill. Uses,  
356.

3. With respect to the persons whose duty it was to assign dower, the heir in common cases, as lord of the manor, and who was to create the tenure, assigned dower. If there was any dispute, as to the quantity of land assigned, it was determined by the *pares curiæ*, in the court baron. But the suit might be removed to the county court, and also to the king's court.

1 Inst. 35 a.  
357 b.

4. No person can regularly assign dower who has not a freehold estate in the land. But where a disseisor, abator, or intruder assigns dower, it is good, and cannot be avoided; unless they are in of such estates by fraud and covin of the widow, to the intent that she may be endowed by them, or recover dower against them; in that case the assignment may be avoided by the entry of the real owner.

Idem.

5. The reason why such an assignment of dower shall be good is, because the widow having a right to dower, she might have compelled them as terre-tenants to assign dower to her; and was not obliged to wait till the heir thought proper to re-enter, or sue for the recovery of his right.

1 Inst. 34 b.

6. Where the heir, or other tenant of the land, refuses to assign dower, and the widow is compelled to resort to the courts of law to obtain it, the assignment is made by the sheriff.

How it is to  
be assigned.

1 Inst. 32 b.

7. With respect to the manner in which dower ought to be assigned, the rule is, that where the property assigned is capable of being severed, it must be by metes and bounds; if the sheriff does not return seisin by metes and bounds, it is ill. Where no division can be made, the widow must be endowed in a special and certain manner. As of a mill, a woman cannot

be endowed by metes and bounds; nor in common with the heir. But either she may be endowed of the third toll dish; or of the entire mill; for a certain time.

8. It was held by the Court of Common Pleas, in the case of *Stoughton v. Leigh*, that dower may be assigned of mines, either collectively with other lands, or separately of themselves; that it should be assigned by metes and bounds if practicable; otherwise either by a proportion of the profits, or separate alternate enjoyment of the whole, for short proportionate periods. ante, c. 3.  
§ 1.

9. Dower was assigned by metes and bounds, because it was a tenancy of the heir, and like all other lands in tenure, ought to be separated from the demesnes of the manor. And the reason why the law created this tenure was, that the heir might be obliged to do the service for it, during the time of its continuance; as he was obliged to do for all lands which he had given out in tenure, as well as for those which he held in demesne. Gilb. Uses,  
356.

10. The right to have an assignment of dower by metes and bounds, may be waived by the widow; and in that case an assignment in common will be good. Coots v.  
Lambert,  
1 Roll. Ab.  
682.  
Roe v.  
Power,  
2 Bos & Pul:  
1 Inst. 32 b.

11. An assignment by metes and bounds can only take place where the husband is seised in severalty, for where he is seised in common with others, his widow cannot be endowed by metes and bounds; for she being in *pro tanto* of her husband's estate, must take it in the manner in which he held it.

12. Where dower is assigned by the sheriff, he is obliged to assign a third part of each manor; or a third part of the arable, the meadow, and the pasture. But where dower is assigned by the heir, he may 1 Roll. Ab.  
683, 4.

assign one manor in lieu of a third of three manors; which will be good, if accepted by the widow. And this is called an assignment against common right.

1 Inst. 32 b.  
n. 2.

13. Lord Coke says an endowment by metes and bounds, according to common right, is more beneficial to the widow than to be endowed against common right: for there she shall hold the land charged, in respect of a charge made after her title to dower.

Turney v.  
Sturges,  
Dyer 91.

14. The assignment of dower must be of part of the lands whereof the widow is dowable; for an assignment of lands whereof she is not dowable, or of a rent issuing out of such lands, is no bar of dower; because a right or title to a freehold estate cannot be barred by a collateral satisfaction.

4 Rep. 1 a.

1 Roll. Ab.  
683.

15. A rent issuing out of the land, whereof a woman is dowable, may be assigned for dower. And if a tenant in tail assigns a rent out of the land entailed for dower, not exceeding the yearly value of such dower, it will bind the issue in tail.

Brickley v.  
Brickley,  
And. 287.

Wheatley  
v. Best,  
Cro. Eliz.  
564.

16. Where the lands have been leased for years, before the marriage, the assignment of dower is made, with a proviso that the tenant for years shall not be disturbed.

1 Inst. 34 b.  
Wentworth  
v. Went-  
worth, Cro.  
Eliz. 450.

17. The assignment of dower must be absolute, and not subject to be defeated by any condition, nor lessened by any exception or reservation. For the widow comes to her dower in the *per*, by her husband; and is *in*, in continuation of his estate, which the heir or terretenant is but a minister, or officer of the law, to carve out to her; therefore such conditions or reservations are totally void, and her estate discharged from them. Or else the estate assigned with such conditions is no bar to her recovery of dower in an action.



18. Dower may be, and was usually assigned by the heir, by a parol declaration that the widow shall have such particular lands for her dower; or else that she shall have a third part of all the lands whereof her husband died seised. 1 Inst. 35 a.  
Booth v.  
Lambert,  
Sty. 276.

19. In some cases a woman shall have a new assignment of dower. As where she is evicted out of the lands assigned to her, she shall be endowed of a third of the remainder. 4 Rep. 122 a.

20. Where the sheriff makes an improper assignment of dower, it will be set aside by the Court of Common Pleas, or the Court of Chancery; and he will be punished. Remedies  
against an  
improper  
Assignment.

21. Thus where the sheriff returned that he had assigned to the demandant, for her dower of a house, the third part of each chamber; and had chalked it out for her. This was held an idle and malicious assignment, and the sheriff was committed for it; as he ought to have assigned to her certain chambers or rooms. Abingdon's  
Case, cited  
Palm. 264.

22. In another case the sheriff was committed for refusing to make an equal allotment of dower: and for taking sixty pounds to execute the writ. An information was also ordered against him. Longvill's  
Case, 1 Keb,  
743.

23. A bill was brought by the heir to be relieved against a fraudulent assignment of dower by the sheriff; because a third part of the lands was assigned, without taking notice of a coal work that was on the estate. The plaintiff offering the defendant one entire third, both of land and coal work, by way of rent-charge on the whole. The Court ordered that she should accept thereof; or that otherwise a new assignment of dower should be made. Hoby v.  
Hoby,  
1 Vern. 218.

24. The widow acquires an estate of freehold by the assignment, without livery of seisin; because Effect of an  
Assignment  
of Dower.

1 Inst. 35 a. dower is due of common right ; and the assignment is an act of equal notoriety.

Lit. § 393.  
Gilb. Uses,  
356—395.

25. As soon as dower is assigned, the widow holds by the institution of the law, and is in of the estate of her husband. So that after assignment, she is considered as holding by an infeudation immediately from the death of her husband ; therefore the heir is not considered as having ever been seised of that part of his ancestor's estate, whereof the widow is endowed.

ante, c. 3.  
§ 20.

1 Inst. 38 b. 26. Where dower is assigned, there is a warranty in law implied, that if the tenant in dower is impleaded, she shall vouch the heir ; and if evicted, shall recover in value a third of the remainder.

Actions for  
recovering  
Dower.

Gilb. Uses,  
374—367.

27. Where the heir or terretenant refuses to assign dower to the widow, the law has provided her with several remedies for recovering it. The first of these is the writ of dower, *unde nihil habet*, which lies where no dower has been assigned : if any part of dower has been assigned, the widow cannot say, *unde nihil habet*, and therefore she must have recourse to the writ of right of dower ; which is a more general remedy, extending either to a part, or to the whole.

May be ob-  
tained in  
Equity.  
Tothill 82.  
Treat. of Eq.  
B. 1. c. 1. § 3.

28. Where a woman was disabled from suing for her dower at law, she was always relieved in equity. And now it is settled that widows labour under so many disadvantages at law, from the embarrassment of trust terms, &c. that they are fully entitled to every assistance which a court of equity can give them, not only in paving the way to establish their right at law ; but also by giving them complete relief, when the right is ascertained.

Shute v.  
Shute, ante,  
c. 2. § 7.

Hamilton v.  
Mohun,  
1 P. Wms.  
118.

29. Where a mother was guardian to her child, and received the rents of the estate of which she was dowable, but dower was never assigned to her ; the

Court of Chancery held that the want of a formal assignment of dower was nothing in equity, for still the right in conscience was the same. And if the heir brought a bill against the mother, for an account of the profits, it was just that a court of equity should, in the account, allow a third of the profits for the right of dower.

## TITLE VI.

## DOWER.

## CHAP. V.

*What will operate as a Bar or Satisfaction to Dower,*

- |                                        |                                                                     |
|----------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 2. <i>Attainder of the Husband.</i>    | 21. <i>A Devise is no Bar of Dower.</i>                             |
| 6. <i>Attainder of the Wife.</i>       | 26. <i>Unless so expressed, and then the Widow has an Election.</i> |
| 7. <i>Elopement with an Adulterer.</i> | 31. <i>Sometimes held a Satisfaction.</i>                           |
| 16. <i>Detinue of Charters.</i>        | 34. <i>A Bequest of Personal Estate is no Bar to Dower.</i>         |
| 18. <i>Fine or Recovery.</i>           |                                                                     |
| 19. <i>Bargain and Sale in London.</i> |                                                                     |
| 20. <i>Jointure.</i>                   |                                                                     |

## SECTION 1.

**T**HE right to dower attaches at the instant of the marriage ; nor can it be defeated by the alienation of the husband alone. Still the wife may be barred from claiming dower by several acts subsequent to the marriage.

Attainder of  
the Husband.  
1 Inst. 41 a.

2. Formerly, if a man was attainted of treason or felony, his wife was thereby barred, not only of her dower at common law, but also of her dower *ad ostium ecclesiæ, ex assensu patris*, and customary dower: except where the lands were held in gavel-kind.

Rob. Gav.  
230.

3. By the statute 1 Edward VI. c. 12. the rigour of the common law was abated in this respect, it being thereby enacted that in all cases where the husband was attainted of treason or felony, his wife should have dower. But a subsequent statute, 5 & 6 Edward VI. c. 11. revived this severity against the widows of traitors, who are now barred of dower. And the

1 Inst. 392 b.

words of the act being general, exclude the wife, as well in cases of petit, as of high treason.

4. In cases of misprision of treason, or attainder of felony only, the statute 1 Edward VI. is still in force; therefore the widows of such persons are entitled to dower. And where offences have been made felony by modern acts of parliament, the wife's dower is in general expressly saved.

5. It was resolved in 3 & 4 Philip & Mary, that the widow of a man who was attainted of treason, should not be endowed of lands which he had aliened before the treason; though they were not forfeited.

Gate v.  
Wiseman,  
Dyer, 140.  
1 Inst. 41 a,  
n. 3.

6. If a woman be attainted of treason or felony, she will thereby lose her dower; but if pardoned she may then demand it, though her husband should have aliened in the mean time. For when this impediment is once removed, her capacity to be endowed is restored.

Attainder of  
the Wife.  
1 Inst. 33 a.  
13 Rep. 23.

7. It has been stated that a divorce on account of adultery is not a bar to dower. But by the statute Westminster 2. c. 34. it is enacted, that if a wife willingly leaves her husband, and continues with an adulterer, she shall be barred of her action to demand dower, if she be convicted thereupon; except her husband willingly, and without coercion of the church, reconcile her, and suffer her to dwell with him; in which case she shall be restored to her action.

Elopement  
with an  
Adulterer.  
2 Inst. 433

8. Lord Coke, in his comment on this statute, observes on the words *si sponte reliquerit virum suum, et abierit, et moretur cum adultero*; that although the words of this branch be in the conjunctive, yet if the woman be taken away, not *sponte*, but against her will, and after consent, and remain with the adulterer, without being reconciled; she shall lose her dower. For the cause of the bar of her dower is not

2 Inst. 435.

the manner of her going away, but the remaining with the adulterer, without reconciliation.

Idem, 436.

9. He also observes upon the words *moretur cum adultero*, that although she does not continually remain with the adulterer, yet if she be with him, and commits adultery, it is a tarrying within the statute. Also if she once remains with the adulterer, and after he keeps her against her will ; or if the adulterer turns her away, yet she shall be said *morari cum adultero*, within the act.

Idem.

10. He further observes, that if a woman who has eloped from her husband with an adulterer, is afterwards reconciled, and cohabits with her husband, by coercion of the church, yet she will be barred of her dower.

2 Inst. 435.

11. If a woman goes away with another man, with her husband's consent, and afterwards that man commits adultery with her, and she remains with him, without being reconciled to her husband, she shall be barred of her dower.

Vol. 1. 146.

12. There is a curious case in the rolls of parliament 30 Edward I. where a man by deed granted his wife to another, with whom she eloped and lived in adultery.

2 Inst. 436.

It was determined, 1. that it was a void grant: 2. that it did not amount to a licence ; or at least was a void licence: 3. that after elopement there should not be any averment *quod non fuit adulterium*; though she married the adulterer after her first husband's death: therefore that she was barred of dower. A sentence of purgation of adultery in the ecclesiastical court was also produced, but it was not allowed to have any effect.

Coot v.

Berty,

12 Mod. 232.

S. P.

Green v.

Harvey,

1 Roll. Ab.

680.

13. Where the friends of the husband removed him from his wife, published that he was dead, and persuaded the wife to marry another man, though

the wife lived in adultery, yet inasmuch as, *non reliquit virum sponte*, it was held that she did not forfeit her dower.

14. With respect to the circumstances necessary 2 Inst. 436. to prove a voluntary reconciliation by the husband, Lord Coke says cohabitation is not sufficient, without reconciliation made by the husband, *sponte*: so that cohabitation only in the same house with the husband will not avail. But in the following case, cohabitation as man and wife appears to have been held a sufficient proof of reconciliation.

15. Reconciliation being pleaded, evidence was given that the husband and wife had, after the elopement, slept together several nights, and in divers places, and demeaned themselves as man and wife. It was objected that they never lived together in one house, but were apart; and the wife continued in adultery, with one or more, during the life of the husband, *sed non allocatur*; for there might have been 2 Inst. 436. divers elopements, and divers reconciliations: and the defendant ought to take issue on one, at his peril.

16. If in a writ of dower, the tenant pleads that the demandant detains the charters of the estate, and she denies the fact, which is found against her, she shall lose her dower. But, 1. the charters ought to relate to the land whereof dower is demanded. 2. He who pleads this plea ought to shew the certainty of the charters; whereupon a certain issue may be joined: as that they are in a chest or box, locked or sealed, which imports sufficient certainty. 3. No stranger, though he be tenant to the land, and has the evidences conveyed to him, can plead detinue of charters. Detinue of Charters. Bedingfield's Case, 9 Rep. 15. Dyer 250 a. Hob. 199.

17. In several cases the heir is in the degree of a stranger, and therefore shall not plead detinue of Idem.

charters. 1. If the heir has the land by purchase. 2. If he has delivered the charters to the widow; for then she has them by his own act. 3. If the heir be not immediately vouched. 4. If he comes in as vouchee. 5. If he comes in as tenant by receipt. The reason is manifest, if the true form of pleading in that case be observed: for he who pleads detinue of charters, in bar of dower, ought to plead that he has been always ready, and yet is, to render dower, if the demandant would deliver to him his charters.

Burdon v.  
Burdon,  
1 Salk. 252.  
Fine or  
Recovery.

18. If a woman joins with her husband in levying a fine, or suffering a common recovery, of lands whereof she is dowable, she will thereby effectually bar herself from claiming dower out of those lands. The principles upon which this doctrine is founded, will be explained hereafter.

Tit. 35, 36.

Bargain and  
Sale in  
London.  
Bohun  
Priv. Lond.

19. By the custom of London, a married woman may bar herself of dower, by a deed of bargain and sale, acknowledged before the lord mayor, or the recorder, and one alderman; and enrolled in the court of hustings. The wife being examined separately from her husband, as to her consent.

Jointure.

20. The most usual mode of barring dower, in modern times, is by means of a jointure settled on the wife before marriage: of which an account will be given in the next title.

A Devise is  
no Bar of  
Dower.  
1 Inst. 36 b.  
4 Rep. 4 a.

21. Every devise or bequest in a will imports a bounty, therefore cannot in general be averred to be given as a satisfaction for that to which the devisee is by law entitled. In consequence of this principle a devise cannot be averred, even in equity, to be in satisfaction of dower; unless it be so expressed in the will. 1. Because a devise implies a consideration in itself; and cannot be averred to be for the use of any other person than the devisee, unless it is so

Tit. 38. c. 1.



expressed in the will: no more can a devise be averred to be for satisfaction of dower; unless it is so expressed. 2. As all wills of land must be in writing, no averment respecting the intention of the testator is admissible, which cannot be collected from the words of the will itself. Idem, c. 9.

22. A person being indebted, devised part of his lands to his wife, but did not mention it to be in bar of dower; and devised the residue to his executors, till his debts were paid. The wife brought a writ of dower, and recovered her dower. The heir filed a bill in Chancery against her, to be relieved; the court said the devise was not to be looked upon as a recompence or bar of dower; but as a voluntary gift. Hitchin v. Hitchin, Prec. in Cha. 133.

23. If a husband devises lands to his wife during her widowhood only; or restrains the devise in any other manner, so as to render it less beneficial than dower, a court of equity will not interfere; but the wife will be allowed to take both the thing devised, and also her dower.

24. W. Lawrence devised lands of the annual value of 130*l.* to his wife during her widowhood; after the determination of that estate he devised the same premises, together with all his other lands, to trustees for a term of 24 years, in trust for the payment of his debts and legacies; as a farther provision for his wife, he directed that after two years of the term were expired, his trustees should permit her to receive the rents and profits of another farm of 90*l. per annum*, for the remainder of the said term of 24 years, so long as she should continue a widow. The widow entered upon the lands devised to her, and afterwards brought a writ of dower, to which was pleaded the devise, with an averment that the same was in satisfaction of Lawrence v. Lawrence, 1 Ld. Raym. 438. 2 Freem. 234.

her dower. Upon demurrer to this plea, judgment was given for the demandant.

2 Vern. 365.  
1 Ab. Eq.  
218.

A bill was then exhibited in Chancery, to be relieved from this judgment: Lord Somers decreed a perpetual injunction against the widow, to stay her further proceeding upon the judgment in dower.

The cause was reheard by Lord Keeper Wright, who ordered a case to be stated. 1. Whether the defendant was barred of her dower by the devise in the will, or not. 2. If she was not barred of her dower, by such devise, whether the plaintiff ought to be relieved in that court. A case was accordingly stated, and in 1702 the cause came on, upon the case so stated; when his lordship declared that he had fully considered of the matter, but conceived there was nothing in the testator's will that did intend that the defendant should be barred of her dower: in case any such thing did appear by the will, the same would only be a bar at law, not in that court, and as the matter had been already determined at law, he reversed so much of the former decree as awarded a perpetual injunction against the defendant's proceeding at law upon her judgment in dower.

The cause was brought on again by a remainderman before Lord Cowper in 1715, who declared, as to the question of dower, that it being a point of right, and so doubtful in its nature, that the court had been of different opinions about it; and the determination in 1702 having remained so long unquestioned; he did not think fit to make any variation from what was then determined.

3 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 483.

On an appeal from this decree to the House of Lords, it was contended for the appellant, that it would be against the rules of natural equity and justice, if the respondent should be permitted to

enjoy the estates devised to her by her husband's will, and at the same time disappoint his intention, by insisting on her dower; for which the lands devised were far more than an equivalent. On the other side it was said to be no where expressed, nor to be collected from the words of the will, that the lands devised to the respondent, were for her jointure, or in bar of her dower; neither could it be so averred at law, or in a court of equity; she having no estate for life, but for her widowhood only. The decree was affirmed.

25. A person devised lands to his wife for life, and devised other lands to his brother and his heirs. The wife entered into the lands devised to her, which were of more value than her dower; she afterwards claimed dower of the rest, and had judgement. The brother brought his bill in Chancery to be relieved. The case of Lawrence and Lawrence was cited for the defendant, to prove that the wife should have dower, notwithstanding a devise to her for life of lands by her husband; unless declared to be in lieu and satisfaction of dower. Lord Parker said that this point had been determined in the House of Lords; and dismissed the bill.

Lemon v. Lemon,  
8 Vin. Ab.  
366.

Inclendon v. Northcote,  
3 Atk. 430.

26. If it be expressed in a will that the devise is made in lieu and satisfaction of dower; or on condition that the wife shall not claim dower; then the wife cannot have both; for that would be repugnant to the intention of the testator. The wife must therefore in such a case make her election.

Unless so expressed, and then the Widow has an Election.  
Leake v. Randall,  
4 Rep. 4 a.

27. A man devised a third part of his lands to his wife, in recompence of her dower. The wife entered on the lands devised to her; it was resolved that she was thereby barred of dower.

Bush's Case,  
Dyer 220.

Gosling v.  
Warburton,  
Cro. Eliz.  
128.

28. A person devised his lands to his wife till P. his daughter attained the age of nineteen, afterwards to P. in tail, remainder over in fee. He devised further, that P. should pay, after her age of nineteen, 12*l.* *per annum* to his wife in recompence of her dower; if she failed of payment, that his wife should have the land for her life. The wife, before P. attained nineteen, brought a writ of dower, and recovered a third part; after P. attained nineteen, the wife entered for non-payment of the 12*l.* The question was, whether her entry was lawful.

It was adjudged, that the wife having recovered a third part in dower, she should not have the rent; as it was against the intention of the testator that she should have both; that the acceptance of one, was a waiver of the other.

Upon a writ of error this judgement was affirmed.

Lesquire v.  
Lesquire,  
Finch 134.

29. A man devised his personal estate to trustees, in trust that his widow should receive thereout 100*l.* a year during her life, in lieu and discharge of her dower. The wife received this annuity for many years, then brought a writ of dower. Decreed, that the wife was barred of dower, as long as the personal estate was sufficient.

Tit. 38. c. 2.

30. With respect to the acts which will amount to an election, and the time within which they must take place, they will be stated hereafter.

Sometimes  
held a Satis-  
faction.

31. Notwithstanding the doctrine established in the case of Lawrence v. Lawrence, and the frequent recognition of it, devises have been sometimes deemed a satisfaction, in equity, for dower, on account of strong and special circumstances; as where allowing the widow to take a double provision would have been quite inconsistent with the dispositions of the will.

32. A person devised to his wife an annuity of 200*l.* a year, to be issuing out of his lands, with power of distress and entry; subject thereto, he devised his real estates to his daughter in strict settlement; and directed all his personal estate to be invested in land, and settled to the same uses.

*Villa Real v. Galway, 1 Bro. R. 292. note, Amb. 682.*

One of the questions in this case was, whether the wife was to take this annuity in satisfaction of her dower, or not.

Two cases were cited; the first *Pitts v. Snowden*, where a man devised to his wife an annuity of 50*l.* a year, payable out of his freehold and copyhold estates, with a clause of entry and distress; and subject thereto, he gave his freehold estates to his three sisters. Lord Hardwicke decreed that the widow was entitled to dower, and also to the annuity. The second, *Arnold v. Kemstead*, where a testator gave some leaseholds to his wife for life, and also 10*l.* a year during her life, or so long as she should continue a widow, out of the rents of his freehold estates, but without any clause of entry or distress; and devised all his freehold estates to his son. Lord Northington decreed that the widow must elect either her dower, or the annuity, but could not take both.

Lord Camden.—The case now before the court is more exactly correspondent, in the form of the devise, to *Pitts v. Snowden*, than to the other case; for in these two cases there is an express clause of entry and distress, whereas there is no such power in *Arnold v. Kemstead*, and they more particularly resemble each other in another circumstance; as the annuity in both is charged upon other funds, not subject to dower, as well as upon the dowable estate; whereas in *Arnold v. Kemstead* the annuity is made to issue only out of the freehold estate,

vide Tit. 38.  
c. 2.

subject to dower. These two being alike in all their circumstances, I must admit that *Pitts v. Snowden* is an authority in point one way; *Arnold v. Kempstead* the other: The question upon this case is this: 1. Whether if a rent-charge is given to the widow, issuing out of the estate subject to dower, with power of distress, this devise shall operate as a bar, or satisfaction of dower. I am of opinion that it shall; because the claim of dower, 1. disappoints the will; and 2. is inconsistent with it. It is admitted that every devisee must confirm the will *in toto*, if he claims any interest under it; and must consequently forfeit such interest, if he impeaches or interrupts any part of it. In this case the will is contradicted by the claim of dower, 1. Because it puts the trustees out of possession; for they cannot hold the whole, subject to the annuity and distress, without being in possession of the whole; nor can the annuitant, consistent with the will, take possession of any part, because her right accrues upon default of payment. And though the present case gives the right of entry upon the whole, or any part, in more explicit terms than *Pitts v. Snowden*, yet the general power of entry, and distress, in *Pitts v. Snowden*, is tantamount in this particular. The possession therefore of the trustees being coextensive with the annuities and the distress, it is not possible, in such a case, to make the land subject to the dower and the rent-charge at the same time; because, as annuitant, the widow must be out of possession of the whole; as dowress, she must be possessed of a part. Hence it follows, that where the testator gives the estate, subject to the annuity, as he doth in this case, he must be intended to give, subject to the annuity only; and the residue of the rents and profits being given to;

the devisee, must exclude all charges, except only the annuity. In this view of the matter, the widow, by the claim of dower, disappoints the will in the most essential part of the testator's plan, by reducing the interest of the devisee, and loading the estate with an additional burthen. 2. The claim of dower is inconsistent with the will in another light, as it will diminish the annuity itself; which is contrary to the very words of the will. The annuity is either given over and above the dower, or in satisfaction of it; he intended only one, or he intended both; if both, he intended both should be enjoyed in their full extent; the whole annuity, and the whole dower. Now, can the widow enjoy the annuity, as the will has given it, if she claims her dower? It is most clear that she cannot; for if she enters into a third, in right of her dower, she must sink so much of her annuity, as that third ought to bear in proportion: that is a violation of the will. And whether the annuity clashes with the dower, or the dower with the annuity, it is equally decisive; for she can never enjoy both, unless both can be reconciled to the will, nor is there any pretence to say that the whole annuity, by an equitable marshalment, shall be thrown upon the two remaining thirds, because that would in terms contradict the will, which charges the whole, and gives the power of distress upon the whole. This is sufficient to shew the testator's intention: it is an intention that does not stand upon a loose presumption, but from the mode of devising in the will itself; and then the case comes within the rule of *Noys v. Mor-* Tit. 38. c. 2. daunt, that no person shall dispute a will, who takes under it. This rule is universal, and without exception; and a dowress has no more right to be exempted from it than any other devisee. The cases of *Lawrence ante,*



v. Lawrence, Hitchin v. Hitchin, and Lemon v. Lemon, may be all admitted to be good law ; the will in all these cases being consistent with the claim of dower. In all of them the dowable estate was devised generally ; and as the testator had not expressed the wife's bequest to be in satisfaction, the Court would not presume it, and the estate passed, *cum onere*. There no violence was done to the will ; and the wife took no more from the devisee, than the testator intended she should ; nothing being declared to the contrary. But where the dowable estate is so divided, that the claim of dower makes a material change in the will itself, as it does here, the widow must be barred by necessary implication. For where is the difference between declaring that she shall not hold both, and devising so that she cannot hold both, without disturbing the will : therefore, if the claim of dower will disappoint the will, she is barred of her dower by necessary implication ; which will, according to the doctrine of all the cases, be equivalent to an express implication. I will now say a word upon the case of Arnold v. Kempstead. There is no power of distress in that will, and yet I do not think it substantially within the reason of the other two cases ; for the very gift of an annuity to the wife, out of the dowable estate, does, from the nature of the interest, throw her out of possession, and makes the claim of dower inconsistent with the will. I must not conclude without taking notice of a circumstance that may be urged against my opinion, as a proof of intention in the testator to give both dower and annuity to the wife ; that is, that the annuity is made to issue out of more than the dowable estate ; from whence it may be argued that the testator enlarged the fund for payment, in order to leave sufficient for the satis-



faction of both the demands. I answer, first, that it is totally unknown whether he extended the charge and the remedy with that view; it is at most but a conjecture; and it may as reasonably be supposed that he meant only, by augmenting the security, to give an easier and safer remedy for recovering the annuity; as nothing is more common, where a rent-charge is granted, than to charge an estate of ten times the value for the payment of it: 2<sup>o</sup> that this supposed intention is rebutted by a declared intention to the contrary, manifested and expressed in the will itself. I wish these cases could have been reconciled, feeling in myself a modest unwillingness to sit in judgement upon two men greatly superior to myself in learning, as well as capacity: but that which in a private man would have been presumption, is an indispensable duty in a judge. The tax is imposed on me by my office, and I undertake it with more ease of mind, knowing that there is a jurisdiction superior to us all, which is able to confirm or reverse my opinion, by a final decision. Decreed that the widow must make her election \*.

. 33. There are however several modern cases, where a devise of an annuity to the wife, either entirely or partly charged on the estates out of which she is dowable, together with the gift of those estates to another, or a devise of them to trustees, has been held not to be in satisfaction of dower, but the widow has been allowed to have both †.

---

\* Vide *Jones v. Collier*, Amb. 750. *Wake v. Wake*, 3 Bro. R. 255. 1 Ves. Jun. 335. *Pearson v. Pearson*, 1 Bro. R. 292. *Boynton v. Boynton*, 1 Bro. Rep. 445.

† Vide *Foster v. Cook*, 3 Bro. R. 347. *French v. Davies*, 2 Ves. Jun. 572. *Strahan v. Sutton*, 3 Ves. 249. *Greatorex v. Carey*, 6 Ves. 615.

A Bequest  
of Personal  
Estate is  
no Bar to  
Dower.

Ayres v.  
Willis,  
1 Ves. 230.

34. A bequest of the residue of personal estate generally, will not be considered as a bar or satisfaction of dower.

35. A man by his will, taking notice of his wife's title to dower, made a provision for her out of his personal estate by way of residue. This was insisted on to be an implication to bar dower. Lord Hardwicke rejected the idea; because, by the claim of dower, the wife did not break in on the will; and this was the stronger as it was only a residue; which accidental benefit he might intend she should have, as well as dower.

## TITLE VII.

### JOINTURE.

#### CHAP. I.

##### *Of the Origin and Nature of Jointures.*

#### CHAP. II.

##### *In what Cases a Jointress is entitled to the Aid of a Court of Equity.*

#### CHAP. III.

##### *What will operate as a Bar or Satisfaction of a Jointure.*

---

#### CHAP. I.

##### *Of the Origin and Nature of Jointures.*

- |                                                  |                                                          |
|--------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. Origin of Jointures.                          | 22. Jointures which require the Acceptance of the Widow. |
| 5. Definition of.                                | 26. Cases where the Widow takes the Estate and Dower.    |
| 6. Circumstances required.                       | 27. Equitable Jointures.                                 |
| 7. Must take Effect on the Death of the Husband. | 31. Who may limit a Jointure.                            |
| 10. And be for the Life of the Wife.             | 35. Who may take a Jointure.                             |
| 15. Must be limited to the Wife herself.         | 36. An Infant is barred by a Jointure.                   |
| 16. In Satisfaction of her whole Dower.          | 40. Nature of this Estate.                               |
| 17. And be so expressed or averred.              | 47. A Rent-charge is usually given as a Jointure.        |
| 21. And made before Marriage.                    | 48. Effect of the Eviction of a Jointure.                |

---

#### SECTION 1.

**I**N consequence of two maxims of the common law:—1. That no right can be barred till it accrues; 2. That no right or title to an estate of

Origin of  
Jointures,  
Vernon's  
Case,

4 Rep. 1.  
Gilb. Uses,  
147.

freehold can be barred by a collateral satisfaction; it was found impossible to bar a woman of dower by any assurance of lands, either before or during the marriage. For a wife having acquired a right to be endowed of a third part of all her husband's lands at the moment of her marriage, this right like, all others, could only be extinguished by a release. And no such release of the wife either before or during the marriage, would be valid. For if before the marriage it was no bar, because at the time of making it the woman had no title to dower; and therefore a release from her then, would be no bar to a right which accrued to her after. If it was made during the marriage it was absolutely void, the wife not being then *sui juris*. And no estate limited to the wife during the marriage could bar her of dower, because no right or title to a freehold estate can be barred by a collateral satisfaction.

Tit. 32. c. 6.

3 Rep. 58 b,  
4 — 1 b.

2. Every woman therefore became entitled upon her marriage to one-third of all her husband's real estates, however small her fortune might be. Such an inequality was one of the reasons why so much land was conveyed to uses, a widow not being dowerable of a use; when the practice of vesting estates in feoffees to uses became general, it was usual, on all marriages, for the friends of the woman to procure the intended husband to take an estate from his feoffees, and limit it to himself and his intended wife for their lives, in joint-tenancy or jointure; from whence arose the word jointure; lest the wife should be totally unprovided for, at the death of her husband.

Tit. 11. c. 3.

3. When the statute of uses transferred the legal estate to those who were entitled to the use of lands, all women then married would have become dowerable of such lands as had been held to the use of their

husbands ; and would also be entitled to any particular lands that were settled on them in jointure. As this would have been a manifest wrong, the following clause was inserted in the statute of uses.

4. “ Whereas divers persons have purchased or have estate made and conveyed of and in divers lands, tenements, and hereditaments, unto them and to their wives, and to the heirs of the husband ; or to the husband and to the wife, and to the heirs of their two bodies begotten, or to the heirs of one of their bodies begotten ; or to the husband and to the wife, for term of their lives, or for term of life of the said wife ; or where any such estate or purchase of any lands, &c. hath been or hereafter shall be made to any husband and to his wife in manner and form above expressed ; or to any other person or persons, and to their heirs and assigns, to the use and behoof of the said husband and wife, or to the use of the wife, as is before rehearsed, for the jointure of the wife ; that then and in every such case, every woman married having such jointure made, or hereafter to be made, shall not claim nor have title to have any dower of the residue of the lands, &c. that at any time were her said husband’s, by whom she hath any such jointure ; nor shall demand nor claim her dower, of and against them that have the lands and inheritances of her said husband. But if she have no such jointure, then she shall be admitted and enabled to pursue, have, and demand her dower, by writ of dower, after the due course and order of the common laws of the realm.”

St. 27 Hen. 8.  
c. 10. § 6.

5. This statute has given rise to the modern jointure, which Lord Coke defines to be “ a competent livelihood of freehold for the wife, of lands or tenements, &c., to take effect presently, in possession or profit, after the decease of her husband, for the life of the

Definition of.  
1 Inst. 37 a.

wife, at the least ; if she herself be not the cause of its determination or forfeiture.”

Circumstances required.

6. As this statute contradicts the common law, it has always been construed strictly. Lord Coke has laid it down that no estate limited to a woman shall be deemed a good jointure, and a bar to dower, under this act, unless it is attended with the following circumstances.

Must take Effect on the Death of the Husband.

7. It must take effect, in possession or profit, immediately from the death of the husband ; for otherwise it will not be so beneficial as dower.

1 Inst. 36 b.  
4 Rep. 2 a.

8. If therefore an estate is conveyed to the husband for life, remainder to J. S. for life, remainder to the wife for life, in satisfaction of dower, this is not a jointure within the statute ; because by the first limitation it is not to take effect in possession or profit, presently after the death of her husband. And although in this case J. S. should die in the lifetime of the husband, still it would be no bar of dower.

Wood v. Shirley,  
Cro. Ja. 488.

9. So where a person covenanted to stand seised to the use of himself in tail, remainder to the use of his wife for life. This was held not to be a jointure, because it was to begin after the determination of an estate tail. And though the estate determined by the death of the husband, without issue, so that the wife's estate began immediately upon the death of her husband, yet as it was not a good jointure at the beginning, whatever happened afterwards could not make it good.

Caruthers v. Caruthers,  
4 Bro. R. 500.  
5 Ves. 192.

And be for the Life of the Wife.  
1 Inst. 36 b.

10. The second circumstance is, that it be for the wife's life, or for some greater estate. So that if an estate be limited to a woman, for the life or lives of one or more persons, or for a hundred, or a thousand years, if she lives so long, it is not a jointure.

11. Although the statute recites five modes of

limiting an estate in jointure, yet these are only mentioned as examples; and do not exclude any other estate consistent with the intention of the act.

12. In the Duchess of Somerset's case, 1 Mary, it was resolved by all the judges that an estate limited to a man and his wife, and to the heirs male of their two bodies begotten, was a good jointure within the statute, though not one of the estates mentioned in it. Dyer, 97 a.

13. In Vernon's case it was held that an estate limited to the husband for life, remainder to the wife for life, was a good jointure; though it was not one of the estates mentioned in the statute; because it was equally beneficial. 4 Rep. 2 a.

14. It is said in Brooke's Abridgement that an estate, limited to a husband and wife and their heirs, is not a jointure within the statute, because it is not one of the estates mentioned in it. But Dyer contradicts this position, and proves that it would be a good jointure, the words of the act being, "for term of life or otherwise in jointure," which word otherwise extended to all other estates conveyed to the wife, which were as beneficial, or more, as the estates mentioned. Tit. Dower, 69.  
248 a.  
4 Rep. 3 b.

15. The third circumstance is, that the estate must be limited to the wife herself, and not to any other person in trust for her. So that if an estate be made to others in fee simple, or for her life in trust, so as the estate remain in them, albeit it be for her benefit, and by her assent, yet it is no bar of dower. Equitable jointures are however now allowed, of which an account will be given hereafter. Must be limited to the Wife herself.  
1 Inst. 36 b.

16. The fourth circumstance is, that it be made in satisfaction of the wife's whole dower, and not of part of it only; for land conveyed to a woman in In Satisfaction of her whole Dower.

1 Inst. 36 b. part of her jointure, or in satisfaction of part of her dower, is no bar, on account of the uncertainty.

And be so expressed or averred.

17. The fifth circumstance is, that the estate limited to the wife be expressed, or averred to be, in satisfaction of her whole dower.

9 Mod. 152.

18. Since the statute of frauds it appears somewhat doubtful whether an averment can be admitted that a provision made for a wife, previous to marriage, was intended as a jointure, and in bar of dower.

Tinney v. Tinney,  
3 Atk. 8.

19. On a bill brought for dower, the defendant; the heir at law, insisted that the husband in his lifetime gave a bond in the penalty of 1,000 l. in trust to secure to his wife 500 l. in case she survived: that it was intended at the time in lieu of dower; that she acknowledged it to be so; and offered to read evidence of her acknowledgement.

Tit. 32. c. 19.

Lord Hardwicke was of opinion that parol evidence could not be allowed in this case, being within the statute of frauds; and that a general provision for a wife was not a bar of dower, unless expressed to be so. That in the case of *Vizard v. Longdale*, 5 Geo. I. Sir Joseph Jekyll held the words in a bond, to secure a sum of money for a woman's livelihood and maintenance, was no bar of dower. But that Lord Chancellor King was of opinion it was a bar of dower, being within the equity of the statute of Henry VIII. of jointures, and therefore reversed the decree.

Walker v. Walker,  
1 Ves. 54.  
Couch v. Stratton,  
4 Ves. Jun. 391.

20. It is however observable, that there is nothing in the statute of frauds excluding averments, and it is generally understood, that whatever averments might have been made, before that statute, may be made now. In *Vernon's case*, and an anonymous case, *Owen*, 33, it was averred that the estate limited to the wife was for her jointure, and in bar of dower; and the averment was allowed.

infra, § 25.



21. The sixth circumstance is, that it be made before marriage. For it is enacted by the ninth section of the statute, that if any wife have any manors &c. assured to her after marriage, for term of life or otherwise, in jointure; except the same be made by act of parliament; the wife shall at her liberty, after the death of her husband, refuse the jointure, and demand her dower.

And made before Marriage.  
1 Inst. 36. a.  
4 Rep. 3 a.

22. A jointure attended with all the circumstances above stated is binding on the widow, and is a complete bar to her claim of dower; or rather prevents her title to dower from ever arising. But there are other modes of limiting an estate to a wife, which Lord Coke says are good jointures within the statute, provided the wife accepts of them, after the death of her husband. She is however at liberty to reject them, and to claim her dower.

Jointures which require the Acceptance of the Widow.

23. Thus an estate settled on the wife, after marriage, may, by the express words of the statute, be rejected by the widow after her husband's death; in which case she may claim her dower. But if she once accepts of such jointure, she is thereby bound.

24. An estate for life, limited to a woman for her jointure, upon condition to perform her husband's will, or which is determinable during the life of the wife, is a jointure within the statute, if the wife accepts of it, after the death of her husband.

25. In a writ of dower the tenant pleaded that the husband of the demandant was also seised of lands in the same county, which he had conveyed to the use of himself for life, remainder to his wife for life; and averred that the estate for life so limited to the demandant was for her jointure, and in full satisfaction of her dower; and that after the death of her husband, she had entered into the lands so limited to her for

Vernon's Case,  
4 Rep. 1.  
Dyer 317 a.

her jointure, and agreed to it. The demandant replied and confessed the conveyance by which she took an estate for life ; but said that the estate was upon condition that she should perform her husband's will ; and demanded judgement if the tenant should be admitted to aver that this estate so limited to the wife, upon the said condition, was for the jointure of the wife, and in satisfaction of her dower ; upon which the tenant demurred in law. It was resolved, that although the estate limited to the wife was upon condition ; and although dower, in lieu of which the jointure was given, was an absolute estate for life ; yet in as much as an estate for life upon condition was an estate for life, it was within the words and intent of the act, if the wife, after the death of the husband, accepted it : therefore she was barred of her dower. It was also said, that an estate limited to a woman during her widowhood, for her jointure, was good within the statute, if she accepted it.

Cases where  
the Widow  
takes the  
Estate and  
Dower.

4 Rep. 2 a.

1 Inst. 36 b.

Equitable  
Jointures.

26. It appears from the preceding cases that there are two sorts of jointures within the statute. One which prevents the title to dower from arising ; another which, when accepted, but not before, becomes a bar to dower. When an estate does not fall within either of those descriptions, the widow becomes entitled to it, and to dower also. Thus in Vernon's case it was said, that if the estate there limited to the wife was not within the statute, then it was no bar of dower, but the demandant should have both. And Lord Coke says, where the estate limited to the wife does not take effect immediately upon the death of the husband ; in which case it is not within the statute ; the widow shall take such estate, and dower also.

27. It has been stated, that by the statute 27 Hen. VIII. the jointure must be limited to the wife

herself, and not to any other person in trust for her. It is however now settled that a trust estate, being equally certain and beneficial as a legal one, or even an agreement to settle an annuity, as a jointure, in bar of dower, is good as an equitable jointure.

28. Thus in a modern case it was determined by the House of Lords, that a covenant from the intended husband that his heirs, executors, or administrators would pay an annuity to his intended wife, for her life, in case she survived him, in full for her jointure, and in bar of her dower, without expressing that it should be charged upon lands, was a good equitable jointure, within the statute. Lord Hardwicke answered the objection of its being in the husband's power to have defeated this agreement, and sold or given away his whole estate, by Lord Letchmere's and other cases, where the agreement rested, as here, upon the husband's covenant. And further, by observing that such an alienation would have been an eviction of the fund out of which the jointure was to arise. and consequently let the wife into dower.

Bucks v.  
Drury, infra.  
Jordan v.  
Savage, infra.

9 Mod. 219.

4 Bro. R. 506.  
n.

Ca. Temp.  
Talbot, 80.

infra, § 48.

To another objection, that the husband had not bound *himself* to do any act, but only that his heirs, executors, and administrators should pay, &c. he answered, that the wife might, the day after the marriage, have brought a bill, by her next friend, and compelled the husband himself to settle the annuity.

29. By indenture made previous to a marriage, the intended husband and wife assigned leasehold estates for years belonging to each of them to trustees, in trust to permit the husband to receive the rents for life, after his decease to permit the wife to receive the rents for her life, in full for her jointure, and in bar of dower. The Court of Chancery held this to be a good equitable jointure.

Williams  
v. Chitty,  
3 Ves. Jun.  
545.

ante, § 19.

Estcourt v.  
Estcourt,  
1 Cox. R. 20.

30. In the case of *Tinney v. Tinney*, a sum of money secured by bond to the intended wife before the marriage, was held to be a bar to dower. And in a case published by Mr. Cox, where the intended husband gave a bond to the mother of the intended wife, conditioned that he or his heirs would settle 500 l. a year in land on her, in satisfaction of dower; Sir T. Clarke, M. R., held it a good jointure. From which it appears that the courts of equity now consider any provision which a woman accepts before marriage, in satisfaction of dower, to be a good jointure.

Who may  
limit a  
Jointure.

31. It is not necessary that the estate limited as a jointure should proceed immediately from the husband. For if it comes through the medium of trustees, or of the demandant in a common recovery, it will be good.

Bridge's  
Case,  
Moor, 718.

32. A. bargained and sold lands to I. S. and I. N. to make them tenants to the *præcipe*, for the purpose of suffering a common recovery, which was duly had, to the use of A. and his wife, for her jointure. Resolved, that this was an assurance by A. himself, for the advancement of his wife.

33. If the estate proceeds from the father of the husband, it will be good.

Ashton's  
Case,  
Dyer 228.

34. The father of the husband, in pursuance of articles, enfeoffed trustees, before the marriage, to the use of the intended wife for life: the question was, whether this was a good jointure, it not being made by the husband, nor of his lands. Held a good jointure.

Who may  
take a  
Jointure.

35. As a jointure is an estate limited to a woman in lieu and satisfaction of dower, it follows that all those who are capable of being endowed, may take a jointure.

An Infant is  
barred by a  
Jointure.

36. It was formerly much doubted whether a jointure, settled on an infant before marriage, was a bar

to dower. But it has been determined that such a jointure is good, and that the infant cannot waive it after her husband's death, and claim dower. 9 Mod. 218. 3 Atk. 612.

37. Sir T. Drury, previous to his marriage with Miss Tyrrell, who was then an infant, by indenture made between him of the first part, Miss T. of the second part, and two trustees of the third part, agreed that Miss T. in case the marriage took place, and she survived him, should have an annuity of 600 l. during her life, for her jointure, and in bar of dower; and Sir T. D. covenanted with the trustees that his heirs, executors, and administrators would pay the annuity. The deed was executed by Miss T. in the presence of her guardian, who was a subscribing witness to it, and the marriage was soon after solemnized; with the privity and consent of the guardian. Miss T. was only entitled to a portion of 2000 l. Bucks (Earl of) v. Drury, 3 Bro. Parl. Ca. 492.

Sir T. Drury died seised of a considerable real estate. Lady Drury insisted, that as she was an infant at the time of executing the settlement, she was not bound to accept the provision thereby made for her; but was entitled to dower. The heirs of Sir T. D. filed a bill in Chancery against her, praying that she might be restrained from claiming dower. The cause was heard before Lord Henley, who decreed that Lady Drury was entitled to dower.

On an appeal to the House of Lords the following question was put to the judges: "Whether a woman married under the age of 21 years, having before such marriage a jointure made to her, in bar of her dower, is thereby bound, and barred of dower within the statute 27 Henry VIII. c. 10."

The judges were divided; three of them delivered their opinion in the negative, but the rest in the affir-

mative. Lord Hardwicke and Lord Mansfield also delivered their opinions in the affirmative; whereupon the decree was reversed.

4 Bro. Rep.  
506. n.

38. The principle upon which this case was determined is, that a jointure being a *provisione viri*, and not *ex contractu*, the consent of the intended wife is not a circumstance required by the statute, to render a jointure valid. Lord Mansfield, in delivering his opinion in the House of Lords on this case, said that a jointure was not a *contract* for a provision, but a *provision* made by the husband, as defined by Lord Coke; so the consequences drawn from the infant's incapacity of contracting were ill founded. It is therefore now held that the intended wife need not be a party to the deed by which the jointure is limited. And in an opinion of the late Mr. Fearne's, he says, "I discover nothing in the statute 27 Henry VIII. of jointures, that requires the wife being a party to the deed which secures her jointure; and some of the cases said to be within that statute seem rather against such a conclusion."

Jordan v.  
Savage, ante.  
2 Ab. Eq. 101.

Estcourt v.  
Estcourt,  
1 Cox. R. 20.

39. It is however necessary, I conceive, that the intended wife, or, where she is under age, that her guardians, should have notice of the jointure limited to her; for otherwise she may be defrauded by the settlement of a jointure inadequate to her rank and fortune; in which case there can be no doubt but that she would be relieved in equity.

3 Atk. 612.

Nature of  
this Estate.

40. We have seen that an estate in fee, in tail, or for life, may be limited to a woman for her jointure. In the case of a limitation in fee, I conceive a jointress would have full power to dispose of it as she pleased. But where an estate tail is limited to a woman for her jointure, she is prohibited by the sta-

tutes 11 Hen. VII. c. 20., and 32 Hen. VIII. c. 36., from alienating, or creating a discontinuance of it, by feoffment, fine, or recovery. vide Tit. 36. c. 10.

41. Where lands are limited to a woman for life, for her jointure, she is not allowed to commit waste; and will be restrained from it by the Court of Chancery, in the same manner as other tenants for life. Basset v. Basset, Finch, 189.

42. On a motion to stay a jointress, tenant in tail after possibility, &c. from committing waste; the Court held, that as she was a jointress within the statute 11 Hen. VII. she ought to be restrained, being part of the inheritance, which by the statute she is prevented from alienating; and therefore granted an injunction against wilful waste. Cook v. Winford, 1 Ab. Eq. 221.

43. Where there is a covenant that a jointure shall be of a certain yearly value, though the estate be not limited without impeachment of waste, yet the Court of Chancery will not restrain the jointress from committing waste, so far to as make up the defect of the jointure. Carew v. Carew, 1 Ab. Eq. 221.

44. Where the jointress and the issue claim under the same settlement, they shall contribute proportionably in the discharge of any prior incumbrance on the estate. Carpenter v. Carpenter, 1 Vern. 440.

45. A jointress is not entitled to the crops sown at the time of her husband's death; because a jointure is not a continuance of the estate of the husband, like dower. Fisher v. Forbes, 9 Vin. Ab. 373.

46. It appears from a passage in Jenkins, that a jointure is not liable to debts due to the crown. Pa. 226.

47. The inconveniencies which attend a limitation of land, by way of jointure, are so numerous, that it has long been a general practice, to limit a rent-charge to the intended wife for her life, as a jointure, to commence from the death of the husband; A Rent-charge is usually given as a Jointure.



with powers of distress and entry, and a term for years, for further securing the payment of it; which has been found by experience to be much more convenient both to the jointress, and to the heir; as a more certain income is thereby provided for the former, and the latter continues in the possession and management of the whole estate.

Effect of the  
Eviction of a  
Jointure.

48. There is a proviso in the statute 27 Hen. VIII. c. 10. § 7. “That if any such woman be lawfully expelled or evicted from her said jointure, or from any part thereof, without any fraud or covin, by lawful entry, or by discontinuance of her husband; then every such woman shall be endowed of as much of the residue of her husband’s tenements or hereditaments, whereof she was before dowable, as the same lands and tenements so evicted and expelled shall amount or extend unto.”

Gervoye’s  
Case,  
Moo. 717.

49. A person, in consideration of a marriage before had, covenanted to stand seised to the use of himself and wife, during their natural lives, and the life of the longest liver. The lands were evicted during the life of the husband; it was held, that the eviction during the coverture was sufficient to entitle the wife to a recompence; though she had accepted the residue of the jointure, after the death of her husband.

Maunsfield’s  
Case, 1 Inst.  
33 a. n. 8.

50. A jointure was settled before marriage; the husband, during the coverture, purchased other lands, sold them again, and died. The jointure lands were evicted; held, that the wife should have dower of the lands which were purchased, and aliened by her husband, at the time when she was barred of her action for dower.



## TITLE VII.

### JOINTURE.

#### CHAP. II.

#### *In what Cases a Jointress is entitled to the Aid of a Court of Equity.*

- |                                                     |                                                                               |
|-----------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>A Jointress is considered as a Purchaser.</i> | 9. <i>Not bound by Neglect during Coverture.</i>                              |
| 4. <i>Though the Settlement be unequal.</i>         | 12. <i>Nor to deliver up Title Deeds.</i>                                     |
| 7. <i>Relieved against a voluntary Conveyance.</i>  | 15. <i>Sometimes allowed Interest for Arrears.</i>                            |
| 8. <i>And against a satisfied Term.</i>             | 16. <i>Effect of a Covenant that the Lands are of a certain Yearly Value.</i> |

#### SECTION 1.

**A JOINTRESS** is considered, in equity, as a purchaser ; marriage alone being deemed a valuable consideration. Therefore a jointress is entitled to the protection and aid of a court of equity ; even though she elopes from her husband. So that wherever there appears to have been an agreement to settle a jointure, a specific performance of it will be decreed.

A Jointress is considered as a Purchaser.

infra, c. 3.

2. A man agreed, by articles, to settle certain lands, before marriage, on his intended wife, for her jointure. The marriage took effect, but the husband died before any settlement was made, The wife brought her bill for an execution of the articles. It was contended, that as the agreement was to make a settlement *before* marriage, and as the plaintiff married without requiring such settlement, it amounted to a waiver of the articles, and a release in law: an execution of them was however decreed.

Hayner v. Hayner, 1 Vent. 343.

1 Atk. 440.

3. Lord Hardwicke has said, that in marriage contracts, where the fortune of the wife is paid to the father, or to clear incumbrances, or to the son; and the father and son are parties to the marriage contract; the wife has a lien upon both the estate of the father, and that of the son.

Though the  
Settlement  
be unequal.

4. Although a settlement be very unequal, and much in favour of the wife; yet a court of equity will not relieve against it; because it cannot put the wife into her former situation.

Whitfield  
v. Taylor,  
Show. Parl.  
Ca. 20.

5. A., upon a treaty of marriage with M. the daughter of B., was to settle 500*l.* a year upon her, and to have 5,000*l.* portion. But B. insisting that if A. should die without issue, his daughter should have the inheritance of the jointure, that was refused. Afterwards A. renewed the treaty himself, *accepted* of articles for payment of 5,000*l.*, and settled a jointure of 500*l.* a year; he likewise made another deed in the nature of a mortgage of all his estate, as well the reversion of the jointure, as the rest, for securing the payment of 5,000*l.* to her, in case A. died without issue. A. died in a fortnight after the marriage, without issue. M. by bill prayed a foreclosure of the mortgage. The defendants, though they exhibited their bill for relief against this as a fraud, were decreed to pay the 5,000*l.* without interest.

Upon an appeal to the House of Lords, it was argued that A. was a sickly and weak man, that the agreement was unreasonable, that A. on his death-bed declared he had made no such agreement, and that M., being present, did not contradict it. To which it was answered, that all bargains were not to be set aside, because not such as the wisest people would make; but there must be fraud to make their acts void. That the marriage was of itself a good

consideration for a jointure ; and reasonable or unreasonable was not always the question in equity ; if each party was acquainted with the whole, and meant what they did : much less was it sufficient to say that it was unreasonable, as it happened in event. For if at the time it was a tolerable bargain ; nay, if at the time, the bargain was the meaning of the parties, and each knew what was done, and there was no deceit upon either, it must stand. The decree was affirmed.

6. A person brought a bill to be relieved against a jointure, made previous to, and in consideration of marriage, by a tenant for life, in pursuance of a power, he being then upon his death-bed. Lord Parker, assisted by Lord Chief Justice Pratt and the Master of the Rolls, denied relief. Wicherly v. Wicherly, 2 P. Wms. 619. Prime v. Stebbing, infra, c. 3.

7. A jointress will be relieved, in equity, against a prior voluntary conveyance ; because marriage is a sufficient consideration to make a wife a purchaser. And all voluntary conveyances are fraudulent and void against purchasers for a valuable consideration. Relieved against a voluntary Conveyance. Tit. 32. c. 27.

8. A court of equity will also set aside a satisfied term for years in favour of a jointress : though it will not do so in favour of a dowress ; because a jointress has a fixed interest, by the agreement of the party. And against a satisfied Term. Prec. in Cha. 65. Tit. 12. c. 3.

9. The neglect of a married woman during coverture, will not affect her rights ; and a court of equity will notwithstanding assist her, in case her jointure proves deficient. Not bound by Neglect during Coverture.

10. The plaintiff's husband after marriage entered into a voluntary bond to settle a jointure ; and accordingly settled lands, upon which the bond was delivered up. The husband died, and the jointress was evicted. It was resolved that the jointure should be made good out of the personal estate, unless the plaintiff recovered dower ; for this agreement, though Beard v. Nuthall, 1 Vern. 427.

voluntary, ought to be decreed by the Court. And the delivery up of the bond by a feme covert, could no way bind her interest.

Fothergill v.  
Fothergill,  
1 Ab. Eq.  
222.

11. A person made a settlement on his son for life, remainder to his first and other sons in tail, with power to appoint any of the lands, not exceeding 100*l.* a year, to any wife he should marry, for a jointure. The father died, the son married, and after marriage, appointed certain lands to trustees, in trust for his wife, for a jointure; and covenanted, that if they were not of the value of 100*l.* a year, he would, upon request made to him any time during his life, make them up, out of the other lands. The husband lived several years; no complaint was made that the lands were not of that value, nor any request to make it up. On a bill brought by the widow to have the jointure made up 100*l.*, Lord Keeper Wright said, that a provision for a wife, or children, was not to be considered as a voluntary covenant; and therefore decreed the deficiency to be made up, notwithstanding the wife's neglect in not requesting it during the coverture; for the laches of a feme covert could not be imputed to her.

Nor to deliver  
up Title  
Deeds.  
Towers v.  
Davys,  
1 Vern. 479.

12. If a bill is brought by an heir at law, or any other person, against a jointress, whereby the party would avoid the jointure, under pretence that his ancestor had not a sufficient title to make such a jointure; and seeks a discovery of deeds and writings, whereby he would avoid the title of the jointress; he will not be allowed to have such discovery, though the jointure be made after marriage, unless he by his bill submits to confirm the title of the jointress; and then he shall.

Lomax  
v. ———,  
Sel. Ca.  
in Cha. 4.

13. On a motion that all deeds, leases, and writings relating to the inheritance, should be delivered up,

on confirming a jointure; it was opposed as to the leases, because without them the jointress could not recover the rents; and though the leases should be expired, there might be arrears of rent, and covenants. The Court ordered all deeds and writings, and expired leases, to be delivered up; unless particular reasons were shown to the contrary.

14. The Court of Chancery will not oblige a widow to produce the deed under which she claims her jointure, on the bare offer of confirming it; but it must be absolutely confirmed.

*Leech v. Trollop,*  
2 Ves. 662.

15. Interest is not in general allowed for arrears of a jointure; but the court will expect a special case to be made for that purpose: as the being obliged to borrow money, and pay interest for it; then the Court will give interest, from a reasonable time.

*Sometimes allowed Interest for Arrears.*  
*Anon.* 2 Ves. 261.  
*Tew v. Winterton,* 1 Ves. Jun. 451.

16. If a husband covenants that the lands limited in jointure are of a certain yearly value, and they afterwards prove deficient; the covenant will be decreed to be performed in specie. Although such a covenant be inserted in articles only, and not in the settlement made pursuant to them, yet it will be considered as subsisting in equity.

*Effect of a Covenant that the Lands are of a certain Value.*  
*Speake v. Speake,*  
1 Vern. 217.

17. A jointress brought her bill to have an account of the real and personal estate of her late husband; and to have satisfaction for a defect of value of her jointure lands; which he had covenanted to be, and to continue, of a certain yearly value. The defendant insisted that this was a covenant which sounded only in damages, and was therefore properly determinable at law. Though it was admitted that a court of equity cannot regularly assess damages, yet it was determined that in this case a Master might properly inquire into the amount of the defect, and report it

*Hedges v. Everard,*  
1 Ab. Eq. 18.

to the Court, which might send it to be tried at law, upon a *quantum damnificat*'.

Parker v.  
Harvey,  
2 Ab. Eq.  
241.  
4 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 604.  
Eustace v.  
Keightly,  
4 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 588.

18. Where lands settled for a jointure are covenanted to be of a certain clear yearly value, and after the death of the husband they prove deficient, the jointress is entitled to have the deficiency made good, out of the other lands ; and to come in as a specialty creditor, upon the husband's estate, for the arrears of the deficiency, with interest.

Glegg v.  
Glegg,  
2 Ab. Eq. 27.  
4 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 614.

19. Where, in marriage articles, the lands agreed to be limited in jointure are expressed, but not covenanted, to be of a certain yearly value, and afterwards prove deficient ; this amounts to an agreement that they were of that value ; and is a sufficient foundation for making up the deficiency.

## TITLE VII.

## JOINTURE.

## CHAP. III.

*What will operate as a Bar or Satisfaction of a Jointure.*

- |                                                                                                                                         |                                                                                                                                                                          |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Fine or Recovery by the Wife.</i><br>3. <i>Not barred by Attainder of the Husband.</i><br>4. <i>Nor by Elopement of the Wife.</i> | 7. <i>A Devise is no Bar to a Jointure.</i><br>13. <i>Unless so expressed, and then the Widow has an Election.</i><br>15. <i>A Devise sometimes held a Satisfaction.</i> |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**I**F a wife joins with her husband in levying a fine, Fine or Recovery by the Wife. Vide Tit. 35 & 36.  
 or suffering a common recovery, of the lands settled on her as a jointure, or out of which the jointure is issuing; she will be thereby barred of her jointure: upon the same principle that a fine or recovery, in which she joins with her husband, will bar her from claiming dower. But where a jointure is settled on a woman before marriage, pursuant to the statute, it so far resembles dower, that it cannot be defeated by the alienation of the husband alone, or be charged with any incumbrances created by him after the marriage.

2. If the jointure whereof the wife levies a fine, 1 Inst. 37 a. Dyer, 358 b.  
 or suffers a recovery, be made before marriage, the wife will then be barred, not only of the jointure, but also of her claim to dower. If the jointure be made after marriage, a fine or recovery by the husband and wife, of such jointure, will not bar the wife of her right to dower. For, in the first case, the jointure

being made before marriage, was not waivable; whereas in the second case her estate was originally waivable, and the time of her election came not till after the death of her husband; so that she may claim her dower in the residue of his lands.

Not barred  
by Attainder  
of the Hus-  
band.  
1 Inst. 37 a.

3. A jointure is in several cases more favoured in law than dower. For although the husband commit treason or felony, yet his widow will be entitled to her jointure. But if the wife be attainted of either of these crimes she will lose her jointure.

Nor by  
Elopement  
of the Wife.

4. A jointure is not barred or forfeited by the elopement of the wife from her husband, and her living in adultery; nor will these acts even preclude her from obtaining relief in equity.

Sidney v.  
Sidney,  
3 P. Wms.  
269.

5. A woman brought a bill against her husband, for a specific performance of her marriage articles, whereby he had agreed that a jointure should be settled on her. The defendant answered, that the plaintiff had withdrawn herself from him, lived separately, and very much misbehaved herself. It was proved that the plaintiff did elope from her husband, and went with another man to a cottage about three miles from her husband's house; since which there had been no pretence of a reconciliation. So that this was a bar of dower at common law; therefore equity ought not to assist such a woman.

Tit. 6. c. 5.  
§ 7.

Lord Talbot observed, that the fact of adultery was not put in issue, the accusation being only general, and uncertain. But the articles being that the husband should settle such and such lands in certainty upon his wife, for her jointure, this was pretty much in the nature of an actual and vested jointure; as what was covenanted for a good consideration to be done, was in most respects considered in equity as actually done; consequently this was a jointure, and



not forfeitable, either for adultery or elopement. The reason why a wife forfeited her dower by an elopement with an adulterer; and yet the husband did not, by leaving his wife, and living with another woman, forfeit his estate by the curtesy; was, because the statute of Westminster 2. does by express words create a forfeiture in the one case, and not in the other. Decreed that the husband should perform the articles.

6. In a modern case, where a bill was filed by trustees, praying a performance of marriage articles, the husband resisted, so far as the articles made a provision for the wife; alleging and proving that she lived separate from him, in adultery.

Blount v. Winter, cited 3 P. Wms. 277.

Lord Thurlow was of opinion that this was not a reason for nonperformance of the articles, as to the wife. Decreed accordingly.

7. The principles laid down in the preceding title, as to the effect of devises in barring dower, have been adopted with respect to jointures. So that a general devise of other lands, or of personal property, by a husband to his wife, will not operate as a bar to a jointure, settled on the wife, either before or after marriage.

A Devise is no Bar to a Jointure.

8. Upon the proposal of a marriage between Sir Hele Hook, who was then only seventeen years of age, and Esther the daughter of Edward Underhill, Esq., certain articles were entered into by Mr. Underhill, and Mr. Thompson, who was Sir Hele's guardian, and one of his father's executors, whereby Underhill covenanted to pay 1000*l.* on the day of marriage, and if Sir Hele should, within six months after he attained his age of 21, settle lands of inheritance of 500*l.* per annum in Warwickshire, to the use of himself for life, remainder to the said Esther his intended

Grove v. Hook, 4 Bro. Parl. Ca. 593.

*Title VII. Jointure. Ch. iii. § 8.*

wife for her life, in lieu of dower, remainder to their first and other sons in tail male, remainder to the right heirs of Sir Hele, that then Underhill would pay Sir Hele the further sum of 3000 *l.*, and would also convey a farm in Worcestershire, and several houses in London, of the yearly value of 220 *l.*, to certain uses therein mentioned.

The marriage was soon afterwards had ; and when Sir Hele came of age, he, by indentures of lease and release dated in 1687, conveyed all the said manors and lands in Norfolk, Warwick, and Gloucester, to trustees, to the following uses ; viz. As to Shelford and other particular parts of the premises, to the use of himself for life, remainder to dame Esther for life, for her jointure, and in bar of dower ; remainder to their first and other sons in tail male ; remainder to Sir Hele in fee. Mr. Underhill at the same time executed a conveyance of the Worcestershire estate and houses in London to the uses of the articles ; and also paid Sir Hele the 3000 *l.* in performance of the covenant. The yearly value of the lands so settled on dame Esther for her jointure was 783 *l.*, which was considerably more than what was stipulated for by the articles. Some years after, Sir Hele, looking over his father's settlements and will, discovered that the demesnes of Shelford, part of his lady's jointure, were settled upon his mother, who was then living. He was also advised that in case of his death without issue, the whole of his lady's jointure might become void ; and therefore he, by a deed poll dated 1705, in pursuance of a power reserved to him in a settlement made by his father, appointed certain lands of about 240 *l.* per annum, to the use of dame Esther for life, as an additional jointure ; but expressly declared the same to be in recompence of all deficiencies either in

title or value, of any estate on her before settled, or agreed to be settled, in consideration of their marriage.

In 1709 Sir Hele made his will, and thereby gave his wife a legacy of 4000 *l.* and all his money, plate, jewels, household stuff, and other goods and furniture; he also devised to her several houses and lands of the yearly value of 200 *l.* and upwards, for her life; and appointed her and one Grove executors, and residuary legatees.

In 1712 Sir Hele died without issue; and not having suffered a recovery of the estates comprised in the settlement of 1687, his sisters became entitled thereto, under a settlement made by their father; so that dame Esther was defeated of her jointure. Whereupon she exhibited her bill in Chancery against Sir Hele's sisters and executor, in order to compel them either to confirm her jointure, or to assign her dower by way of recompence out of all the lands whereof Sir Hele was seised in fee simple, or fee tail, during the coverture; according to the proviso of the statute 27 Henry VIII. c. 10.

The defendants, by their answer, insisted upon their title to the premises by virtue of a settlement made by their father, and also insisted that the additional jointure limited to her, and the other lands and legacies given her by Sir Hele's will, which were above double the value of her jointure, were intended and ought, in a court of equity, to be deemed a full recompence for her jointure. The defendants also exhibited a cross bill against dame Esther, for a discovery of the settlements and wills in her custody; of the value of the lands settled on her by the second jointure; and of the several estates and legacies given her by Sir Hele's will; to which she, by her answer, admitted, that the value of the lands com-

prised in her second jointure, was 233*l. per annum*, besides the woods; and that the pecuniary and specific legacies given her by the will, amounted to 6,400*l.* and upwards; but insisted, that in case the original jointure should be defective, she was entitled to dower, under the statute 27 Henry VIII.

Both these causes were heard before Lord Harcourt in 1713, who declared that the settlement made by Sir Hele Hooke upon dame Esther in 1687, becoming void by the death of Sir Hele without issue, she ought to have a jointure made good to her, according to the articles made on her marriage. And therefore decreed, that the defendants, the heirs at law of Sir Hele, should convey to dame Esther for her jointure, during her life, out of the estate whereof Sir Hele was seised in fee or fee tail, lands of the value of 500*l. per annum*; which lands so to be settled were to be above and besides the premises limited and appointed to her by the deed of 1705; the premises devised to her by Sir Hele's will; and those particular premises which she claimed by virtue of her marriage articles, and the conveyances made by her father in pursuance thereof.

From this decree the defendants appealed to the House of Lords, insisting that the respondent was not entitled to a specific execution of her marriage articles; nor to have her jointure of 500*l. per annum* made good to her, by the aid of a court of equity: for she had received a very ample recompence and satisfaction for the same, by the lands limited to her by the deed of 1705, which were expressly declared to be in recompence of all deficiencies, either in title or value, of any of the lands before settled or agreed to be settled upon her, in consideration of the marriage; and also by the other lands, estates, and moneys

legacies given by Sir Hele's will. And if the 500*l.* *per annum* should likewise be made good to her, she would have, in land and houses, double the value of her intended jointure, besides the 4000*l.* in money, and the specific legacies. That if the respondent ought to be considered as a creditor in a court of equity, because of the breach of covenant in the marriage articles; and if the estate of the appellants ought to be subjected in equity to make good such breach; yet she ought not to take what was settled upon her by the deed of 1705, and what was given her by her husband's will, merely as a gift or bounty; and at the same time insist upon a satisfaction for breach of the covenant; for a voluntary gift or legacy which surmounts the value of a debt, ought to be taken as a satisfaction of such debt, unless where there is an express declaration to the contrary.

On the other side, it was argued, that the respondent's marriage portion, agreed upon by the articles, amounted in money and lands to 6,000*l.*, for which it was thereby agreed she should have 500*l.* *per annum* for her jointure. And though, in respect of her father's bounty and kindness after the marriage, Sir Hele was pleased, when he came of age, to settle an estate for her jointure which amounted to 783*l.* *per annum*, yet the decree had given recompence for no more than 500*l.* *per annum*. That Sir Hele never apprehended or imagined that there was any defect of title, by reason of the want of a common recovery; for if he had, he could easily have supplied that defect; but it was plain he thought a fine sufficient; which fine was accordingly levied at the time of his making the second jointure: and neither the respondent or her father, or those concerned for her, had ever any notice of the title of the appellants in the lifetime

of Sir Hele. That besides the respondent's marriage portion of 6,000*l.*, Sir Hele received by the death of her father and mother to the value of 1,000*l.* more: besides which, the respondent had freely given him the inheritance of her father's real estate, which she was solely entitled to; and also the remainder of his leasehold estate: and therefore it was but reasonable that she should have the benefit of the law respecting her additional jointure of 233*l. per annum*; especially since Sir Hele intended her upon the first settlement 783*l. per annum*, which by the decree was reduced to 500*l. per annum*. That the legacies and bequests in his will were intended by him as a bounty, and not in satisfaction for the defect of her jointure, which he knew nothing of; and therefore considering he had so great a fortune with the respondent, it was hoped, that what he had so left her would be thought no unreasonable bounty; especially since he had left the appellants and their issue the reversion of all his estate of inheritance after the respondent's death, part of which came to him by the respondent. And as the whole of the jointure settled upon her would by virtue of the fine have been good, in case he had not died without issue, there could be no reason why a less jointure should not be made good against collateral heirs. The decree was affirmed.

Eastwood  
v. Vincke,  
2 P. Wms.  
613.

9. A man on his marriage gave a bond to a trustee in the penalty of 4,000 *l.*, conditioned that if he, at any time within four months, should settle and assure on his wife freehold lands of the yearly value of 100 *l.*, then the bond to be void. The husband soon after the marriage made his will, devising thereby freehold and copyhold lands, lying intermixed in Norfolk, to his loving wife and her heirs; and died within four months after the marriage.

Master of the Rolls—"As money and lands are things of a different nature, the one shall not be taken in satisfaction of the other. Whatever is given by a will, is *prima facie* to be intended a bounty and benevolence; and it is remarkable that in the present case the devise is to his loving wife, which is a term of affection. The devise of such of the land as is copyhold, cannot possibly be towards satisfaction of the 100*l. per annum*, which was to be freehold: nay, supposing the whole 88*l. per annum* were freehold, it would not go towards satisfaction of the 100*l. per annum*; not being so expressed. And supposing there were assets to pay all the bond debts, and likewise the charges laid by the will on the land, in such case the 88*l. per annum* should be enjoyed as a bounty and benevolence."

10. A father and son, upon the marriage of the son, covenanted that the lands settled on the son's wife, for her jointure, were worth 800*l. per annum*. The son gave by his will a legacy of 1,000*l.* to his wife. On a bill brought by the wife to have a deficiency in her jointure supplied out of the assets of her husband and of his father, and also for the legacy of 1,000*l.*, Lord Hardwicke held, that the legacy of 1,000*l.* given by the will, ought not to be considered in this case as a satisfaction for the deficiency of her jointure, because that did not arise till after his death, and therefore could not at the time be in his consideration; and as the jointure lands were covenanted by the marriage settlement to be worth so much, clear of all reprises, the testator plainly intended the 1,000*l.* as a bounty for her.

Probert v. Morgan and Clifford,  
1 Alk. 440.

11. John Sheppard having by his marriage articles covenanted that the lands settled on his wife were of the annual value of 1,600*l.* above all incumbrances,

Prime v. Stebbing,  
2 Ves. 409.



made his will in these words : “ I do hereby ratify and confirm my marriage articles ; and I do also give to my wife the lands in A. B. for life.” The wife and her second husband brought a bill to have a deficiency in her jointure lands supplied, which was not disputed ; but it was insisted that the lands devised should be taken instead thereof.

Lord Hardwicke said—“ If a husband upon his marriage, in consideration of a disparity of years, or any other personal consideration, will make a very large settlement ; the parties claiming under it, whether wife or children, are entitled to have it carried into execution, according to the intent. The defendants do not dispute but that, notwithstanding the largeness of the settlement, the plaintiffs are entitled to have any deficiency of jointure, on the foot of the covenant, supplied and made good ; but insist that the Court ought to consider, and according to the rules established, to allow, the lands devised to be either a satisfaction or performance, or at least a part performance of this contract ; and to go so far as they may, in point of value, to make up the deficiency. If the Court can in any case do that, they ought in this. But I am of opinion, that if allowed in this case, I should make a precedent not agreeable to the rules established, and which might be of ill consequence and inconvenience in other cases ; the same rule of justice must therefore prevail in this as in others. The husband was bound by his contract to make the jointure then settled to the value of 1,600 *l.* a year : this was therefore what she had a right to as a purchaser ; and whatever arose from thence was her own estate, which she was entitled to as a debt from her husband to her. Then to consider what he has done by his will. In the very first clause he seems



anxious for, and to take care of her; therefore it cannot be imagined that he intended to prejudice her. The husband's covenant that these lands are of such an annual value, does amount to a covenant on his part to settle and make good to that extent, in case of deficiency, for she might have damages; therefore it has been argued, that when the husband by his will has given lands of the same, or in part of the value, that is so far a performance of his covenant; for that he has, by that act, so far made it up. It is compared to cases where a husband covenants to settle on the eldest son of the marriage, and lets lands descend to him in fee, which is a performance so far: and where a husband covenants, and dies intestate; which was held a leaving to his wife so much, because whether left by will, or to go by the rules of law, it was the same, and a performance, and indeed a strict performance. So where lands descended to an heir at law, who claimed, in place of his ancestor, a sum of money to be laid out in land. But I am of opinion that this differs from all the cases that have been of that kind. It has been considered whether this is to be taken as a question of satisfaction or of performance, and possibly it may be more properly considered as a question of performance, or part performance; but in my opinion this is not strictly any of those cases. It is a question of construction of a will, and intent of the husband therein. All the above mentioned cases have been of implied satisfaction, or presumed performance, where the husband or father has done nothing; as in suffering the lands to descend, without any declaration what way he intended they should go. The Court was there to consider from circumstances, whether there was ground to imply or infer a part performance, the person having said nothing.

but here is a will made, and therefore the question is upon the construction of that will, and the intent to be put upon that construction ; and he could not intend to give these lands thereby, as a satisfaction for what she was in strictness of law entitled to, under the articles ; but clearly as an accumulated bounty, over and above. It is the same as if he had repeated every *iota* in these articles, and said, I also give her such lands. An inquiry must therefore be directed of the deficiency of the jointure ; and whatever it is, must be made good, out of the estate of John Sheppard."

Broughton  
v. Errington,  
7 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 461.

12. Sir B. Broughton, by articles previous to and in consideration of his marriage with Miss Hill, covenanted that in consideration of the said marriage, and of 10,000 *l.* her marriage portion, he would convey certain lands in the county of Chester to trustees, to the use of himself for life, and to secure an annuity of 1,000 *l.* to Miss Hill for her jointure, and in bar of dower ; remainder to his first and other sons in tail ; remainder to his own right heirs. The marriage took effect, and Sir B. Broughton received the 10,000 *l.* portion, but no settlement was ever executed pursuant to the articles. Sir B. Broughton having sold a large estate in Lincolnshire for 27,000 *l.* and having contracted for the purchase of several considerable estates in Hampshire, by his will gave to Lady Broughton a leasehold house in London, in which he resided, with all the furniture thereof ; and also devised to her and her heirs all the estates in Hampshire for the purchase of which he had contracted, or in lieu thereof the whole money arising from the sale of his estates in Lincolnshire. He then devised his estates in Cheshire, which were liable to the jointure, to trustees, to the intent that C. Shrimpton should receive thereof

an annuity of 20 l., and subject thereto, to the use of Sir Thomas Broughton, his heir at law, for life, remainder to his first and other sons in tail male, remainder over.

Upon the death of Sir B. Broughton, Lady Broughton entered on the estates thus devised to her, and the heir at law having refused to pay her jointure, she filed a bill, praying a specific execution of her marriage articles, so far as related to her jointure; to which the heir at law put in his answer, insisting that what was given by the will to Lady Broughton, was in satisfaction for what she was entitled to under the articles; and that she could not have both provisions.

The cause was heard before Lord Bathurst, who decreed that Lady Broughton was entitled to have her jointure, agreeable to the articles.

From this decree an appeal was brought in the House of Lords by Sir Thomas Broughton; and on behalf of the appellant it was argued, that though a devise, when considered by itself, may carry with it the presumption of an intended bounty, yet when a testator has covenanted by articles to make a provision for his wife and children, such a presumption is liable to be controlled by a still stronger presumption, that he intended the devise as a satisfaction for the performance of those articles; and especially where the devise was so great in value, as to include both a satisfaction, and a bounty. This general presumption, that where two provisions were made for a wife or a child, the testator intended the one to be a satisfaction for the other (which general presumption was grounded on the known custom of the realm, to give the bulk of the family estate to the eldest son or heir at law, with competent provisions for the wife and younger children), was peculiarly strong in this case,

where, from the heavy charges already laid on the family estate, the only brother and heir would be unable to maintain the antient credit and figure of the family. That the lands alone devised by the will were of much greater value than the rent-charge claimed under the articles ; and thereby all objections were obviated which might have arisen from the provision under the will not being of the same nature with that under the articles. That from the testator's having omitted any mention of the articles, although they must have been present to his memory, while he was securing another rent-charge to C. Shrimpton, and from the manner in which he devised those estates to the appellant, subject to the rent-charge, a strong presumption arose, that he considered the devise and bequests to his widow, as an ample satisfaction for the articles. Lastly, that the devise of the estate to Sir Thomas for life, was inconsistent with the claim of the rent-charge under the articles ; inasmuch as Sir Thomas, from the nature of his interest, was incapable of making any legal conveyance of the rent-charge so claimed.

On the other side it was contended, that every devise or bequest in a will, *prima facie* imports a bounty ; and therefore, in order to induce a court of equity to consider the bequests in this will in favour of the Lady, as a satisfaction for her jointure of 1,000*l.* *per annum*, or as a performance of the marriage articles entered into by Sir Bryan, it was incumbent on the appellants to show that it was the testator's intention, when he made his will, to give her a satisfaction by that will for or in lieu of her jointure ; or to perform the marriage articles on his part. And such intention must appear, either from the express words of the will, or the clear and manifest intention of the

testator, appearing upon the face of it ; or be drawn by necessary implication therefrom : but no such intention appeared in any part of Sir Bryan's will ; rather the contrary. In order to make a devise or bequest a satisfaction for a collateral demand, or performance of a prior contract, it must be *ejusdem generis*, and not land for money, or money for land ; or must at least be of such certain and known value and estimation, and so far of the same nature with the thing to be satisfied therewith, as to appear indisputably to be equivalent or superior, not only in gross value, but in annual income, to the debt or demand, or thing to be performed ; but none of these circumstances attended the devises or bequests which in the present case were contended to be a satisfaction for the respondent's jointure, or a performance of Sir Bryan's marriage articles. That the annuity of 1,000*l.* intended to be settled on her by those articles, was intended to be a jointure for her, and declared to be in bar or satisfaction of dower, and therefore ought, in a court of equity, as well as law, to be considered as coming in the place of dower, and having the same privileges, force, and effect as a right of dower ; and neither courts of law or equity admitted an averment of a collateral satisfaction for dower. That Sir Bryan not having obtained any conveyance of the Hampshire estates, or paid the purchase money for them at the time of making his will, could not devise to the respondent the legal interest therein ; and therefore the devise to her was in fact a devise of the right to complete the purchase, and a gift of mere personal estate, or so much money as he had agreed to give for the purchase of the Hampshire estate, and appeared to be so considered by him from the penning of his will ; but a bequest of personal estate could

not be averred to be, or considered as, a satisfaction for a jointure in lands, or a rent-charge upon a real estate. That in order to make Sir Bryan's will a performance of his marriage articles, it must appear upon the face of it, and at all events, a complete and full performance thereof, and to have been so intended by him; but the very reverse appeared; for the devise of the Cheshire estate in his will must have been considered by him as subject to the articles, or springing out of the ultimate remainder in fee reserved to him by those articles: and if he had had any son by his lady, such son, as well as the mother, would have been entitled to call for a specific performance of the articles; and the will could not be set up as a satisfaction thereof against the son, nor could such son have insisted that the devises and bequests in the will to his mother, were a performance of the articles, so far as related to her; nor, if a conveyance and settlement of the estate had been actually made and executed, pursuant to the articles, could any person entitled under that settlement have set up such devises and bequests to the respondent, in Sir Bryan's will, as a discharge or satisfaction of her incumbrance or rent-charge upon his estate. That if Sir Bryan had intended to devise his Cheshire estate to his brother, and the other devisees in remainder, discharged from his lady's jointure, he would most probably have expressly declared such intention by his will; as it appeared from many circumstances, that at the time of making his will, he had not forgot, but well remembered, that he had before settled such a jointure on her: and his bequeathing her his house in Brook Street, and his plate, furniture, horses, and carriages, proved his intention that she should, after his death, live in a manner, and at an expence

suitable to her rank as his widow; and therefore he must have intended, by the devise in question, to increase her jointure, in order to answer that purpose. The decree was affirmed.

13. Where a freehold estate is devised to a woman expressly for her jointure, and in bar and satisfaction of a jointure settled on her, either before or after marriage; in such case the widow cannot have both, for that would contradict the will; but she is allowed to make her election.

Unless so expressed, and then the Widow has an Election.

14. Robert Pitt, by articles in consideration of marriage, agreed to lay out 10,000*l.* in the purchase of land, to be settled to the use of the plaintiff Harriet, his intended wife, for her life, for her jointure. The marriage took place; afterwards, the father of R. Pitt gave him an estate for life, with power to grant a rent-charge of 400 *l.* a year to any woman he should marry, for her jointure. In pursuance of this power, Robert Pitt granted a rent-charge of 400 *l.* a year to his wife, to commence after his decease, in satisfaction of part of her jointure. Three days after, he conveyed a leasehold estate of 900 *l.* a year in trust for his wife; and by his will he confirmed the grant of the rent-charge, and the conveyance of the leasehold settled on his wife, by way of addition or augmentation, and in full compensation of her jointure.

Grandison v. Pitt, 2 Ab. Eq. 392.

It was held, that this was a satisfaction of the jointure provided by the articles, according to the intention of Robert Pitt; that the plaintiff should make her election, whether to have the rent-charge of 400 *l.* and the leasehold, or the 10,000 *l.* laid out in lands.

15. Although a devise be not expressly mentioned to be in bar of a jointure, yet if it should appear from

A Devise sometimes held a Satisfaction.



Tit. 6. c. 5.  
§ 26.

any circumstance in the will to have been the intention of the testator, that such devise was meant as a satisfaction for the jointure; a court of equity would, I presume, reason by analogy from the cases in which a devise has been held a satisfaction for dower, and compel the jointress to make her election.

16. There is one case where there was a deficiency in a jointure, and the husband having devised lands to the jointress for her life, and also a sum of money, such devise and bequest were held to be a satisfaction for the deficiency of the jointure.

Montague v.  
Maxwell,  
4 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 598.  
2 Ab. Eq.  
421.

17. Lord Montague, on the marriage of his son Francis, settled estates to the use of the lady for her life, for her jointure; the lands so settled were covenanted to be of the yearly value of 1,000*l*. After the death of Lord Montague, the honor and estate descended to Francis, who devised other lands of about 500*l*. a year to his wife for her life, together with a legacy of 500*l*., and part of his household goods; afterwards, Francis Lord M. being minded to make some further provision for his lady, revoked the uses of some part of his estates, and limited the same to trustees, in trust to raise 10,000*l*. for her. By a codicil he devised to her an annuity of 500*l*. a year during her life. Upon his death his widow brought her bill in Chancery, to have a deficiency in her jointure made up. Lord Cowper declared that the legacies, which were admitted to be of greater value than the deficiency in the jointure, ought to be taken in satisfaction of the breach of covenant.

ante, § 11.

18. It is observable that this case was prior to that of *Prime v. Stebbing*, and is not reconcileable to it. The decree appears to have been made upon the ground, that Francis Lord M. was a very weak man, and under the influence of his wife. For upon an



**appeal** to the House of Lords, it was ordered, that the Court of Chancery should direct an issue to try whether Lord M. was sane at the time of the execution of the codicil; and a verdict was found that he was not of sound mind then.

## TITLE VIII.

### ESTATE FOR YEARS.

#### CHAP. I.

#### *Of the Origin and Nature of Estates for Years.*

#### CHAP. II.

#### *Of the Incidents to Estates for Years.*

---

#### CHAP. I.

#### *Of the Origin and Nature of Estates for Years.*

- |                                        |                                          |
|----------------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Estates less than Freehold.</i>  | 20. <i>Estates for Years may com-</i>    |
| 2. <i>Origin of Estates for Years.</i> | <i>mence in futuro.</i>                  |
| 4. <i>Description of.</i>              | 21. <i>And be assigned before Entry.</i> |
| 11. <i>Introduction of Long Terms.</i> | 24. <i>May determine by Proviso.</i>     |
| 12. <i>A Tenant for Years has no</i>   | 25. <i>Are Chattels Real.</i>            |
| <i>Seisin.</i>                         | 26. <i>And vest in Executors.</i>        |
| 14. <i>But must make an Entry.</i>     | 35. <i>A Freehold cannot be derived</i>  |
| 17. <i>An Entry before the Lease</i>   | <i>from a Term.</i>                      |
| <i>begins is a Disseisin.</i>          |                                          |

---

#### SECTION 1.

Estates less  
than Free-  
hold.

**H**AVING treated of the different freehold estates, we now come to consider of those estates or interests in land that are less than freehold; of which there are four sorts: 1. Estates for years. 2. Estates at will. 3. Tenancies from year to year. 4. Estates at sufferance.

Origin of  
Estates for  
Years.

2. It has been stated, that after the conquest the estates of the great lords were cultivated by their villeins. In course of time the lords adopted the

practice of allowing them to occupy parts of their lands at will, yielding a return of corn, hay, or other portion of their crops ; as the precariousness of this tenure was a strong bar to the industry of the tenants, it became customary to grant them the lands for a certain number of years, by which they were enfranchised. Still their interest was infinitely inferior to an estate of freehold. Lit. § 205.

3. Estates for years were become common in Bracton's time, as appears from the following passage :  
—*Poterit enim quis terram alicui concedere ad terminum annorum, et ille eandem infra terminum illum alteri dare.* And a tenant for years was called *firmarius*. Bract. 27 a.

4. "Tenant for term of years (says Littleton, § 58.) is where a man letteth lands or tenements to another for term of certain years, after the number of years that is accorded between the lessor and the lessee, and the lessee entereth by force of the lease ; then is he tenant for years." Description of.

5. If an agreement be made for the possession of lands, but for half a year, or a quarter, or any less time, the lessee is considered as tenant for years, and is so styled in all legal proceedings ; a year being the shortest period of which the law will in this case take notice. Lit. § 67.

6. Where an estate is limited to a person for 21 years, if J. S. shall so long live, it is an estate for years only ; not an estate for the life of J. S., because there is a fixed period beyond which it cannot last. 1 Inst. 45 b.

7. Where a person devises lands to his executors, for payment of his debts, or until his debts are paid, the executors only take an estate for so many years as are necessary to raise the sum required. It is the same where an estate is devised till such time as a 1 Inst. 42 a.  
8 Rep. 96 a.  
1 P. Wms. 509.  
Corbet's Case,

4 Rep. 81 b. particular sum shall be raised out of the rents and  
1 P. Wms. profits thereof.  
518.

1 Inst. 45 b. 8. Lord Coke says, an estate for years is frequently called a term, *terminus*, which signifies, not only the period of time for which it is to continue, but also the estate and interest that passes for that period.

Tit. 32. c. 5. And every estate or term for years must have a certain beginning, and a certain end, which must be ascertained at the time when the estate is created, either by the express limitation of the parties, or by a reference to some collateral act, which may, with equal certainty, measure its continuance.

Lit. § 132. 9. There is a tenure between the lessor and his lessee for years, to which fealty is incident; and also a privity of estate between them.

Gilb. Ten. 34. 10. Notwithstanding the permanent interest of tenants for years, yet their possession was esteemed of so little consequence, that they were rather considered as the bailiffs or servants of the lord, than as having any estate in the land. Their interests might

1 Inst. 46 a. be defeated by a recovery in a real action; because the recoveror was supposed to come in by a title paramount, therefore not bound by the contracts of  
Tit. 36. c. 11. the prior possessor; this was altered by the statute of Gloucester 1 Edw. I. and the statute 21 Hen. VIII. by which tenants for years are enabled to falsify recoveries had by collusion.

Introduction  
of Long  
Terms.

1 Inst. 45 b.

11. While estates for years might be defeated by a recovery, it is no wonder that they were usually very short. Lord Coke, upon the authority of the *Mirror*, says, that by the ancient law, no lease was allowed for more than 40 years; because a longer possession, especially when given without livery, declaring the nature and duration of the estate created, might tend to defeat the inheritance. Sir

W. Blackstone observes that this law, if it ever existed, was soon antiquated; for in Madox's collection of ancient charters there are some leases for years of an early date, which considerably exceed that period: that terms for 300 and 1000 years were certainly in use in the time of Edw. III., and probably in that of Edw. I.; and it appeared certain that after the statutes by which terms for years were protected from the operation of feigned recoveries, long terms were frequently created, for the purpose of defrauding the lord's right of wardship, relief, and other feudal incidents. In modern times they have been still more extensively introduced in mortgages and family settlements.

12. A tenant for years is not said to be seised of the lands, the possession not being given to him by the ceremony of livery of seisin. Nor does the mere delivery of a lease for years, vest any estate in the lessee, but only gives him a right of entry on the land. When he has actually entered, the estate becomes vested in him, and he is then possessed, not properly of the land, but of the term for years; the seisin of the freehold still remaining in the lessor.

A Tenant for Years has no Seisin.  
Lit. § 59.  
1 Inst. 200 b.

Gilb. Ten. 34.

13. This distinction between the possession of the tenant for years, and the seisin of the freehold, was fully established in Bracton's time:—*Item dare potest quis terram quam alius tenet ad terminum annorum, salvo tamen firmario, termino suo: quia iste possessiones sese compatiuntur in una re; quod unus habeat liberum tenementum, et alius terminum.* And it has been stated that the possession of a lessee for years is considered as the possession of the person entitled to a freehold.

Tit. 1. § 26.

But must  
make an  
Entry.

1 Inst. 46 b.  
51 b. 270 a.

14. No estate for years can be created at common law, without an actual entry made by the person to whom the land is demised. For although the grantor has done every thing necessary on his part to complete the contract, so that he can never after avoid it ; yet till there is a transmutation of possession, by the actual entry of the lessee, it wants the chief mark and indication of his consent, without which it might be unwarrantable to adjudge him in actual possession, to all intents and purposes: for this reason the law does not cast the immediate and actual possession on him, till he enters ; neither has the lessor a reversion to grant, till such entry.

1 Inst. 46 b.

15. Upon the execution of the lease, the lessee acquires an interest, called an *interesse termini* ; which he may at any time reduce into possession, by an actual entry. This may be made, not only by the lessor himself, but, in case of his death, by his executors, or administrators.

Tit. 11. c. 4.

16. It should however be observed, that in consequence of the operation of the statute of uses, an estate for years may now be created, without an entry.

An Entry  
before the  
Lease begins  
is a Disseisin.

17. If the lessee enters before the time when the estate for years is to commence, it is a disseisin ; and no continuance of possession, after the commencement of the term, will purge it, or alter the estate of the lessee. Such entry of the lessee, before the commencement of the term, will not however devert, or turn such term to a right ; so that the lessee of the term may still assign it over.

Hennings v.  
Brabazon,  
1 Ley. 45.

18. A. made a lease to B., on the 23d September, to hold to him for 21 years from Michaelmas following. The lessee entered before Michaelmas, and

continued in possession for some years ; then the lessor re-entered : the lessee being out of possession, assigned over the term to the plaintiff's lessor, who brought an ejectment. Judgement was given for the plaintiff ; and the Court held, That the term not being to begin till Michaelmas, this was till then a future interest ; that the lessee's entry before, was a disseisin, not a possession by virtue of the lease.

19. Where the commencement of an estate for years is limited from a time past, and the lessee was in possession prior to that period, it shall be intended that he entered and occupied before, by agreement ; therefore it is not a disseisin.

Walter v. Champian, Cro. Eliz. 906.

20. An estate for years may be created to commence *in futuro*, though an estate of freehold cannot. For where an estate for years is created to commence *in futuro*, the freehold is not thereby put in abeyance, but still continues in the lessor ; so that he is capable of answering the *præcipes* of strangers, which may be brought against him. And before the abolition of military tenures, he was liable to perform the services which were due for the feud.

Estates for Years may commence *in futuro*.

21. Where an estate for years is granted to commence *in futuro*, it cannot of course be executed by an immediate entry, as that would be a disseisin. It is therefore an *interesse termini* ; but still the lessee may assign it over : even if a stranger enters by wrong, yet such a grant will transfer the lessee's power of entry, and right of reducing the estate into possession. For till the entry of the lessee, the estate is not executed, but remains in the same plight as it was when the lease was made ; so that no intermediate act, either of the lessor, or of a stranger, can divest or disturb it ; because whoever comes to the possession, whether by right or by wrong, takes it subject to such future

And be assigned before Entry.

ante, § 15.

charge, which the lessee may execute whenever he thinks fit, as by a title prior and paramount to all such intermediate violations of the possession.

Wheeler v.  
Thorough-  
good, Cro.  
Eliz. 127.  
1 Leon 118.

22. A person made a lease for years, to commence at a future period ; after the expiration of that time, but before any entry by the lessee, the lessor being still in possession, the lessee granted over his term and interest. Resolved, that the grant was good ; because the *interesse termini* of the lessee was not divested or turned to a right, but continued in him in the same manner as when it was first granted ; and was so transferred over to another, who by his entry might reduce it into possession whenever he pleased.

Saffin's Case,  
Tit. 35. c. 10.

Cro. Eliz. 15.  
5 Rep. 124 a.

23. If however a person entitled to an estate for years, to commence *in futuro*, once enters, and is put out of possession, he cannot afterwards grant over his term to a stranger : for by his entry the estate for years was actually executed ; and, being after that defeated by the entry of a stranger, the lessee has only a right of entry left in him ; which the policy of the law will not suffer him to transfer over to a stranger, no more than a right of action ; lest such transfer should encourage maintenance.

May deter-  
mine by  
Proviso.

1 Inst. 214 b.

24. Though an estate of freehold cannot be made to cease by the direction of the parties, but must be taken from the person in whom it is vested, by means somewhat similar to those by which it was given to him ; yet it is otherwise in the case of an estate for years : for that may be made to cease by a proviso in the conveyance itself, upon the performance of any previous act. The practice in conveyancing has therefore long been, where terms for years are created, to insert a proviso, that when the trusts of the term are satisfied, the term itself shall cease and determine,



25. Estates for years are considered in law as chattels real, being an interest in real property, of which they have one quality, immobility, which denominates them real; but want the other, namely, a sufficient legal indeterminate duration; the utmost period for which they can last being fixed and determined.

Are Chattels Real.

26. In consequence of this principle estates for years do not descend to the heir of the person who dies possessed of them, but vest in his executors or administrators, like any other chattel; and although lands are frequently demised for 500 and 1000 years, yet the succession continues the same.

And vest in Executors.

27. If a lease for years be made to a bishop, parson, or other sole corporation, and his successors, yet it will go to the executors of the lessee; because a term for years being a chattel, the law allows none but the personal representatives to succeed thereto; nor can this mode of succession to a chattel be altered or controlled by any limitation of the party. The King however, by his prerogative, may transmit a chattel to his successors.

1 Inst. 9 a.  
90 a.

28. By the statute of frauds a husband may administer to his deceased wife; and is entitled for his own benefit to all her chattels real. The husband of a woman possessed of a chattel real is also entitled to dispose of it during his life; if he does not execute this power, and his wife survives him, it will belong to her, and not to his representatives. But if the husband be an alien, he will not acquire any right to a term of years belonging to his wife.

29 Cha. II.  
c. 3. § 25.  
1 Inst. 351 a.  
n. 1.

Anon.  
9 Mod. 43.

Id. 104.  
Tit. 5. c. 1.  
§ 28.

29. Estates for years pass from executor to executor, in *infinitum*; but whenever the course of representation from executor to executor is interrupted by one administration, it then becomes necessary for the ordinary to commit administration afresh, of the

2 Comm.  
506.

goods of the person who was last possessed of the term, in his own right, not administered by the former executor. A limited, or special administration only, may also be granted, viz. of certain specific effects; and it is a common practice to obtain a special administration of a term for years.

Cases and  
Opinions,  
V. 1. 399.

30. Where a person appoints two or more executors, if only one of them proves the will, he alone will become entitled to any terms for years whereof the testator died possessed, and may assign them accordingly.

Dyer, 23 b.  
1 Ab. Eq.  
319.  
1 Atk. 460.

31. Where there are several executors, who all prove the will, they have a joint and several interest in all the goods and chattels of the testator; therefore a disposition, by one of them only, of a term for years, is good. But one administrator cannot convey an interest, so as to bind the other.

Went. Ex.  
34.

32. An executor may assign a term for years, before he has proved the will: the will must however be afterwards proved in the ecclesiastical court having jurisdiction over the place where the lands lie; otherwise it will have no effect as to the term.

Idem, 226.

33. Where a term for years is specifically devised, the assent of the executor is necessary; but if the legatee disposes of the term at any future period, the assent of the executor will be presumed.

Ewer v.  
Corbett,  
2 P. Wms.  
148.

34. A purchaser of a term for years, from an executor, is not bound to see to the application of the purchase money; even though the term be charged with the payment of a particular debt, or specifically bequeathed. Because terms for years are subject to the payment of all debts, in the first instance.

A Freehold  
cannot be  
derived from  
a Term.

35. An estate of freehold cannot be derived from a term for years. Thus, where a rent was granted for life, out of a long term for years; it was resolved to

be a good charge, as long as the term lasted; but that it was only a chattel, and not a freehold; for it was repugnant to have a freehold out of a term for years.

36. Estates from year to year will be treated of in the next title.

## TITLE VIII.

## ESTATE FOR YEARS.

## CHAP. II.

*Of the Incidents to Estates for Years.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>1. <i>Tenants for Years entitled to Estovers.</i></p> <p>2. <i>But not allowed to commit Waste.</i></p> <p>12. <i>Accidents by Fire.</i></p> <p>14. <i>Clause without Impeachment of Waste.</i></p> <p>19. <i>When entitled to Emblements.</i></p> <p>21. <i>Estates for Years subject to Debts.</i></p> <p>22. <i>Of Crown Debts.</i></p> | <p>25. <i>May be limited for Life with a Remainder over.</i></p> <p>26. <i>But not entailed.</i></p> <p>29. <i>Merged by a Union with the Freehold.</i></p> <p>45. <i>And also by Surrender.</i></p> <p>46. <i>Equity relieves against Merger.</i></p> <p>49. <i>Alienable.</i></p> <p>50. <i>How forfeited.</i></p> |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

Tenants for Years entitled to Estovers.  
1 Inst. 41 b.

**EVERY** tenant for years has incident to, and inseparable from his estate, unless restrained by special agreement, the same estovers, to which tenants for life are entitled.

But not allowed to commit Waste.

2. But a tenant for years having an interest much inferior to an estate for life, has only a right to the temporary and annual profits of the land; and is therefore restrained, as well as tenant for life, from cutting down timber trees, or committing any other kind of waste.

Lit. § 71.

1 Inst. 57 a.

3. Tenant for years is also punishable for permissive waste: he is therefore bound to keep all houses and other buildings upon the land in proper and tenantable repair, by keeping the roof in such a state as to prevent the rain from falling on the timbers. But

Lord Coke says, if a house be ruinous at the time of the lease made, and the lessee suffers it to fall down, he is not punishable; for in that case he is not bound by law to repair it. Yet if he cuts down timber on the land, and repairs it, he may well justify. Id. 54 b.

4. Lord Coke also says, if tenant for years builds a new house, it is waste; and if he suffers it to be wasted, it is a new waste. The first of these propositions has been frequently contradicted. And Roll lays it down, that if a lessee for years builds a new house upon the land, where there was not any before, this is not waste, for it was for the benefit of the lessor. 1 Inst. 53 a.  
2 Roll. Ab. 815.  
Hob. 234.

5. The statutes of Marlbridge and Gloucester extend to tenants for years: so that they are liable to the same actions, and the same penalties, for waste committed, as tenants for life are. Tit. 3. c. 2.  
§ 28.  
Attersol v. Stevens,  
1 Taunt. 183.

6. If a woman possessed of a term for years, takes husband, who commits waste, and the wife dies; the husband shall be charged in an action of waste; because by the marriage he became entitled to the term. 1 Inst. 54 a.

7. It is enacted by the statute 11 Hen. VI. c. 5. that where a tenant for years assigns over his estate, and continues in the receipt of the profits, an action of waste shall lie against him. In a case upon this statute, in 36 Eliz., it was resolved, 1. That every assignee of the first lessee, mediate or immediate, was within the act. For the statute was made to suppress fraud and deceit; therefore should be taken beneficially. 2. That the person in remainder was within the act, as well as the person in reversion; because in equal mischief. Booth's Case,  
5 Rep. 77.

8. Where there is tenant for years, remainder for life, remainder in fee, and the tenant for years commits waste; though the remainder-man for life can- Mollineux  
v. Powell,  
cited 3 P.  
Wms. 267.

Tit. 3. c. 2.  
§ 35.

not bring an action of waste, as not having the inheritance, yet he is entitled in equity to an injunction. If the waste be of a trivial nature; and *a fortiori* if it be meliorating waste, as by building on the premises, the court will not injoin; nor if the reversioner or remainder-man in fee be not made a party, who possibly may approve of the waste.

9. The Court of Chancery will not entertain a bill against a tenant for years, after he has assigned his term, with the consent of the lessor, for an account of timber cut down by him; and without praying an injunction.

Jesus Coll.  
v. Bloome,  
3 Atk. 262.

10. A bill was brought for an account of timber cut down by the defendant, and of the profit of some stones, carried off the premises by him also, while tenant; he having afterwards assigned his term, with the consent of the plaintiffs, his lessors, to a third person: and consequently no prayer for an injunction to stay waste.

Lord Hardwicke.—“The question is, whether a bill can be brought here against a tenant, after the estate is gone out of him, for an account of waste committed, where there is no prayer of an injunction. I am of opinion that such a bill is improper, nor has any authority been cited to support it. Waste is a tort, and punishable as such, and the party has also a remedy for the trees cut down, by an action of trover. The staying waste is a specific remedy; and while the lessee continues tenant, it is to prevent a mischief for which, when done, an adequate satisfaction by way of damages cannot in many instances be given. This is the ground of the jurisdiction of this Court in such cases; and the Court having such ground, will, in order to prevent a double suit, and as incident to the other relief, decree an account of the timber felled,

or the waste done. This is a general principle to prevent suits ; and as some decree must be made, the Court will make a complete one. But without such a foundation there is no precedent of the Court's decreeing damages ; and I think it would be very improper to do it, as it would tend to great vexation and oppression of tenants : and I am glad no such precedent is to be found ; for the cases cited do not come up to the present. In 2 P. Wms, 240. it is not clear that no injunction was prayed. If there was, then it is but a common case ; if there was not, the plaintiff was entitled to a moiety of the timber against the defendant, and therefore proper matter of account only between them. As to 1 P. Wms. 406, the bill was against an executor for an account of assets ; and in a case of a mine, which differs from timber, or other waste, it being a sort of trade, and proper for an account, not trover : and the Court has decreed accounts in cases of mines, which they would not do in any other, for that very reason ; and because a better remedy can be given here than at law, by decreeing inspections under ground, &c. And here, if the plaintiffs have a right, they may have their action of trover."

*Whitfield v. Bewett, Tit. 3. c. 2. § 44.*

11. If a lessee for years commits waste and dies, 2 Inst. 302. no action of waste will lie against his executors or administrators. But the executors or administrators of a tenant for years are punishable for waste done while they are in possession.

12. Tenants for years are exempted by the statute 6 Anne, which has been already stated, from all actions for damages on account of accidental fire. *Accidents by Fire. Tit. 3. c. 2. § 83.*

13. In a modern case, where there was a covenant in a lease for years of a house, to rebuild, without any exception ; and the house was burnt down by acci- *Bullock v. Dommitt, 6 Term R. 650.*

dent; it was held, that the lessee was bound to rebuild it.

Clause with-  
out Impeach-  
ment of  
Waste.

Tit. 3. c. 2.  
§ 55.

14. Where the clause, without impeachment of waste, is inserted in a lease for years, it will have the same effect as where it is inserted in a conveyance of an estate for life. And the Court of Chancery will in general restrain the import of it in the same manner.

15. Thus a tenant for years, without impeachment of waste, will not be allowed to dig and carry away the soil, for the purpose of making bricks.

Ep. London  
v. Webb,  
1 P. Wms.  
527.

16. The Bishop of London made a long lease of some lands at Ealing in Middlesex, without impeachment of waste; of which there were about twenty years unexpired. The lessee agreed with some brick-makers, that they might dig and carry away the soil. The Bishop applied to the Court of Chancery for an injunction; which was granted.

17. The Court of Chancery will not permit a tenant for years, without impeachment of waste, to fell timber, just before the expiration of his lease.

Abraham  
v. Bubb,  
2 Freem. 63.

18. A lease was made by a bishop for 21 years, without impeachment of waste, of lands upon which there were several timber trees. The tenant had not cut down any of them, till about half a year before the expiration of his term; but then began to fell them. Upon an application to the Court of Chancery, an injunction was granted against him. For although he might have felled trees every year, from the beginning of the term, and then they would have been growing up gradually: yet it was unreasonable that he should let them grow till near the end of his term, and then cut them all down.

When enti-  
tled to Em-  
blements.

19. Where the determination of an estate for years is certain, as where lands are let for a certain number



of years, the tenant is not entitled to emblements; because it was his own folly to sow, when he knew he could not reap. But when the determination of an estate for years depends on an uncertain event; as where a tenant for life lets for years; or where lands are let for a term of years, determinable upon the death of a person; there the tenant will be entitled to emblements, in the same manner as a tenant for life.

Tit. 2. c. 1.  
§ 23.  
1 Inst. 55 b.

20. If however an estate for years determines by the act of the tenant himself; as if he commits a forfeiture; he will not be entitled to emblements.

Idem.

21. Estates for years being chattel interests, and vesting in executors or administrators, are subject to the payment of simple contract debts; and are also liable to be sold by execution, for the payment of debts due by judgement. But if a term for years be assigned to a *bonâ fide* purchaser, before execution is actually sued out, and delivered to the sheriff; it cannot afterwards be taken by a creditor.

Estates for  
Years subject  
to Debts.

Tit. 14. § 69;

22. Estates for years are also subject to the payment of all debts due to the crown, while such estates continue in the possession of the debtor. But it has been long settled that a *bonâ fide* assignment of an estate for years, before any execution awarded by the crown, is good.

Of Crown  
Debts.

23. Sir W. Fleetwood being possessed of a house, for a term of years, was appointed receiver general of the court of wards, and entered into bonds to the crown to render a yearly account. Having become indebted by reason of his office, he afterwards sold the house. The question was, whether this house was extendible for the debt? It was, resolved that the sale should bind the crown, because it was but a chattel, and there was no covin in the case. That a

Fleetwood's  
Case,  
8 Rep. 171.

sale *bonâ fide* of chattels was good, after judgment; but not after execution awarded. And Lord Coke said, that a receiver or other accountant shall not be in a worse case than a felon or traitor, who may, after felony or treason, and before conviction, sell *bonâ fide*, for his sustenance, his chattels, be they real or personal.

8 Rep. 171 a.

24. It was resolved in an old case, where the king's debtor took a lease, to him and his wife for years, and before execution the husband died, that execution might be sued against the wife. For it was the act of the husband, who had power over the term at the time of his death. And his wife came into it without valuable consideration; and *quodammodo* continued in of the interest of her husband.

Vide 2 Roll.  
Ab. 157.

May be limited for Life with a Remainder over. Dyer, 74. pl. 18.

25. By the old law, a gift of a term for years, like that of any other chattel, for an hour, was a gift of the whole estate and interest; therefore it was held that there could be no limitation of a term for years, after an estate for life was created out of it. This was however soon altered, and it has been long settled that a term for years may be limited to a person for life, with a limitation over to any number of persons for life, provided they are all in existence at the time.

But not entailed.

Dyer, 7 a. pl. 8.

26. Terms for years are not capable of being entailed. 1. Because they are not within the statute *De Donis*, not being estates of inheritance. 2. Because if a *quasi* entail of a term were allowed, it would be unalienable; as no fine or recovery can be had of a term. So that the disposition of a term for years to a person and the heirs of his body, is a disposal of the entire interest in the term.

8 Rep. 87 a.

27. A distinction has been made by Lord Coke between a limitation of a term in gross, or subsisting term, to a man and the heirs of his body, and a similar

limitation of a term *de novo*. In the first case the residue of the term will vest in the executors of the person to whom it is so limited. But in the latter case he was of opinion that the term would only continue as long as the person to whom it was limited had heirs of his body; and that upon failure of such heirs, the term would cease. This distinction has been long since exploded; and it is now settled, that where a term for years is limited to a person and the heirs of his body, it will continue, though the person to whom it is so limited should die without issue.

Leventhorpe v. Ashby, 1 Roll. Ab. 831.

Leonard Lovie's Case, 10 Rep. 78.

28. A. Pile by indenture demised lands to a trustee, his executors and administrators, for 99 years, in trust for himself and his wife for their lives, and the life of the survivor; and after the death of the survivor, in trust for the heirs of their two bodies; and in default of such issue, then in trust for the heirs of the survivor. They had issue one son. The husband died; afterwards the son died, an infant; the mother administered to her husband and son; and assigned the term to the defendant Rod. The question was, who was entitled to the trust of this term? whether it belonged to the plaintiff, who was the heir at law of A. Pile, or to the defendant Rod, as assignee of the wife? It was decreed that it belonged to Rod, and had not ceased.

Hayter v. Rod, 1 P. Wms. 360.

29. Where a term for years becomes vested in the person who is seised of the freehold, by which there is a union of the two interests in one person, at the same time, the term merges in the freehold, and becomes extinct.

Merged by a Union with the Freehold.

Dyer, 112. pl. 49.

30. Tenant *pour auter vie* made a lease for years, and died, living the *cestui que vie*; it was agreed, that by this the lessee for years, having the possession, became occupant; and the accession of the freehold

Chamberlain v. Ewer, Bulst. 12.

merged his estate for years. But if in that case the lessee for years had made a lease at will, and then the tenant *pour auter vie* had died, the tenant at will would have been the occupant; consequently the term for years, being in another person, would not be merged; there being no union of the term and the freehold in one person.

Salmon v.  
Swann,  
Cro. Ja. 619.

31. A. seised in fee, demised to B. for 100 years, to begin at a future time; and before that time, made a lease to C. for 21 years, to begin presently. B. before the commencement of his term, assigned it back to A., who afterwards granted a rent-charge, for which the grantee distrained C. The question was, whether the future term was merged in the inheritance, or if it had any existence in A. so that he might thereout grant the rent; for then it would avoid the second lease, being prior to it, and by consequence be liable to the payment of the rent-charge. It was resolved that the first term was merged.

1 Inst. 332 b.

32. Lord Coke has laid it down as a general rule, that a man cannot have a term for years in his own right, and a freehold in *auter droit*, to consist together; as if a man, lessee for years, takes the feme lessor to wife, the term is merged.

Lichden v.  
Winsmore,  
1 Roll. Ab.  
934.

33. This case appears to have been denied; for in 21 Ja. I. it was held, that if a person was lessee for years, reversion for life to A., a married woman; and the lessee granted his estate to the husband, and after the feme died; the term was not merged, because the husband had the estates in several rights; for the freehold was in the wife, and the husband only seised in her right.

34. Where the union of the two estates is not occasioned by the act of the termor, but by an act in law, there will be no merger of the term.

35. A man possessed of a term for years, married; afterwards the inheritance descended on his wife. It was held, that the term for years of the husband was not merged; because the descent was an act of law, which the husband could not prevent; therefore it should not turn to his prejudice. Platt v. Sleap, Cro. Ja. 275.

36. It was said in the preceding case, that if the husband had issue by his wife, after the inheritance descended to her, so as thereby he became tenant by the curtesy, and acquired a freehold in his own right, the term would be merged. 1 Bulst. 118.

37. It is laid down by Roll, that if a person having a term for years as executor, purchases the reversion, this extinguishes the lease for years, though he has it in *auter droit*; but it shall be assets. In Brooke's Ab. it is said that the lease is not extinct, as to the creditors of the testator. 1 Roll Ab. 934. pl. 9.  
Tit. Executor, pl. 174.  
Extinguishment, pl. 57.

38. Lord Holt has said, that where a man has a term as executor, and purchases the inheritance, the term is not extinguished; for that would be a wrong to creditors, and amount to a *devastavit*. It should however be observed, that as far as the interest of the executor, who purchases the inheritance, extends; and as between his heir and personal representative; the term, upon principle, appears to be merged. And Lord Holt observed, that things shall be extinguished between the parties, which yet still remain, and have existence, as to strangers. 1 Ld. Raym. 520.  
Idem.

39. It has been said, that the descent of the inheritance on a person, having a term of years in the land, as executor, would merge the term. But Lord Chief Baron Gilbert doubts this, and says, that as well in the case of a purchase, as of a descent, all agreed that the term would not be extinct, as to creditors. Bac. Ab. Tit. Lease R.

1 Inst. 338 b.

40. Lord Coke lays it down that a man may have a freehold in his own right, and a term in *auter droit*. Therefore if a man lessor take the feme lessee to wife, the term is not drowned; but he is possessed of the term in her right, during the coverture.

Bac. Ab. Tit.  
Lease R,

41. The reason of this doctrine is thus given by Gilbert:—"Where the husband is himself lessee, and intermarries with the lessor, this merges his own term; because he thereby draws to himself the immediate reversion, in nature of a purchase, by his own voluntary act; and so undermines his own term. Whereas, in the other case, the term being existing in the feme till the intermarriage, is not thereby so drawn out of her, or annexed to the freehold, as to merge therein; because that attraction, which is only by act of law, consequent upon the marriage, would, by merging the term, do wrong to a feme covert; and so take the term out of her, though her husband did no express act to that purpose; which the law will not allow."

1 Salk. 326.

42. It is laid down by Lord Holt, that if a man has a term in right of his wife, and purchases the freehold, this is no extinguishment; because he has the term in one right, and the freehold in another; in which case the difference of the rights prevents a merger; for a third person is concerned, and may be prejudiced, which could not be by act of law.

1 Inst. 338 a.

43. It is settled, upon the same principle, that if a lessee makes his lessor executor, the term is not merged: for the lessor takes the term in right of his testator, without any act of his. Therefore the act of law which cast it upon him will preserve it, in the same manner as if he had been a stranger; without any regard to the immediate freehold he had in his own right; which was only accidental.

44. The statute of uses expressly saves the rights Tit. 11. c. 3. of the feoffees to uses; which preserves from merger any terms for years that may be vested in persons to whom lands are conveyed to uses in such lands.

45. A merger of estates for years may also take place And also by Surrender. in consequence of a surrender of them to the person in remainder or reversion. But a term cannot be merged 1 Inst. 338 a. by surrender till the tenant has entered; for till entry 4 Bac. Ab. 216. there is no reversion in which the term can merge. If however the lessee for years enters, and after assigns his estate to another, the assignee may merge the term by surrender, before entry; because, by the entry of the lessee, the possession was severed and divided from the reversion. Vide Tit. 32., c. 7.

46. A court of equity will in some cases relieve Equity relieves against Merger. against the merger of a term; and make it answer the purposes for which it was created.

47. A portion was directed to be raised out of a Powell v. Morgan, 2 Vern. 90. term for years, for a daughter. The fee afterwards descended on the daughter, who, being under age, devised the portion. The court relieved against the merger of the term; and decreed the portion to go Thomas v. Keymish, Tit. 1. § 51. according to the will of the daughter.

48. A person having a term of 1000 years, Sanders v. Bournford, Finch, 424. assigned it to the owner of the inheritance, in trust for his wife and children; the assignee accepted the trust, and declared the purposes of it. The Court of Chancery supported the trust, notwithstanding the merger of the term; and decreed the heir of the lessor to make a further assurance of the residue of the term to a purchaser.

49. Tenant for years may assign his estate to any Alienable. other person; or create a smaller estate than his own; unless prohibited by a particular proviso.

How forfeited.

1 Inst. 251 b.  
Dyer, 362 b.  
Cro. Eliz.  
322.

50. If however a tenant for years attempts to create a greater interest than he lawfully can, whereby the estate in remainder or reversion is divested; it will operate as a forfeiture of his estate. And Lord Coke says, if tenant for life, or years, of land, the reversion or remainder in the king, makes a feoffment in fee, this is a forfeiture; and yet no reversion or remainder is divested out of the king. And the reason of the forfeiture is, in respect to the solemnity of the feoffment with livery; tending to the king's disherison.

1 Salk. 187.

51. But where a tenant for years makes a lease for a longer term than he has, it is no disseisin, nor forfeiture; because it is only a contract between him and his lessee, which does not operate on the interest of the lessor.

1 Roll. Ab.  
851.

52. If a husband possessed of a term for years, in right of his wife forfeits it, this shall bind the wife, because he might have disposed of it at his pleasure.

6 Rep. 15 a.

53. An estate for years is not forfeited, if the person in remainder or reversion is a party to the conveyance: for in that case each person transfers only what he may lawfully alien.

Tit. 3. c. 1.  
§ 36.

54. With respect to forfeitures by matter of record, it may be laid down as a general rule, that every act by matter of record, which operates as a forfeiture of an estate for life, will also operate as a forfeiture of an estate for years.



## TITLE IX.

### ESTATE AT WILL, AND AT SUFFERANCE.

#### CHAP. I.

##### *Of an Estate at Will.*

#### CHAP. II.

##### *Of an Estate at Sufferance.*

---

#### CHAP. I.

##### *Of an Estate at Will.*

- |                                                   |                                          |
|---------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| 1. Description of.                                | 19. Six Months Notice to quit necessary. |
| 3. May arise by Implication.                      | 20. Tenancies from Year to Year.         |
| 7. It is at the Will of both Parties.             | 28. Bind the Persons in Reversion.       |
| 8. Not grantable over.                            | 30. And devolve to Executors.            |
| 10. This Tenant sometimes entitled to Emblements. | 32. Six Months Notice to quit necessary. |
| 12. Cannot commit Waste.                          |                                          |
| 14. What determines this Estate.                  |                                          |

---

#### SECTION 1.

“**T**ENANT at will (says Littleton, § 68.) is where Description of.  
lands or tenements are let by one man to another, to have and to hold to him at the will of the lessor, by force of which lease the lessee is in possession; in this case the lessee is called tenant at will, because he hath no certain or sure estate; for the lessor may put him out at what time it pleaseth him.”

§ 82.

2. Littleton says, if a man lets land to another, to have and to hold to him and to his heirs, at the will of the lessor; the words, to the heirs of the lessee, are void; for if the lessee dies, and the heir enters, the lessor shall have an action of trespass against him.

May arise by  
Implication.  
Brownl. 30.  
Allen, 4.

3. An estate at will may arise by implication, as well as by express words. Thus, if a tenant for years holds over his term, and continues to pay his rent as before, such payment, and acceptance of rent, creates an estate at will.

Lit. § 70.

4. Where a person makes a feoffment, and delivers the deed to the feoffee, without giving him livery of seisin, and the feoffee enters, he becomes tenant at will.

Denn v.  
Fearnside,  
1 Wils. R.  
176.

5. Where a person entered, and enjoyed lands, under a lease that was void; and paid rent; it was held that he was tenant at will.

Lit. § 132.  
460.  
1 Inst. 270 b.

6. As a tenant at will acquires the possession by the consent of the owner, there is a privity of estate between them; but no fealty is due.

It is at the  
Will of both  
Parties.  
1 Inst. 55 a.

7. Lord Coke says, every lease at will must in law be at the will of both parties: therefore where a lease is made, to have and to hold at the will of the lessor, the law implies it to be at the will of the lessee also. So it is when the lease is made to have and to hold at the will of the lessee; this must be also at the will of the lessor.

Not grant-  
able over.  
1 Inst. 57 a.

8. A tenant at will has no certain and indefeasible estate; nothing that can be assigned by him to another: because the lessor may determine his will, and put him out whenever he pleases. Therefore if a tenant at will grants over his estate to another, who enters on the land, he is a disseisor; and the landlord may have an action of trespass against him.

9. A lessee at will made a lease for years, and the lessor entered. Resolved, on solemn argument,  
1. That this was only a disseisin at election, and not *prima facie*. 2. That, admitting it to be a disseisin, the lessee at will, not the lessee for years, was the disseisor, and had gained the freehold.  
*Blunden v. Baugh, Cro. Car. 302.*
10. Where an estate at will is determined by the lessor, the tenant is entitled to the corn sown, and other emblements. Otherwise where the estate is determined by the lessee.  
*This Tenant sometimes entitled to Emblements. Lit. § 68. 5 Rep. 116.*
11. If a person makes a lease at will, and is afterwards outlawed, by which the will is determined, the king shall have the profits; yet the lessee at will shall have the corn that was sown. But if a lessee at will be outlawed, the king shall have the emblements.  
*Idem.*
12. Tenants at will have no power of committing any kind of voluntary waste: still they are not within the statute of Gloucester, and therefore no action of waste lies against them. But if a tenant at will cuts down timber trees, or pulls down houses, the lessor has an action of trespass against him.  
*Cannot commit Waste. 1 Inst. 57 a.*
13. As to permissive waste, there is no remedy against a tenant at will, for he is not bound to repair or sustain houses, like tenant for years.  
*Lit. § 71. Countess of Shrewsbury's Case, 5 Rep. 13 b.*
14. With respect to the acts, which amount to a determination of an estate at will on either side, the first and most obvious mode of determining it by the lessor, is an express declaration that the lessee shall hold no longer; which must either be made on the land, or else notice of it given to the lessee.  
*What determines this Estate. 1 Inst. 55 b.*
15. Any act of ownership exercised by the landlord which is inconsistent with the nature of this estate, will also operate as a determination of it. Thus, if he enters on the land, and cuts down trees demised, or makes a feoffment, or a lease for years, to com-  
*Idem.*

mence immediately, the estate at will is thereby determined.

1 Inst. 55 b.  
57 a.

16. On the other side, any act of desertion, or which is inconsistent with an estate at will, done by the tenant, will also operate as a determination of the estate. Thus, if the tenant assigns over the land to another, or commits an act of waste, his estate is thereby determined. But a verbal declaration by the lessee, that he will not hold the lands any longer, does not determine the estate, unless he also waives the possession.

Leighton  
v. Thud,  
1 Ld. Raym.  
707.

17. Neither party can determine an estate at will at a time which would be prejudicial to the other. Therefore, if the lessee determines his will before the day on which the rent is due, he must notwithstanding pay it up to that time.

1 Inst. 55 b.  
n. 16.

18. If the lessor determines his will before the rent is due, he loses it. But if either party die before the rent is due, this act of God shall not be productive of any injury; for the lease, if it be of a house, shall continue till the next rent day. And if it be of lands, commencing at Michaelmas, it shall continue till the summer profits are received by the representatives of the tenant.

Six Months  
Notice to  
quit neces-  
sary.

19. It has been settled, by several modern cases, that six months notice to quit must be given by a landlord to his tenant at will, or to his executors; before the end of which time, an ejectment will not lie.

Tenancies  
from Year  
to Year.

20. The courts of law have of late years leaned as much as possible against construing demises, where no certain term is mentioned, to be estates at will; but have rather held them to be tenancies from year to year, as long as both parties please; especially where an annual rent is reserved.

21. In a modern case, Mr. Justice Wilmot said, that <sup>3 Burr. 1609.</sup>  
 “ in the country, leases at will, in the strict legal notion of an estate at will, being found extremely inconvenient, exist only notionally; and were succeeded by another species of contract, which was less inconvenient.”

Mr. Hargrave has remarked on this passage, that <sup>1 Inst. 55 a. n. 3.</sup>  
 it means, not that estates at will may not arise now, as well as formerly; but only that it is no longer usual to create such estates by express words; and that the Judges incline strongly against implying them.

22. A tenant from year to year, having acquired <sup>Lit. § 460.</sup>  
 the possession by the consent of the owner, as well as a tenant at will, there is a privity of estate between them.

23. A general parol demise, at an annual rent, where the bulk of the farm is inclosed, and a small part in open common fields, is a tenancy from year to year.

24. An ejectment was brought to recover the <sup>Roe v. Rees, 2 Blackst. 1171.</sup>  
 possession of a farm of about 60 acres of land, of which 51 were inclosed, and the rest lay in open fields. The taking was from old Lady-day 1767, without any fixed term, at 40*l.* a year rent, payable at Michaelmas and Lady-day. It was proved that a custom prevailed, where a tenant took a farm in that township, of which part consisted of open common field, for an uncertain term, that it should be considered as a holding from three years to three years.

Lord Chief Justice De Grey said, that all leases for uncertain terms were, *prima facie*, leases at will: that the reservation of an annual rent turned them into leases from year to year. It was possible that circumstances might make it a lease for a longer

term, as when the crop did not come to perfection in less than two years. And he would not say that the nature of the ground, or the course of husbandry, might not deserve to be considered, when such a custom came nakedly before the Court. As a custom the claim could not be supported; therefore it was a lease from year to year.

*Doe v. Weller,*  
7 Term R.  
478.

25. Where a tenant for life granted a lease for years, which was void against the remainder-man, and the latter, before he elected to avoid it, received rent from the tenant; it was held to be a tenancy from year to year.

*Doe v. Bell,*  
5 Term R.  
471.  
Tit. 32. c. 3.

26. Where an agreement for a longer term than three years is made by parol, which is void, as to the duration of the term, by the statute of frauds; there is a tenancy from year to year: regulated in every other respect by the agreement.

*Clayton v. Blakey,*  
8 Term R. 3.

27. In a subsequent case it appeared in evidence that the defendant had held the premises for two or three years, under a parol demise for 21 years: this being void by the statute of frauds, it was contended at the trial that the holding should have been stated according to the legal operation of it, as a tenancy at will. Mr. Justice Rook considering it as a tenancy from year to year, over-ruled the objection. Upon a motion to set aside the verdict, on the ground of a misdirection, Lord Kenyon said the direction was right; for such a holding now operated as a tenancy from year to year. The meaning of the statute of frauds was, that such an agreement should not operate as a term. But what was then considered as a tenancy at will, had since been properly construed to enure as a tenancy from year to year.

*Bind the Persons in Reversion.*

28. Where a tenancy from year to year has once commenced, it continues against any person to whom

the lessor afterwards grants the reversion. And Mr. Justice Buller has said—"It would be unjust to a tenant to say he should be turned out by the assignee of a reversion, or by any person claiming under his lessor, when he could not be turned out by the lessor himself: on the other hand, it is no injustice, it is no hardship on the assignee, to say, he must comply with the same rules and conditions, as the person, of whom he bought, has subjected himself to."

*Birch v. Wright,*  
1 Term R.  
378.

29. In a subsequent case it was held, that a tenancy from year to year would continue against an infant.

*Maddon v. White,*  
2 Term R.  
159.

30. Tenancies from year to year do not determine by the death of the tenant, but devolve to his executors or administrators.

And devolve  
to Executors.

31. A person having an estate from year to year died intestate; the question was, what interest vested in his administrator.

*Doe v. Porter,*  
3 Term R. 13.  
15 Ves. 241.

Lord Kenyon said—Whatever chattel the intestate had, must vest in the administrator, as his personal representative. Then it was supposed that some inconveniences might result from such a determination, but he saw none; and many inconveniences might attend a different decision. The tenancy from year to year succeeded to the old tenancy at will, which was attended with many inconveniences. In order to obviate them, the courts very early raised an implied contract for a year; and added, that the tenant could not be removed at the end of the year, without receiving six months previous notice. All the inconveniences which arose between the original parties themselves; and against whom the wisdom of the law had endeavoured to provide, by raising the implied contract; existed equally in the case of their personal representatives.

*Rex v. Stone,*  
6 Term R.  
295.

Six Months  
Notice to  
quit neces-  
sary.

32. It appears from the preceding case, and many others, that a tenant from year to year is entitled to six months notice to quit, ending at the expiration of the year ; and that he must also give the landlord the same notice.



## TITLE IX.

## ESTATE AT WILL, AND AT SUFFERANCE.

## CHAP. II.

*Of an Estate at Sufferance.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                       |                                                                                                                                                   |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Description of.</i><br>6. <i>This Tenant to pay double Value after Notice.</i><br>7. <i>Who may give Notice.</i><br>8. <i>At what Time Notice may be given.</i> | 10. <i>Acceptance of single Rent no Bar to Recovery.</i><br>12. <i>Tenants giving Notice to quit, and after holding over, to pay double Rent.</i> |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**T**ENANT at sufferance (says Lord Coke) is he that at first came in by lawful demise, and after his estate ended, continueth in possession ; and wrongfully holdeth over.” Description of.  
1 Inst. 57 b.

2. Thus, where a tenant *pour auter vie* continues in possession after the death of the *cestui que vie* ; or a tenant for years holds over his term ; they become tenants at sufferance. So, where a person makes a lease at will, and dies ; the estate is thereby determined ; and if the lessee continues in possession, he is tenant at sufferance. Idem.

3. Where a man comes to a particular estate, by the act of the party ; there, if he holds over, he is tenant at sufferance. But where he comes to the particular estate, by act in law ; as if a guardian, after the full age of the heir, continues in possession, he is not tenant at sufferance, but an abator. 1 Inst. 57 b.  
2 — 134.

4. No person can be tenant at sufferance against the king, for no laches can be imputed to him in not entering ; therefore, if the king's tenant holds over, he will be considered as an intruder. 1 Inst. 57 b.  
2 Leon. 143.

5. There is no privity of estate between a tenant at sufferance, and the owner of the land; for this tenant only holds by the laches of the owner.

This Tenant  
to pay double  
Value after  
Notice.

6. Tenants at sufferance were not liable to pay any rent for the lands, because it was the folly of the owners to suffer them to continue in possession, after the determination of the preceding estate. But now, by the statute 4 Geo. II. c. 28. § 1. it is enacted, that where any tenant holds over, after demand made, and notice in writing given for delivering the possession; such persons so holding over shall pay double the yearly value of the lands so detained, for so long time as the same are detained; to be recovered by action of debt; against the recovering of which penalty, there shall be no relief in equity.

Who may  
give Notice.

Wilkinson  
v. Colley,  
5 Burr.  
2694.

7. The landlord, by himself, or by his agent lawfully authorized, is the proper person to give notice. But it was held, in a modern case, that a receiver, appointed by the Court of Chancery, is an agent for the landlord, authorized by this act to give a tenant notice to quit the premises; and that a notice in writing to quit, is of itself a sufficient demand.

At what Time  
Notice may  
be given.

8. A notice to quit under the statute 4 Geo. II. may be given previous to the expiration of the lease under which the tenant holds the land.

Cutting v.  
Derby,  
2 Black. R.  
1075.

9. Lands were leased from the 10th October 1768, for eleven years. The person entitled to the reversion gave a written notice to the tenant on the 30th September 1773, and again repeated the like notice on the 7th October 1774, or to pay double value. On the 10th October the reversioner went on the premises, and demanded possession, which was refused.

In an action for double value, the jury gave a verdict for the plaintiff. A motion was made for a new trial, Because, 1. By the statute 4 Geo. II. notice to

quit must be given after, and not before the expiration of the term. 2. The lease did not expire till midnight, and possession was demanded in the preceding afternoon.

Lord Chief Justice De Grey was of opinion, that the notice to quit might be previous to the expiration of the term. It prevented surprise, and was most for the benefit of both landlord and tenant. Mr. Justice Blackstone said; that a notice or requisition to the tenant to quit at the end of his term, implied that it must be previous. It would be absurd, because impossible to be complied with, to require *after* the expiration of the term, that the tenant should quit *at* the expiration.—The motion was refused.

10. Although a landlord, after bringing an ejectment, and after the time laid in the demise, should agree to accept the single, instead of the double rent, to which, by the statute, he is entitled; yet he will not be thereby precluded from recovering in the ejectment.

Acceptance  
of single  
Rent no Bar  
to Recovery.  
Gilder  
v. ———,  
Cowp. 245.

11. It was held, in a modern case, that where a demise is for a certain time, no notice to quit is necessary at or before the end of the term, to put an end to the tenancy. That a demand of possession, and notice in writing, &c. are necessary to entitle the landlord to double rent or value. That such demand may be made for that purpose six weeks afterwards, if the landlord have done no act in the mean time to acknowledge the continuation of the tenancy: and he will thereupon be entitled to double value, as from the time of such demand, if the tenant holds over.

Cobb v.  
Stoke,  
8 East. 358.

12. By the statute 11 Geo. II. c. 19. § 18., reciting that great inconveniences had happened to landlords, whose tenants had power to determine their leases, by their giving notice to quit, and yet refusing to

Tenants  
giving Notice  
to quit, and  
after holding  
over, to pay  
double Rent.

deliver up the possession, when the landlord hath agreed with another tenant for the same; it is enacted—"That in case any tenant or tenants shall give notice of his, her, or their intention to quit the premises by him, her, or them holden, at a time mentioned in such notice, and shall not accordingly deliver up the possession thereof at the time in such notice contained; that then the said tenant or tenants, his, her, or their executors or administrators, shall from thenceforward pay to the landlord or landlords, lessor or lessors, double the rent or sum which he, she, or they should otherwise have paid."

Timmins v.  
Rowlinson,  
1 Black. R.  
533.  
3 Burr.  
1603.

13. It was resolved in a modern case, that this act is not confined to those tenants who have a clause in their leases enabling them to quit at the end of seven, eleven, or fourteen years, upon giving notice; but also to parol leases for a year. And that a parol notice was sufficient, because the statute did not require a written one.

**TITLE X.**

**COPYHOLD.**

**CHAP. I.**

*Of the Nature of Copyholds.*

**CHAP. II.**

*Of Copyhold Grants.*

**CHAP. III.**

*Of the Incidents to Copyholds.*

**CHAP. IV.**

*Of Fines and Heriots.*

**CHAP. V.**

*Of the Forfeiture of Copyholds.*

**CHAP. VI.**

*Of the Extinguishment and Suspension of Copyholds.*

---

**CHAP. I.**

*Of the Nature of Copyholds.*

- |                                                     |                                          |
|-----------------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------|
| 2. Description of.                                  | 40. What may be granted by Copy.         |
| 6. Free Copyholders.                                | 46. Copyholders may have Estates in Fee. |
| 10. Circumstances necessary to their Existence.     | 47. And Estates Tail.                    |
| 11. A Manor.                                        | 51. And Estates for Life.                |
| 13. A Court.                                        | 53. No general Occupancy of Copyholds.   |
| 24. The Things granted must be Parcel of the Manor. | 54. But special Occupancy is allowed.    |
| 25. And demised or demisable by Copy.               | 58. Copyhold Customs.                    |
| 33. What destroys the Custom of granting.           | 61. How proved.                          |
|                                                     | 64. Copyhold Jurisdictions.              |

## SECTION 1.

Dissertation,  
c. 3. § 51.

Descrip-  
tion of,  
§ 73.

**WE** now come to treat of those estates which are derived from immemorial custom and usage, and called copyholds. But having already discussed the origin and nature of copyhold tenures, it will here only be necessary to consider the properties of the estates thus held.

2. “Tenant by copy of court roll (says Littleton) is, as if a man be seised of a manor, within which manor there is a custom, which hath been made time out of mind of man, that certain tenants within the same manor have used to have lands and tenements, to hold to them and their heirs in fee simple, or fee tail, or for term of life, &c. at the will of the lord, according to the custom of the same manor.”

3. A copyhold estate may therefore be described to be a parcel of the demesnes of a manor, held at the will of the lord, according to the custom of the manor, by a grant from the lord, and an admittance of the tenant, entered on the rolls of the manor court.

Lit. § 77.  
4 Rep. 21 b.

4. The title of copyholders to their estates was originally deemed so precarious, that it was held in the reign of Edw. IV., that if the lord ousted his copyholder, he had no other remedy but to sue him by petition. It was however laid down by Danby, Chief Justice of the C. B. in 7 Edw. IV., and by his successor, that a copyholder, observing the customs of the manor, and performing his services, should, if put out by the lord, have an action of trespass against him. A doctrine which has long been fully established; For, as Lord Coke says, “albeit he is tenant *ad voluntatem domini*; yet it is, *secundum consuetudinem manerii*.”

1 Inst. 60 b.  
9 Rep. 76 b.

5. Copyhold estates are, however, still said to be held at the will of the lord; and this position is so far true, that the freehold of all lands held by this tenure is vested in the lord. The copyholder's estate is not so great as even an estate for years. The will of the lord is not however arbitrary, as it formerly was, but must be conformable to the customs of the manor.

6. It has been already stated, that there is a species of copyhold which is held according to the custom of the manor, not at the will of the lord; called a free copyhold, or customary freehold. It was formerly held that the freehold of these was in the tenant; from which they derived the appellation of customary freeholds. But it is now fully settled that the freehold is in the lord.

Free Copyholds.  
Dissertation,  
c. 3. § 57.

Stephenson  
v. Hill,  
3 Burr. 1273.  
Roe v.  
Conolly,  
5 East, 51.

7. At the great election for Oxfordshire in the year 1754, a question arose whether free copyholders, holding according to the custom of the manor, and not at the will of the lord, were entitled to vote. Sir William Blackstone has written a tract on this subject, intitled *Considerations on copyholders*. In which he contends that copyholders, of this kind were not, by the old law, entitled to vote for knights of the shire; because they were in fact villein sockmen, whose services were base and servile, though reduced to a certainty; and therefore their estates were not comprised under the denomination of free lands or tenements, or freehold, within the meaning of the statute of Hen. VI.; and this opinion is established as law by the statute 31 Geo. II. c. 14., which enacts, that no person who holds his estate by copy of court-roll shall be entitled to vote at the election of a knight of the shire.

Doe v.  
Danvers,  
7 East, 299.  
Burrell  
v. Dodd,  
3 Bos. & Pul.  
378.  
Brown v.  
Rawlins,  
7 East, 409.

8. In a modern case the Court of K. B. held, that where an estate was parcel of a manor, and demisable only by the licence of the lord, passing by surrender and admittance, to which the tenant was admitted by the description of a customary tenant, *habendum* to the grantee and his heirs, *tenendum* of the lord by the rod, according to the custom of the manor, by the accustomed rent, suit of court, customs and other services; the freehold was in the lord.

Doe v.  
Huntingdon,  
4 East, 271.

9. In a subsequent case, the same court held, that customary estates, known by the denomination of tenant right, were peculiar to the northern parts of England, in which border services against Scotland were anciently performed, before the union of England and Scotland under the same sovereign. And although these appear to have many qualities and incidents which did not properly and ordinarily belong to villenage tenure, either pure or privileged, (and out of one or other of these species of villenage all copyhold was derived); and also had some which savoured more of military tenure by escuage certain, which (according to Littleton, § 99.) was knight service; and although they seemed to want some of the characteristic qualities and circumstances which were considered as distinguishing this species of tenure; viz. the being holden at the will of the lord; and also the usual evidence of title by copy of court-roll; and were alienable also, contrary to the usual mode by which copyholds were aliened, viz. by deed and admittance thereon: notwithstanding all these anomalous circumstances, it seemed to be now so far settled in courts of law, that these customary tenant right estates were not freehold, but that they in effect fell within the same consideration as



copyholds, that the quality of their tenure, in this respect, could not properly any longer be drawn in question.

10. There are four circumstances necessary to the existence of a copyhold estate: 1. A manor. 2. A court. 3. The lands must be parcel of the manor. 4. They must have been demised, or demisable, by copy of court-roll from time immemorial.

Circumstances necessary to their Existence.

11. With respect to a manor, of which the nature has been already explained, it is essentially necessary. For a copyhold estate is parcel of the demesnes of a manor; and held of the lord of such manor.

A Manor. Dissertation, c. 3. § 32.

12. Although the demesnes of a manor be severed from the services; or the services extinct, by which the manor is in fact destroyed; yet still it will continue to be considered as a manor, so far as is necessary to support the copyholds held thereof. And it is said that a tenant in dower of a third part of a manor, has a manor for the purpose of granting copyholds.

Idem, § 45.

Gilb. Ten. 209. Golds. 37. 135.

13. As to a court, it is equally necessary; the tenant having no other evidence of his title but the rolls of that court. There are, however, two different courts incident to a manor. A court baron or freeholder's court; and a customary court, relating only to the copyholders, in which the lord or his steward is judge. And although there should be no freeholders in the manor; by which the court baron, and even the manor itself, is in some respects lost; yet there still may be a customary court. For as these two courts are distinct from each other in every respect, the want of freeholders does not prevent the lord from holding a customary court, for his copyholders.

A Court, 1 Inst. 58 a. 4 Rep. 26 b. Gilb. Ten. 210.

14. It was resolved in 80 Eliz. that where the lord of a manor, having many ancient copyholders in one town, granted the inheritance of all the copyholds to

Melwich v. Luther, 4 Rep. 26 a. Cro. Eliz. 102.

another, the grantee might hold a court for the copyholders. For though it was not a manor in law, because it wanted free tenants, yet as to the copyhold tenants, the grantee had such a manor, that he might hold a court to make admittances and grants of the copyholds.

Neale v.  
Jackson,  
4 Rep. 26 a.  
Cro. Eliz.  
395.

15. This doctrine is confirmed by another case, in 37 Eliz., in which it was held, that where the lord of a manor demised all his lands, which were granted by copy for 2,000 years, the lessee might hold a court for the copyholders.

Ten. 210.

16. Notwithstanding these authorities, Lord Chief Baron Gilbert says, there were precedents that such grantee of the inheritance of copyhold lands could not keep a court; no more than the grantee of the inheritance of one copyhold: that as to the case of *Melwich v. Luther*, it was said, a writ of error was brought, and the justices and barons held the judgement erroneous.

Cro. Eliz.  
103.  
Bright v.  
Forth,  
Cro. Eliz.  
442.

Gay v. Kay,  
Cro. Eliz.  
661.

17. In a case subsequent to that of *Melwich v. Luther*, where a woman was endowed of several copyholds, it was resolved that she might hold a court, and grant copies, though the services of any of the freeholders were not allotted to her, but only the demesnes and the copyholds.

Murrell  
v. Smith,  
4 Rep. 24 b.  
Cro. Eliz.  
252.

18. A grant of the freehold of one copyhold will not enable the grantee to hold a customary court. The copyhold will not however be totally destroyed by such a grant: but the copyholder will be excused from all those services that arise by reason of the customary court.

Clifton v.  
Molyneux,  
4 Rep. 27 a.

19. It was resolved in 27 Eliz., that if a court was held by a steward of a manor out of the manor, and grants and admittances were there made, it would be void; for the court of the manor ought to be

held within the manor. But that by custom the court might be held out of the manor, and grants and admittances made there: as several abbots, priors, &c. used to hold courts at one manor, for divers several manors; which was held good by custom. 1 Leon. 289.

20. When the copyholders are assembled in the customary court, they are sworn to do the ordinary business, and are called the homage.

21. To every customary court a steward is appointed by the lord, whose duty it is to preside in the court, to determine all causes arising between the copyholders, and to take care of the court-rolls. The Lord of a manor may retain a person to be his steward by word only; except in the case of the Crown. Infra, c. 2. 4 Rep. 30 a. Co. Cop. § 45.

22. The steward of a private person may appoint a deputy under him, whose authority will be as great as that of his principal. In the Earl of Rutland's case, who was appointed steward for life of a manor by the Crown, without any words empowering him to make a deputy; it was resolved, that he might notwithstanding appoint an under-steward. For when the Crown granted him the office of steward, he being an earl, it was implied in law, for convenience sake, that he might make a deputy. Id. § 46. 2 Brownl. 235.

23. Every copyholder has an interest in the court-rolls, as well as the lord, being the evidence of his title; nor can the lord deny him a sight, or copy of a court-roll; to make such use of it as he may think proper. If he objects, the Court of King's Bench will direct it; and if the lord then refuses, an attachment will lie against him. Rex v. Shelly, 3 Term R. 141. Rex v. Lucas, 10 East. 235.

24. The third circumstance necessary to the existence of a copyhold is, that the land or other thing granted be parcel of the manor; for a copyhold is The Things granted must be Parcel of the Manor.

1 Inst. 58 b. part of the demesnes of a manor. It is not however absolutely necessary that the lands should continue to be parcel of the manor; as it has been shown, that ante, § 12. where the lord of a manor granted the inheritance of all his copyholds, whereby those lands were severed from the manor; yet the copyholds still subsisted.

And demised  
or demisable  
by Copy.  
1 Inst. 58 b.

25. The fourth circumstance necessary to the existence of a copyhold is, that the lands or other thing have been demised or demisable by copy from time immemorial; because this tenure derives its whole force from custom; so that no new copyhold can be created at this day; that is, nothing can be now granted by copy of court-roll, which was not granted, or grantable by that tenure before.

Kemp v.  
Carter,  
1 Leon. 55.

26. Upon issue whether the lord of a manor had granted certain lands by copy of court-roll, according to the custom of the manor; it was given in evidence, that within the said manor were divers customary lands; that the lord lately at his court had granted the lands in question by copy, but they had never been granted by copy before. The Court held that the jury were bound to find, *dominus non concessit*; for notwithstanding that *de facto, dominus concessit per copiam*, yet *non concessit secundum consuetudinem manerii*, &c. For the said land was not customary, nor was it demisable, as the custom had not taken hold of it.

27. Though lands should appear to have been granted by copy for sixty years back; yet if there has been an interruption in that mode of granting them, they will not be deemed copyhold.

Taverner v.  
Cromwell,  
3 Leon. 137.

28. The bishop of Norwich being seised of the manor of N. in right of his church, granted in 10 Hen. VIII. parcel of the demesnes of the said manor to one T. and his heirs by copy. These lands

had never been granted by copy before, but were held in this manner till 33 Hen. VIII. when T., committed a forfeiture. The bishop seised the land, but regranted it to him immediately by copy; by which it was again held till 8 Eliz.

The Court determined that 50 years continuance was requisite to fasten a customary condition upon the land against the lord: and though the original commencement of the grant by copy was in 10 Hen. VIII., from which to 8 Eliz. was more than sixty years, yet that the seisure for a forfeiture, which happened in 23 Hen. VIII., interrupted the continuance of the time, which might by law have perfected the customary interest; so that the commencement of the copyhold was to be reckoned from 23 Hen. VIII.; which not being sufficient time to make good a custom, the lord might enter on the copyholder, as upon his tenant at will.

29. Where lands which from time immemorial have been demised by copy, come to the lord by forfeiture or escheat, he may again grant them out by copy; though he keep them in his hands for many years, because they were always demisable by copy. 1 Inst. 58 b.

30. It was resolved in 41 Eliz. that where a copyholder of a manor belonging to the Queen was attainted of felony, by which his copyhold estreated; the queen's steward of the manor might grant it out again as copyhold, without any warrant. Harris v. Jay, 4 Rep. 30 a. Cro. Eliz. 699.

31. It appears to have been resolved in 24 Cha. II. that a grant of part of the waste, by copy, was void, unless similar grants had been made, time out of mind. Ep. London v. Row, 3 Keb. 124.

32. In a subsequent case it was admitted that a lord of a manor might make new grants of part of the manor, to hold by copy; and a case was cited to Hughes v. Games, Ca. Temp. King, 62.

this purpose. But Lord King said, that in the case cited the grant was made with the consent of the homage ; that the question in the principal case was, whether there was a custom to do it without the homage ; which must go to law ; and then it would be considered how far a custom to make such grants, without the homage, was good.

Northwick v. Stanway,  
3 Bos. & Pul.  
346.

32. In a modern case it was held, that although parcels of the waste of a manor had been newly granted by copy of court-roll, yet that having been granted by virtue of an immemorial custom to demise parcels of the waste as copyhold, they were to be considered as much copyholds, as if they had been immemorially holden by copy of court-roll.

Folkard v. Hemmett,  
5 Term R.  
417.

That the tenure had its foundation in custom, which had immemorially attached upon the waste, the subject of the grant. That copyholds of a similar description to those in question were very common in the north of England, and had often been recognized in judicial determinations.

Boulcott v. Winmill,  
infra, Tit. 27.

What destroys the Custom of granting,  
French's Case  
4 Rep. 31 a.

33. Where lands formerly granted by copy, are conveyed by the person entitled to the freehold and inheritance of them, for life, or for years, this will destroy the custom of granting them by copy. Because, while the lands are in the possession of these grantees, they are neither demised, nor demisable, by copy. So if the lord makes a feoffment in fee of such lands, upon condition, and afterwards enters for the condition broken, the lands can never after be granted by copy.

ante, § 29.

34. It has been stated, that copyholds escheated, or forfeited to the lord, may be regranted by copy. But if such lands are extended upon a statute or recognizance, acknowledged by the lord, or assigned to the lord's wife for dower ; although these impedi-

4 Rep. 31 a.

ments are by act of law, yet as the custom of granting by copy is interrupted by a lawful act, the lands can never after be granted by copy.

35. A tortious interruption of the estate, as if the lord be disseised, and the disseisor die seised; or if the land be recovered against the lord by false verdict, or erroneous judgement; will not destroy the custom of granting by copy. Although in these cases the land was not demised or demisable during the interruption. 4 Rep. 31 a.

36. Where copyhold lands which have fallen to the lord are leased, together with the manor, this will not destroy the custom of granting them by copy.

37. Thus it was held by the Court of King's Bench, on a trial at bar in 14 Cha. I., that if a copyholder in fee surrenders to the lord of the manor his copyhold estate; and the lord makes a lease for years of the manor, together with the copyhold, by the name of his tenement called H., that it was not a determination of the copyhold: because, when the lord let the manor, it was included as parcel of the manor. For the manor being demised, included the copyhold as parcel of the manor; and the naming of the copyhold was surplusage; so that it remained always as parcel of the manor, and demisable by copy, as it was before. Lee v. Boothby, Cro. Car. 521.

38. No person can destroy the custom of granting land by copy, unless he is proprietor of the fee simple of the manor; thus if a person who is only tenant in tail, or for life, of a manor, makes a lease for years of an escheated copyhold; though, as to himself, the custom of granting by copy is thereby destroyed; yet, as to the issue in tail, or the rever- 1 Inst. 58 b. n. 7.  
Comsbie v. Rushy, Cro. Eliz. 459.



sioner, the custom is not destroyed. So it is in the case of a husband seised in right of his wife.

Roe v.  
Newman,  
2 Wils. R.  
125.

39. It was resolved in a modern case, that copyhold lands must be stated, or found, or pleaded, to have been demised or demisable by copy of courtroll, for time out of mind; otherwise a court of justice cannot adjudge them to be copyhold.

What may be  
granted by  
Copy.  
1 Inst. 58 b.

40. With respect to the things which may be granted by copy, Lord Coke says, all lands and tenements within a manor, and whatever concerns lands or tenements may be granted by copy. In 27 Eliz. it was said by the court of C. B. that any profit of any parcel of a manor may, by custom, be granted by copy. In the same case it was resolved, that underwood growing upon a part of the manor, might be granted by copy; because it was a thing of perpetuity, to which a custom might extend; for after every felling, the underwood grows again.

Hoe v.  
Taylor,  
4 Rep. 30 b.

1 Inst. 58 b.  
Stammers  
v. Dixon,  
7 East. 200.

41. The herbage or vesture of land may be granted by copy. In a modern case it was resolved, that a person might hold the *prima tonsura* of land by copy, while another might have the soil, and every other beneficial enjoyment of it, as freehold: and that ancient admissions of the copyholders, and those under whom they claimed the land, by the description of *tres acras prati*, might be construed only to carry the *prima tonsura*, if in fact they had enjoyed no more under such admissions; while another had the after-crop, had cut the trees and fences, scoured the ditches, and kept the drains. Though the copyholder might have paid all the rates and taxes; which was in his own wrong.

1 Inst. 58 b.  
Nevill's Case,  
11 Rep. 17.

42. It is said by Lord Coke that a manor may be granted by copy: and it was resolved in 1 Ja. I. that



a customary manor might be held by copy. That the customary lord might hold courts, and grants copies. That such customary manor should pass by surrender and admittance. That fines should be paid upon admittance, as well upon alienation as descent. That there might be lord customary, mesne and customary tenant, as well in the case where the mesnalty was a tenancy at will, according to the custom of the manor, as where there was a tenancy at will, at the common law, of a manor.

43. Lord Chief Baron Gilbert says ; in such case Ten. 215.  
the lord may grant copies. But it must be of things which have been usually demised ; and that he cannot grant all his demesnes by copy, unless they have been usually demised.

44. It was resolved in 43 Eliz. that tithes might Sands v.  
Drury,  
1 Roll Ab.  
498.  
be granted by copy of court-roll, for they might be parcel of a manor.

In Croke's report of this case, Popham is said to Cro Eliz.  
814.  
have been of opinion that tithes were not grantable by copy ; because a manor and tithes were of several natures ; so it was impossible that that, which was not parcel of the manor, could be demised according to the custom of the manor. But Gawdy doubted, and conceived it had been well enough, if it had been so used time out of mind.

45. Nothing however can be granted by copy, Co. Cop.  
§ 42.  
unless it lies in tenure, or is appendant to something that lies in tenure ; therefore rents, commons in gross, advowsons in gross, and such like, cannot be granted by copy. But an advowson, a common, or a fair, which are appendant, may pass by copy, by reason of the principal thing to which they are appendant.

46. Although a copyholder is admitted to hold at Copyholders  
may have  
Estates in  
Fee.  
the will of the lord, or according to the custom of the

manor, and the freehold remains in the lord ; yet it is most usual to grant estates of this nature to the copyholder and his heirs ; by which he acquires a customary estate in fee simple.

And Estates  
Tail.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 53.

Rowden v.  
Malster,  
Cro. Car. 42.

47. It was formerly much doubted whether the statute *De Donis* extended to copyholds, so as to convert what was formerly a conditional fee in a copyhold, into an estate tail. In a case which arose in 18 Ja. I. the question was, whether the surrender of a copyhold estate to a person and the heirs male of his body, there being no custom to warrant such an estate, gave the surrenderee an estate tail, or a conditional fee.

It was held by Croke and two other justices, against the opinion of Yelverton, that the statute *De Donis* did not extend to copyholds ; consequently that the surrenderee took a conditional fee.

ante, § 2.

1 Inst. 60 b.  
3 Rep. 8 b.  
Erish v.  
Reeves,  
Cro. Eliz.  
717.

48. This resolution appears contrary to the passage already cited from Littleton, where he expressly says that copyholds may be granted in tail. Lord Coke was of opinion that Littleton must be understood to speak only of such copyholds as might be entailed by the particular customs of the manors whereof they were held : in which case, the statute *De Donis* co-operating with the custom, would give to such an estate all the qualities of an estate tail.

1 Inst. 60 b.

49. Lord Coke also says, that although lands have anciently and usually been granted, by copy of court-roll, to many men and the heirs of their bodies, that would not prove a custom of entailing copyholds : for such grants might have created conditional fees. But if a remainder had been limited over after such an estate, and enjoyed ; or if the issue had avoided the alienation of the ancestor ; or recovered the same in a writ of formedon in the descender ; these

and such like would be sufficient to prove a custom of entailing.

50. In a special verdict in 7 Ann. the question was whether a copyhold could be entailed, without laying a special custom for so doing; it was adjudged by the whole Court that it might. Lord Holt rejected the notion of Lord Coke about the statute *De Donis* co-operating with the custom: and held that that statute turned all conditional fees into estates tail. It has been the constant practice for the last century to limit copyholds to persons and the heirs of their bodies; and yet there is no case in which any doubt has arisen but that this was an estate tail within the statute *De Donis*.

Adams v. Hincloe, 11 Mod. 199.

51. Copyholds may also be granted for life, and in many manors the custom is to grant copyholds only for one, two, or three lives: in some of those manors the custom gives the copyholder a right to a renewal of the grant, upon the falling of the lives; from which they are called tenant right estates.

And Estates for Life.

Wharton v. King, infra, c. 4.

52. Where copyholds are granted for lives, the person who pays the fine takes the beneficial interest; and the other persons named in the grant are trustees for him.

Tit. 12. c. 1.

53. It is laid down by Roll, that if a copyhold is granted to two persons for three lives, and the tenants *pur antier vie* die, living the *cestuis que vie*, there shall be no occupant, but the lord shall have the estate; for no one can gain a copyhold by occupancy, but by admission of the lord. Lord Holt has said, that an occupancy is for supplying the freehold; but the freehold of a copyhold estate is in the lord, and the tenant has only an estate at will.

No general Occupancy of Copyholds.

Ven v. Howell, 1 Roll Ab. 511. 2 Ld. Raym. 1000.

Zouch v. Forse, infra.

54. There may however be a special occupancy of a copyhold. For Lord Chief Baron Gilbert, after

But special Occupancy is allowed.

Ten. 326.

citing the passage above stated from Roll's Ab., says, if the limitation had been to the tenants and their heirs during the lives of the *cestuis que vie*, the heir in such case would have the estate, not the lord; because he had excluded himself, and expressly granted the copyhold to the grantee and his heirs, during such a time. This doctrine has been confirmed in the following case.

Doe v.  
Martin,  
2 Black. R.  
1148.

55. Juliana Ramsey surrendered certain copyhold estates, to the use of Richard Tonson, his heirs and assigns, for her life; and he was admitted accordingly. Richard Tonson died in the lifetime of Juliana Ramsey; and the question was, whether his heir was entitled as special occupant?

Lord Chief Justice De Grey said, that though in copyholds there could be no general occupant, since the freehold was never out of the lord, yet it did not follow there could be no special occupant, when the lord had expressly granted the estate to one and his heirs, during the life of A. B.; indeed the term of special occupant was in such case, and in all others, a very forced and improper phrase; and he thought there was great weight in what was said by Vaughan, 201.—that the heir took it as a descendible freehold. Such however was the language of the law. The Court was unanimously of opinion that the heir of Richard Tonson took as special occupant.

Tit. 3. c. 1.  
§ 49.

56. The statutes 29 Ch. II. and 14 Geo. II., which have been already stated, and by which estates *pour autre vie* are appropriated, where there is no special occupant, do not extend to copyholds.

Zouch v.  
Forse,  
7 East, 186.

57. A tenant *pour autre vie* of a copyhold died in the lifetime of the *cestui que vie*; his administrator was admitted, and brought an ejectment for the

recovery of the land. It was held that the statutes 29 Ch. II. and 14 Geo. II. did not affect copyholds; for they only extended to estates, by the appropriation of which no persons would be injured. Whereas, if they were construed to extend to copyholds, they would operate to the prejudice of the lord.

58. As copyholds owe their existence to immemorial custom, so the rules by which they are governed derive their effect from the same source. Hence Lord Coke observes, that what a copyholder may or ought to do, or not do, the custom of the manor must direct. And many of those customs materially differ from the common law.

Copyhold Customs.

1 Inst. 63 a.

59. Copyhold customs differ from those which relate to freeholds in this circumstance, that freehold customs must be at least so general as to extend throughout a county; and cannot prevail in a particular place only. Whereas a custom relating to copyholds may be good in a single manor.

Cro. Eliz. 253.

60. There are two sorts of copyhold customs; 1. General; extending to all manors in which there are copyholders, and warranted by the common law; of which the courts take notice. 2. Particular; prevailing in some manors only, which must be specially pleaded. These are construed strictly; where they are contrary to reason, morality, or justice, or not capable of being reduced to a certainty, the courts of law will not pay any attention to them. It should however be observed, that the unreasonableness of a custom is not altogether to be deduced from the rules and maxims of the common law: for there is no particular custom that does not, in some respects, contradict the common law.

9 Rep. 75 b.  
1 Salk 184.  
Page's Case,  
Cro. Ja. 671.  
Jenk. 274.  
An. 1 Leon.  
266.  
Ball's Case,  
4 Leon. 237.  
Thorn v.  
Tyler,  
Co. Sup. § 19.  
Dean and  
Chapter of  
Ely v.  
Warren,  
2 Atk. 189.  
Wilks v.  
Broadbent,  
1 Wils. R. 63.  
Wilson v.  
Willis,  
7 East, 171.

How proved.  
4 Leon. 242.

61. Lord Coke has laid it down, that there are two pillars of custom; one, common usage; the other, that it has been time out of mind. Therefore the person who maintains a custom, must shew precedents in the court-rolls, to prove the usage: without such proof, and that it had been put in use, although deemed and reputed a true custom, a court would not give credit to the proof by witnesses.

Doe v.  
Mason,  
3 Wils. 63.

62. A regular series of entries in the court-rolls, is sufficient evidence of the customs of a manor; and an ancient writing, handed down with the court-rolls from steward to steward, purporting to be a customary of the manor, is evidence of a custom.

Roe v.  
Parker,  
Tit. 29.

2 Atk. 189.

63. Lord Hardwicke has said, it was certainly the rule of law in general that the evidence of neighbouring manors shall not be admitted to shew the custom of another manor; because every manor is to be governed by its own customs. But this rule was not so universal as not to be varied in some instances; as in mine countries, Derbyshire, &c., the courts of law had admitted evidence with regard to profits of mines, &c. out of other manors, where they were analogous and similar, to explain or corroborate the custom of the manor in question.

Copyhold  
Jurisdictions.  
Lit. § 76.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 51.

64. Copyholds being derived from the tenure in villenage, they were not originally within the jurisdiction of the king's courts at Westminster. If therefore a copyholder was ousted by a stranger, he could not implead him by the king's writ, but must proceed by plaint in the lord's court, and make protestation to prosecute the suit in the nature of an assise of *novel disseisin*, or any other writ, which his cause required. Free copyholders were also incapable of suing or being sued in the usual real actions.

Blackst.  
Tracts, 213.

but had a peculiar method of process, called a writ of right close.

65. There were however some cases in which the king's courts had a jurisdiction over copyholds. *ante*, § 4. Thus it appears to have been settled in the reign of Edw. IV. that if a copyholder was ousted by the lord, he might maintain an action of trespass against him, in the king's courts.

66. In the reign of Eliz. it was resolved, that the lessee of a copyhold for one year should maintain an ejectment. For inasmuch as his term was warranted by the law, and the general custom of the realm, it was reasonable that, if he was ejected, he should have an action of this kind. Since the practice of bringing ejectments for copyholds has prevailed, the jurisdiction of lords of manors has fallen into disuse. And the Court of King's Bench has in several instances granted a mandamus against a lord of a manor to admit a copyholder. *Melwich v. Luther*, 4 Rep. 26 *a.* *Rex v. Rennet*, 2 Term R. 197. 6 East, 431..

67. The Court of Chancery has also assumed a jurisdiction over copyholds; upon the principle that equity will not suffer a right to be without a remedy. Therefore, if an erroneous judgement be given in a copyhold court, a bill may be exhibited in Chancery for its reversal. *1 P. Wms.* 330.

68. The Court of Chancery will also compel the lord of a manor to admit a copyholder; and to hold a court for that purpose. It will also moderate the rigour of customs, and relieve against excessive fines, and unreasonable forfeitures; of which an account will be given hereafter. *Cro. Ja.* 368.

69. Where a doubt arises respecting the customs of a manor, the Court of Chancery will direct an issue to try what those customs are: but is not bound to send a custom to be tried which *prima facie* *Fawcett v. Lowther*, 2 Ves. 300.

4 Ves. Jun.  
180.

is void at law. It will also grant a commission to examine witnesses for the purpose of ascertaining the customs of a manor ; and to set out the boundaries of copyholds, where they are intermixed with freeholds.



## TITLE X.

## COPYHOLD.

## CHAP. II.

*Of Copyhold Grants.*

- |                                                |                                                              |
|------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Nature of.</i>                           | 15. <i>A Steward may make Grants.</i>                        |
| 4. <i>All Lords of Manors may make Grants.</i> | 19. <i>To whom Grants may be made.</i>                       |
| 11. <i>Provided they have a lawful Estate.</i> | 22. <i>The Custom must be observed.</i>                      |
| 13. <i>Though under personal Disabilities.</i> | 31. <i>Copyhold Grants take place of many other Estates.</i> |

## SECTION 1.

**I**T has been shown that copyhold estates are derived Nature of.  
 from a voluntary grant by the lord to the copyholder, according to the custom of the manor, under the usual services and returns. And grants of this kind are still made by lords of manors, of lands which have been demised or demisable by copy; whenever they fall into the possession of the lord by escheat, forfeiture, or any other determination of a former grant.

2. Voluntary grants are now also frequently made in those manors, where the custom only authorizes grants for life or lives; for whenever the estates thus granted fall in, they are usually regranted in the same manner.

3. Whenever copyholds are transferred from one person to another, or descend to the heir, a new grant is also made by the lord; so that in fact every Tit. 37. c. 1.  
 copyhold is held by a grant from the lord. But in

all those cases the grantee must be admitted in the lord's court, and the admittance entered on the rolls; for the title of the grantee depends entirely on the entry made in the court-rolls.

All Lords  
of Manors  
may make  
Grants.  
Clarke v.  
Pennifather,  
4 Rep. 23 b.  
1 Inst. 58 b.  
Nevill's case,  
11 Rep. 18 a.

4. It was resolved in 26 Eliz. that all those who have a lawful estate or interest in a manor, be it in fee, in tail, for life or years, or even at will; if a copyhold escheats, or comes to them in any other way, may regrant it, reserving the ancient rents, customs, and services; and it shall bind the lord who has the inheritance or freehold of the manor; for each of them is *dominus pro tempore*, and within the custom. The reason is, that a copyholder does not derive his estate out of that of the lord only; for then the copyhold would cease with the estate of the lord; but from the custom.

Ten. 205.

5. Lord Chief Baron Gilbert says, the principle upon which this doctrine is founded is, that copyholders were originally mere tenants at will; and so, though the lord *pro tempore* had only a particular estate, yet he might grant copyholds; as it could be no prejudice, but rather an advantage, to the succeeding lord, in respect to the rents and services reserved in such grants. Besides, the succeeding lord might turn out the copyholder. And when the law was so altered that the copyholder acquired a permanent interest in his estate, it was still held that a lord *pro tempore* might grant copyholds in fee, though he had but a particular estate.

1 Inst. 58 b.

6. If a lord of a manor devises that his executor shall grant copyholds, according to the custom of the manor, for payment of his debts; the executor, though he has no estate in the manor, may make grants accordingly.

7. If a bishop grants customary lands by copy, 4 Rep. 21 *b*. and dies; the copyhold is not determined. Such a grant shall also bind the Crown, where the temporalities come into the king's hands. Nor are bishops and other ecclesiastical persons or corporations restrained, either by the stat. 1 or 13 Eliz., from making grants of copyhold lands in fee, in tail, for lives, or years, according to the custom of the manor. And no confirmation is necessary to establish such grants, though made by a sole corporation.

4 Bac. Ab. 72.  
Tit. 32. c. 2.

8. In the statute 1 Anne, by which the crown is restrained from alienation, there is an exception, as to grants or admittances of copyholds, parcel of any manor belonging to the Crown.

Tit. 34.

9. It was resolved in 26 Eliz. that a lord of a manor who was only tenant for life, or for any other particular estate, might grant copyholds in reversion, though not executed in the life of the grantor. But in another case the Court was of opinion, that to make such a grant good, there should be a custom to enable the lord to grant in reversion.

Carew's case,  
Moo. 147.

March 6.  
Gilb. Ten.  
204.

10. If tenant in dower of a manor grants a copyhold in reversion, where by custom it may be granted in that way, it will bind the heir; though the reversion be not executed in her lifetime. It is the same of a guardian in socage.

Gay v. Kay,  
Cro. Eliz.  
661.  
1 Roll. Ab.  
499.  
Shapland  
v. Radlin,  
1 Roll. Ab.  
499.

11. There is however one exception to this rule; for persons not having a lawful estate in a manor, cannot make copyhold grants. Thus it is settled, that tenants at sufferance, disseisors, abators, or intruders, cannot bind the lawful owners of a manor by their grants of copyholds.

Provided  
they have  
a lawful  
Estate.  
1 Inst. 58 *b*.  
4 Rep. 24 *a*.

12. A. was tenant of a manor for the life of B., who died; A. continued in possession of the manor, held courts, and made voluntary grants by copy. Ad-

Rous v.  
Artris,  
4 Rep. 24 *a*.  
2 Leon. 45.

judged, that these grants did not bind the lessor; because, after the death of B., A. was only tenant at sufferance.

Though  
under per-  
sonal Dis-  
abilities.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 34.

13. In voluntary grants made by the lord himself, the law does not respect the quality of his person. For be he an infant, *non compos mentis*, an idiot or lunatic, an outlaw or excommunicate, he is capable of making voluntary grants.

Idem.

14. So if the lord of a manor commits felony or murder, and process of outlawry is awarded against him, and after the *exigent*, he grants copyhold estates according to the custom, then is attainted, the grants are good; though by relation the manor was forfeited from the time of the *exigent* awarded. So if the lord had been attainted by verdict or confession, any grant by copy, after the felony or murder committed, would be good, notwithstanding the relation.

A Steward  
may make  
Grants.

15. A steward of a manor may make voluntary grants of copyholds, for he represents the lord to all intents. And where a copyholder of a manor belonging to the Crown was attainted of felony, by which his copyhold escheated; it was held that the steward might grant it again *ex officio*, without any special warrant. For the custom of the manor enabled the steward *pro tempore* to grant it; and the Crown was bound by the custom.

Harris  
v. Jays,  
Cro. Eliz.  
699.

16. A steward appointed by the king's auditor to hold a court *pro hac vice*, cannot make voluntary grants of copyholds; because such an auditor has no authority to appoint stewards.

17. A steward appointed by a private person may make voluntary grants of copyholds, notwithstanding any subsequent disability of the person who appointed him.

18. A lord of a manor granted the stewardship thereof by deed to W. S. for life. The lord was afterwards found a lunatic, and his estate committed to the care of certain persons. Resolved, that the committees could not grant copyholds, as they had no estate in the manor. But the lunatic, by his steward, might grant copyholds, according to the custom. It was however ordered, that the steward should grant none, without the privity of the committees.

Blewitt's case, Ley. 47.

19. All persons who are capable of taking by grant at common law, are also capable of taking grants of copyholds, according to the custom. An infant, a person of nonsane memory, an idiot, a lunatic, an outlaw, or an excommunicated person, may also be grantees of a copyhold.

To whom Grants may be made. Co. Cop. § 35.

20. A lord of a manor cannot make a copyhold grant immediately to his wife.

21. The Rev. W. Symes being rector and lord of the Manor of Compton Martin, in the county of Somerset, the premises in question being parcel of the said manor, held by copy of court-roll, fell into the hands of the said rector by the death of the last tenant, and he demised the same to his wife, to hold to her and two other persons for their lives. It did not appear that there was any custom in this or any other manor, for a lord to grant lands by copy of court-roll to his wife immediately, without the intervention of a third person.

Firebrass v. Pennant, 2 Wils. R. 254.

The Court said, that as this was a provision by a husband for his wife, they would be glad, if possible, to get over that maxim of law, that a husband and wife are one person, therefore could not grant lands to one another. So, where there was no particular custom in a manor, the common law must take place.

This was an original and voluntary grant by the husband to his wife, who could not by law take immediately from him, any more than a monk, who was dead in law, and considered as no person. So here was no person to take, for the wife and husband were only one person. They were dealing with a fundamental maxim of the common law, and might as well repeal the first section of Littleton, as determine this grant from the husband immediately to his wife to be good, where there was not so much as the shadow of a person intervening. The Court determined, reluctantly, that the grant was void.

The Custom  
must be  
observed.

Co.Cop. § 41.

22. In all voluntary grants of copyholds, the custom of the manor must be strictly pursued. Lord Coke says, that though it is in the lord's power to keep the land in his own hands, or to dispose of it at his pleasure; yet, because in disposing of it he is bound to observe the custom precisely in every point, and can neither in estate or tenure bring in any alteration, in this respect the law accounts him custom's instrument.

Ten. 198.

23. Lord Chief Baron Gilbert has observed on this passage, that the reason of it seems to be, because there is nothing but custom to warrant the grant by copy, which ought therefore to be strictly pursued, as to the estates, customs, services, and tenures; or else it is not the estate that was granted before. Yet if there be a copyholder in fee, it seems the lord may release part of the services, and not do any prejudice to the copyholder's estate; for there is an estate in being, that appears to be the old estate. But when the lord grants a new estate by copy, since it is an estate against common right, and warranted only by the custom, that must be strictly pursued to bind the heir.

24. So strict is the law in this respect, says the Ten. 199. same author, that if the rent be reserved in silver, where it anciently was in gold ; or payable at two feasts, where anciently it was payable at one ; or if two copyholds escheat, one usually demised for 20 shillings and the other for 10 shillings, and the lord demises both for 30 shillings ; it is not good.

25. With respect to the estate which the lord may grant, it has been resolved in many cases, that a custom enabling the lord to grant greater estates, will also enable him to grant lesser ones. Thus where the custom of the manor was that copyholds might be granted in fee simple ; a grant to one and his heirs of his body was held to be good. For whether it was a fee simple conditional, or an estate tail ; it was within the custom. So the lord might grant for life, or for years, by the same custom ; for an estate in fee simple included all. 1 Inst. 52 b. Gravenor v. Tedd, 4 Rep. 23 a.

26. The custom of a manor was to grant copyholds in fee or for life *solummodo ea capienti extra manus domini*. A grant was made to one for life, remainder in tail, remainder in fee. It was objected, that it ought to be an immediate taking, therefore the remainder was void ; also that the custom did not warrant any estate but for life, and in fee. The Court resolved, that the grant was good enough ; and that the custom that it should be granted *solummodo ea capienti* was void. Stanton v. Barnes, Cro. Eliz. 373. 1 Roll. Ab. 511.

27. If customary land has been always granted in fee, and upon an escheat the lord grants it for life, it will be good ; for the custom which enables him to grant in fee, will enable him to grant for life. After the death of the grantee for life, the lord may grant the same in fee ; for the grant for life was no interruption of the custom. Kemp v. Carter, 1 Leon. 55.

Ven v.  
Howell,  
1 Roll. Ab.  
511.

28. If the custom of the manor be, that copyholds may be granted for three lives, an estate may be granted to three persons, for the lives of two ; for this is not a greater estate than for three lives.

Downs v.  
Hopkins,  
Cro. Eliz.  
323.

29. It was found by special verdict, that the land was ancient copyhold, demisable for one or two lives ; that it was granted by copy to J. Downes, the husband of the plaintiff, *habendum* to him for life, and to the plaintiff *durante viduitate sua*. The question was, if this were warranted by the custom, for the wife's estate, for it was no absolute, but a limited estate. All the justices held, without any argument, that it was good ; for when the custom warranted the greater estate for life to be made, it warranted the lesser estate ; especially here, because this was also an estate for life, but limited, and as it were conditional.

Smartle v.  
Penhallow,  
2 Ld. Raym.  
994.  
6 Mod. 63.

30. By the custom of the manor of Tregoar in Cornwall, customary lands are demisable by copy of court-roll, to two or three persons, for term of their lives, and the life of the longest liver of them, *habendum successive sicut nominantur in charta, &c. et non aliter* : and the person first named in the grant enjoys the tenements to him alone during his life, and so does the second and third ; and the lord is entitled to a heriot of every such person successively dying seised. The lord granted the tenements in question to one Thomas Norton and his assigns, *habendum* to him and his assigns, for the lives of J. P., W. W., and of the said T. Norton, and of the longer liver of them *successive*. The question was, whether this grant was warranted by the custom. It was contended that it was void in *totò*, not being pursuant to the custom ; for the grant was to Thomas Norton and his assigns, *habendum* for his own life, and the lives of J. P. and W. W., which varied from



the custom ; and though the grant was of an inferior interest than was allowed by the custom, yet it being prejudicial to the lord, in respect of his tenure, and of his services, the custom would not warrant it. In this case T. Norton was tenant for his own life, and the lives of J. P. and W. W. ; for they were not named to take an interest, but only added by way of limitation of estate ; so that upon the death of T. Norton, if either of the two other lives were in being, there would be an occupant of the copyhold, which would be an injury to the lord, when a stranger would have power to come in without his consent. Lord Chief Justice Holt said, the custom consisted of three parts ; 1. As to the constitution of the estate granted, which must be by copy of court-roll. 2. As to the extent of the estate, which must not be above three lives. 3. As to the manner of the estate, which was different from the constitution of the law, by the operation of the custom ; viz. to two or three, *habendum successive sicut nominantur*. When a custom enabled the lord to grant for three lives, he could grant for one life, for it was within the custom. The cases cited in support of the grant were in point. Where the custom was to grant in fee, yet the lord might grant to one for life, with a remainder to another in tail, as in the case of Stanton v. Barnes ; and it was good, ante § 26. though the custom was to grant an entire estate in fee simple. So where the custom was to grant for life, a grant *durante viduitate* was good ; as in the case of Downes v. Hopkins, though it had a different ante § 29. determination ; because it was a lesser estate, and so within the custom. Here the grant was only to T. Norton during his own life, and the lives of the other two ; the consequence of which was, that if T. N. died living the *cestuis que vie*, since there could be no oc-

cupant of a copyhold estate, the lord upon his death would have his heriot custom, and also the land. So that it would be no inconvenience, though the lord had no heriot upon the death of the other two, because he would have the land itself.

The Court was unanimously of opinion that the grant was good.

Copyhold  
Grants take  
place of  
many other  
Estates.

31. As copyhold grants derive their effect from the custom of the manor, and not from the estate of the lord, they are considered as paramount to, and will take place of, many other titles, which are prior to them in point of time.

Cham v.  
Dover,  
1 Leon. 16.  
4 Rep. 24 a.  
8 Rep. 63 b.

32. A lord of a manor granted copyhold lands for three lives, and afterwards married. The lives determined during the coverture. The lord entered upon those lands, and kept them in his own hands for some time; he then granted them out again by copy, and died. The wife of the lord claimed dower. It was resolved that the copyholder should hold the lands discharged of dower; because he was in by the custom, which was paramount to the title of dower.

Co. Cop.  
§ 34.  
1 Inst. 58 b.  
n. 6.

33. Lord Coke says, if the heir, after the death of the ancestor, and before an assignment of dower to the widow, had granted lands by copy, the widow might avoid these grants; because instantly upon the death of the husband, her title to dower was complete, and nothing more was wanting to the confirmation of her interest.

34. Voluntary grants of copyholds will also take place of any prior charges or incumbrances created by the lord, who makes such grants.

Sands v.  
Hempston,  
2 Leon. 109.

35. The Earl of Westmoreland being seised in fee of the manor of Kennington, granted a rent-charge to Sir W. Cordell for life. He afterwards made a

feoffment of the manor to Sir John Clifton, who made a voluntary grant of a copyhold to one Sands for life, according to the custom of the manor, the same being an ancient copyhold. The rent-charge being in arrear, a distress was made on the copyhold granted to Sands. After great difference of opinion, it seems to have been finally settled that the copyhold was not chargeable ; because the estate of the copyholder was derived from the custom, which was paramount to the charge.

3 Leon. 59.  
Dyer, 270.  
2 Brown.  
208.  
Gilb. Ten.  
202.

36. The same point is laid down by Lord Coke, who says, if the lord of a manor acknowledges a statute, and then grants lands by copy, and after the manor is delivered to the cognizee in extent, the grant by copy cannot by this be impeached.

Co. Cop.  
§ 34.

37. Although, by an entry for a condition broken, prior estates and incumbrances are in general defeated ; yet, copyhold grants form an exception, of which an account will be given hereafter.

## TITLE X.

## COPYHOLD.

## CHAP. III.

*Of the Incidents to Copyholds.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                           |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>1. <i>Copyholders subject to Fealty, &amp;c.</i></p> <p>4. <i>Entitled to Estovers.</i></p> <p>8. <i>But cannot in general commit Waste.</i></p> <p>16. <i>Copyholds are descendible.</i></p> <p>18. <i>Alienable and devisable.</i></p> <p>20. <i>May be leased for Years.</i></p> <p>23. <i>Not liable to Debts.</i></p> <p>24. <i>Subject to Free Bench.</i></p> <p>36. <i>Which is barred by a Joinder.</i></p> | <p>38. <i>And by the Alienation of the Husband.</i></p> <p>45. <i>Or even an Agreement to convey.</i></p> <p>49. <i>And by Forfeiture.</i></p> <p>50. <i>And by a Grant of the Freehold to the Husband.</i></p> <p>51. <i>A Devise may bar Free Bench.</i></p> <p>53. <i>Subject to Curtesy.</i></p> <p>58. <i>What Statutes extend to Copyholds.</i></p> |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

Copyholders  
subject to  
Fealty, &c.  
Lit. § 84,  
132.  
1 Inst. 63 a.

**B**Y the general custom of all manors, several services are required to be done by copyholders to their lords. The first of these is fealty. Lord Coke says, the doing fealty by a copyholder proves that so long as he observes the customs of the manor, and performs his services, he has a fixed estate. For tenant at will, that may be put out at pleasure, shall not do fealty. The taking of the oath of fealty is now always respited.

Co. Sup.  
§ 10.

2. Suit of court is another service to which all copyholders are bound; for otherwise it would be impossible for the lord to hold a copyhold court; every copyholder is therefore obliged to attend the lord's court, and to be sworn of the homage.

3. In many manors copyholders are also liable, by particular custom, to the payment of rent-service, rents of assise and reliefs; and to the performance of a variety of services.

4. It was resolved in 8 Ja. I. that every copyholder may of common right, and as a thing incident to the grant, take housebote, hedgebote, and ploughbote, upon his copyhold. This right may however be restrained by custom; namely, that the copyholder shall not take it, unless by assignment of the lord, or his bailiff. The lord cannot therefore cut down all the timber trees on a copyhold estate; but must leave sufficient for the reparation of the houses, and for ploughbote, &c.

Entitled to Estovers. Heydon v. Smith, 13 Rep. 68.

5. A copyholder brought an action of trespass against the lord of the manor for cutting down trees on his copyhold, alleging a custom within the manor that every copyholder for life, &c. had used to have all timber trees growing upon his land for the reparation of houses; and that all the timber trees growing upon the said lands were not sufficient for the reparations, &c. The whole Court were clearly of opinion that judgement ought to be given for the copyholder, because it appeared he had not enough to repair without those trees; therefore judgement could not be given for the defendant without overthrowing the case of Heydon v. Smith. And Lord Chief Justice Holt said, that a copyholder holds the trees by copy of court-roll, as well as the land; therefore it seemed to him that the lord could not cut the trees growing upon the copyhold. That Cro. Eliz. 361. says, the copyholder might lop the trees without a special custom, which shewed that the copyholder had a special property in them.

Ashmead v. Ranger, 1 Ld. Raym. 551.

1 Salk. 638.

Sandford  
v. Stevens,  
3 Buls. 282.Ayray v.  
Billingham,  
Finch, 199.But cannot  
in general  
commit  
Waste.  
13 Rep. 68.Glascok's  
case,  
4 Leon. 238.  
Denn v.  
Johnson,  
10 East, 266.  
Rolls v.  
Mason,  
Brownl. 132.Rockey v.  
Huggins,  
Gro. Car.  
220.

This judgement was affirmed in the Exchequer Chamber, and reversed in the House of Lords\*.

6. Where the custom of the manor is, that the copyholder shall employ the timber cut down in the reparation of his tenements, yet as to the tops and bark, which cannot be employed in repairs, he may sell them towards defraying the charges of the reparations.

7. The Court of Chancery will direct a commission to set out sufficient timber and wood for the copyholder, for all manner of botes and estovers, according to the custom used within the manor; and the rest for the use of the lord.

8. A copyholder cannot commit any kind of waste, unless there is a particular custom to warrant it, for the timber growing on copyhold estates is, by the general custom of most manors, the property of the lord, who may cut it down; provided he leaves a sufficient quantity for the repairs of the copyhold.

9. A copyholder in fee may however, by the particular custom of a manor, have a right to cut down timber trees growing on his copyhold, and to sell them at his pleasure, which has been adjudged to be a good custom. It has also been held, that where a copyholder for life had a power of nominating his successor, a custom enabling him to fell timber was good; because he was *quasi* a copyholder in fee.

10. A custom that a copyholder for life may cut down timber is unreasonable and void; for it is a destruction.

---

\* The printed case in this appeal is in Mr. Serjeant Hill's Collection of Cases in the House of Lords, (now in Lincoln's Inn Library), on the back of which is written by Lord Chief Baron Ward—"This judgement was reversed by eleven against ten lords, and against the opinion of all the judges of England."

of the inheritance ; and contrary to the nature of an estate for life. In a modern case it was held, that a copyholder for three lives, without any power of compelling his lord to renew, could not cut down timber. *Mardiner v. Elliot, 2 Term R. 746.*

11. The right of a copyholder to cut down timber is a legal one ; where he exceeds or abuses it, he will forfeit his copyhold ; therefore the Court of Chancery will not grant an injunction, at the suit of a lord of a manor, to restrain his copyholder from committing waste. *Dunch v. Bampton, 4 Ves. 700.*

12. Lord C. B. Gilbert says, a copyholder of inheritance cannot, without a special custom, dig for mines ; neither can the lord dig in the copyholder's land, on account of the great prejudice he would thereby do to the copyhold. *Ten. 327.*

13. An action of trover having been brought by the lord of a manor, by the direction of the Court of Chancery, against a customary tenant, for ore dug and disposed of by the tenant ; there never having been a mine of copper before discovered in the manor, the jury could not find that the customary tenant might by custom dig and open new copper mines : the Court of Chancery held that neither the tenant without the licence of the lord, nor the lord without the consent of the tenant, could dig in the copper mines ; being new mines. *Ep. Winton v. Knight, 1 P. Wms. 408.*

14. It was resolved in a modern case, that the lord of a manor, as such, had no right, without a custom, to enter upon the copyholds within his manor, under which there were mines and veins of coal, in order to work them ; and that the copyholder might maintain trespass against him. *Bourne v. Taylor, 10 East. 189. Curtis v. Daniel, Id. 273.*

15. If a copyholder suffers the buildings to decay, it is waste ; and if a copyholder builds a house on his land, it is waste to pull it down. *1 Inst. 63 a. Estcourt v. Weeks, 1 Salk. 186. Gilb. Ten. 235.*

Copyholds  
are descen-  
dible.

Tit. 29. c. 5.

16. Copyholds which are granted to a person and his heirs, are descendible, according to the rules of the common law ; unless the custom is otherwise, in which case the custom must prevail.

17. Copyholds do not however in other respects partake of the nature of freehold estates of inheritance. For as they are descendible only by custom, they have not any of the collateral qualities of descent, unless those qualities are also established by the custom.

Alienable  
and devis-  
able.

Tit. 37.

18. Copyhold estates are not alienable by feoffment, or other common law assurance ; but by the general custom of all manors, a copyholder may, by surrendering his estate to the lord, to the use of another, effectually alienate it.

Tit. 38. c. 3.

19. Copyholds are also in general indirectly devisable, though not within the statute of wills.

4 East. 271.

There are however some customary estates in the north, which are not devisable, either directly or indirectly.

May be leased  
for Years.  
Roll. Ab.  
Cop. M.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 51.

20. A copyholder may by the general custom make a lease for one year ; and may, with the licence of the lord, make a lease of his copyhold for any number of years. Lord Coke says, if the lessee be ousted, he shall not sue in the lord's court by plaint, but shall have an ejectment at the common law : because he has not a customary estate by copy, but a warrantable estate by the rules of the common law.

Gilb. Ten.  
299.

21. In a case of this kind the lessee may assign over his lease, or make an under-lease for years, without any new licence. For the lord's interest is discharged for so many years ; and if the copyholder dies without heirs, yet the lease shall stand against the lord, by reason of his licence, which amounts to a confirmation.

Turner v.  
Hodges,  
Hut. 102.  
Vide Gilb.  
Ten. 299.



22. The lord can only grant a licence to lease, *Gilb. Idem.* during the continuance of his own estate in the manor; therefore a lease for years, made by licence of a lord, who is only tenant for life, will cease at the death of the lord.

23. Copyholds are not liable to the payment of debts, even of record; nor to debts due to the crown, because if a creditor were allowed to take possession of a copyhold, it would be prejudicial to the lord. Upon the death of a copyholder of inheritance, his estate is not assets, in the hands of his heir, as freehold estates are, for payment of specialty debts. *Not liable to Debts. Rex v. Budd, Park, R. 190. Tit. 14. § 79. 4 Rep. 22 a. 8 Ves. 394. Coomber v. Gibson, Tit. 38.*

24. Copyholders not having the freehold of their lands, their widows are not entitled to dower. But in most manors in which there are copyholds, there is a custom that the widows of copyholders shall have a certain portion of their husband's lands, for their support, which is generally called the widow's free bench. As this right depends upon the particular customs of each manor, it varies in different manors, both as to the quantity to which the widow is entitled, and the conditions under which it is held. *Subject to Free Bench. 4 Rep. 22 a.*

25. In most manors free bench consists of one half of the husband's copyhold; in others of a third, or a fifth, in some few of the whole. It is generally an estate for life; but in many manors is forfeited by intinency, or a second marriage. *1 Inst. 33 b. 1 Keb. 926.*

26. In the manors of East and West Emborne in Berkshire, the widows of copyholders are entitled to free bench, *dum sola et casta fuerint.* If a widow is found guilty of intinency, she loses her free bench; unless she comes into Court riding backwards upon a black ram, and repeats certain words; the same custom prevails in the manor of Chadleworth in Berkshire, and that of Torre in Devonshire. *Blount. Fragm.*

27. Free bench is not only incident to copyholds of inheritance; but also, in some manors, to copyholds granted only for life.

Howard v.  
Bartlet,  
Hob. 181.

28. Lord Howard being seised of the manor of Stockwood in Dorsetshire, where the custom was, that the widows of copyholders for lives should enjoy, during their widowhood, the customary lands of which their husbands died seised; granted a customary tenement to John Bartlet for life, by copy. It was resolved, that upon the death of J. Bartlet his wife should have her widow's estate in the land, it being an excrescence, which by the custom grew of itself out of the estate.

Salisbury  
v. Hurd,  
infra.

Gilb. Ten.  
288.  
Vaughan  
v. Atkins,  
Tit. 37. c. 1.  
Tit. 12. c. 2.

29. A right to free bench attaches before the admittance of the husband, upon a descent or surrender. But a widow is not entitled to free bench out of the trust of a copyhold.

Baker v.  
Beresford,  
Raym. 58.

30. Where the widow of the ancestor holds a moiety of the copyhold, as her free bench; the widow of the son will only be entitled to a moiety of the remaining moiety; upon a principle established in the case of dower.

Tit. 6. c. 3.  
§ 20.

4 Rep. 30 b.

31. Where a widow is entitled to free bench, she shall have all the incidents to dower; therefore will be entitled to the same damages as a dowress, under the statute of Merton.

Oland's Case.  
5 Rep. 116.  
Cro. Eliz.  
460.  
Tit. 3. c. 1.  
§ 24.

32. Where free bench determines by the act of God, there shall be emblements, as in the case of a freehold estate for life. Where it determines by the act of the widow, as by incontinency, or a second marriage, it is otherwise.

Kitch. 123.

33. If the widow be entitled to the whole of the copyhold, as her free bench, she may enter immediately; as the law casts the possession upon her, in the same manner as it does upon the heir, in cases of

descent. Where the widow takes a portion only, it should seem that the possession is not cast upon her, any more than in the case of dower at common law. Consequently that she is not entitled to enter, without an assignment.

34. An ejectment will not lie for a third part of a copyhold, as free bench; but the widow must levy a plaint in the manor court; in the nature of a writ of dower; and the homage must set out the same. If the custom be for the widow to have a third part, not in the nature of dower, that is, in severalty, but in common with the heir, it is then otherwise.

*Chapman v. Sharpe, 2 Show. R. 198.*

35. When the widow is admitted to her free bench, she holds of the lord; and the heir is not admitted during her life: which Lord Chief Baron Gilbert says, plainly proves that the course of tenure of copyholds is not like that of freeholds. For in that case she should hold of the heir.

*Burneford v. Packington, 1 Leon. 1. Ten. 173. Tit. 6. c. 3. § 29.*

36. A jointure, whether legal or equitable, is a good bar to the claim of a widow to free bench, as well as to dower.

*Which is barred by a Jointure.*

37. A man, in consideration of his marriage, and to make some provision for his intended wife, by deed executed before marriage settled upon her, if she should survive him, part of his real estate for her jointure, and in full bar and recompence of all dower or thirds which she could be entitled to, or any way claim, out of any lands, tenements, messuages, or hereditaments, of which he then was, or ever after during the coverture should be, seised of freehold or inheritance. After the marriage the husband purchased copyhold estates, of which the wife got possession upon his death, as her free bench. It was decreed against the widow, upon the principle that

*Walker v. Walker, 1 Ves. 54.*

2 Ab. Eq.  
101. S. P.

the jointure barred her of free bench, as well as of dower.

And by the  
Alienation of  
the Husband.

38. The right to free bench does not, like dower, attach on all the copyholds whereof the husband was possessed during the coverture, but only on those of which he died possessed, or as the custom usually expresses it, whereof he died seised ; so that a copyholder may defeat his wife's right to free bench by any species of alienation.

Parker v.  
Blicke,  
Cro. Car.  
568.

39. Where the custom of the manor was, that the wives of copyholders, dying tenants of the manor, should be endowed ; a copyholder became a bankrupt ; the commissioners bargained and sold his copyhold for the benefit of his creditors. The copyholder died before the bargainee was admitted. Resolved, that the widow was barred of her free bench, because her husband did not die tenant.

Benson  
v. Scott,  
4 Mod. 251.  
Skin. 406.

40. A person surrendered his copyhold by way of mortgage, and died without paying off the money, leaving a widow, who claimed dower. The Court said the widow's title did not commence by the marriage, if it did, the husband then could do nothing to prejudice it ; but it was plain he might alien or extinguish his right. The free bench grew out of the estate of the husband, it was his dying seised which gave the widow a title ; as the husband had a defeasible estate, so the wife might have her free bench defeated.

Salisbury  
v. Hurd,  
Cowp. 481.

41. Upon a motion for a new trial, it appeared that the custom of the manor of Warminster was, to grant copyholds for three lives ; that the first life had a power of surrendering the whole estate ; and the widow of a tenant who died seised was entitled to her free bench. That one F., then a copyholder for three lives, surrendered to Hurd, the deceased husband

of the defendant, who, by licence from the last lord, demised to Singer for 99 years, by way of mortgage. Then Hurd died, and Singer demised to the plaintiff. The widow of Hurd claimed her free bench, there being no special custom to make a demise of this kind; therefore contended that the estate of her husband was not determined, according to the custom of the manor, but he must be deemed to have died seised of the copyhold, and the widow still entitled to her free bench. On the other side it was said, that the copyholder, having obtained the lord's licence, might do what he pleased with the estate, and could have conveyed it from the wife, in any form he thought fit; consequently her right of free bench must be subject to the mortgage.

The Court was of opinion, that the widow was not entitled to free bench: They held there was a great difference between the custom of free bench, found in this case, and dower: the widow was entitled to dower of all her husband was seised of during the coverture, but here her right was confined to such estates as he should die seised of; consequently as between lord and tenant, they might defeat the wife's estate when they pleased.

42. A surrender of a copyhold to the lord, for the purpose of alienation, will therefore operate as a bar to free bench. And even a surrender to the use of the surrenderor's will bars his widow; because there the copyholder parted with his estate.

Vaughan  
v. Atkins,  
Tit. 37. c. 1.

1 Inst. 59 b.

43. It was held in 2. Ja. I. that if a copyholder makes a lease for years, his widow shall not avoid it, without a special custom, because the lessee comes in under the custom, and by the lord's licence, as well as the widow.

Fardey's  
Case,  
Cro. Ja. 36.

Ten. 321.

44. Lord Chief Baron Gilbert makes the following observations on this case.—“ It seems to me that the feme shall not in this case be endowed of the third part of the rent and reversion ; because customs ought to be strictly pursued ; and that is only to be endowed of the land. Yet it seems, after the lease ended, she shall be endowed, for the husband did die seised ; the possession of his lessee being his own possession. But it was agreed in this case, that by special custom the feme might avoid the lease. This among other cases proves that a copyholder may dispose of his land, and bar his wife of her free bench, unless there be a particular custom that she shall avoid any alienation, &c. made by him ; for then the particular custom shall, as it seems, avoid his charge, as well in the case of copyhold, as of freehold estates, by the common law.”

Or even an  
Agreement  
to convey.

45. Even an agreement to convey will, in equity, bar the widow of a copyholder of her right to free bench.

Hinton v.  
Hinton,  
2 Ves. 631.  
Amb. 277.

46. A husband copyholder of an estate, to which, by the custom of the manor, his widow was entitled, as her free bench, in case he died seised thereof, being in gaol, entered into an agreement for the sale of that estate to his son, for a valuable consideration. The husband died without having executed the agreement, by an actual surrender of the copyhold, and passing the legal estate to the son ; who brought his bill for a specific performance of the agreement, to the exclusion of the widow's free bench.

Lord Hardwicke was of opinion, there was a strong equity that the widow should be bound, as well as the heir ; and decreed the purchaser entitled to relief against the widow.

47. A bill was filed for a foreclosure, and to compel a surrender of a copyhold estate, under a covenant in the mortgage deed, to surrender those premises as an additional security. The question was, whether this covenant of the mortgagor barred the right of his widow to free bench. The custom of the manor appeared by the evidence to be, that the copyholder could convey these estates by surrender; but where he died seised of the estate, the widow was entitled to it during her widowhood, as her free bench.

Brown v. Raindle,  
3 Ves. Jun.  
256.

Sir R. P. Arden M. R. said it was perfectly clear that the right of a copyholder's wife might be barred by her husband, by any act done for valuable consideration, whether conveying a legal estate, or otherwise. Upon the evidence, supposing this a widow's estate, arising out of an estate of which the husband was complete owner, and could bar her estate, he was of opinion it was that sort of estate which any equitable conveyance would bind. Any act of the husband for valuable consideration, barred her equally with a legal surrender; and she was compellable in equity to surrender pursuant to such contract.

48. There are however many manors in which the custom is, that the widow shall have her free bench of all the customary tenements whereof her husband was seised, at any time during the coverture.

49. If a copyholder does any act which, by the custom of the manor, amounts to a forfeiture of his estate, his wife will thereby lose her free bench; because every thing which determines the estate of the copyholder, has that effect.

And by Forfeiture.  
Anon.  
1 Freem. 516.  
infra, c. 5.

50. Where the lord conveys the freehold of the land to the copyholder in fee, his wife will thereby

And by a Grant of the Freehold to



the Husband.  
Lashmere  
v. Avery,  
Cro. Ja. 126.  
infra, c. 6.  
Howard v.  
Bartlet,  
Hob. 181.

A Devise  
may bar  
Free Bench.  
Tit. 6. c. 5.  
§ 21, &c.

Ward v.  
Ward,  
Amb. 299.

Subject to  
Curtesy,  
4 Rep. 22 b.  
Cro. Eliz.  
361.

Savage's  
Case,  
2 Leon.  
109. 208.

lose her free bench ; because the copyhold is destroyed, as will be shown hereafter. If the lord grants the freehold of a copyhold to a stranger, the wife will not lose her free bench ; because this does not destroy the copyhold.

51. A general devise of other lands will not bar a widow of free bench : for the same reason that it will not bar dower. But where it is expressed to be in satisfaction of dower, the widow is then put to her election.

52. A testator, after devising to his wife, declared in his will, that what he had before given her, should be in full of all dower, and right of dower, or thirds, which she might have or claim in or out of his real estate. It was decreed by Lord Hardwicke, that the devise was a satisfaction of the wife's right to free bench of a copyhold, which the testator had purchased after the making of his will ; for free bench was a customary right, *nomine dotis*, and so declared by Bracton.

53. Curtesy is not incident to copyholds, unless there be a special custom to warrant it. Where a custom of this kind prevails, it is construed strictly, and not extended beyond the words. Thus, if the custom be, that where a man marries a customary tenant, he shall have curtesy ; the woman must be a copyholder at the time of the marriage.

54. The custom of a manor was, that if any man took to wife a customary tenant, had issue, and outlived his wife, he should be tenant by the curtesy. A person pleaded that he took to wife one Ann, to whom, during the said coverture, a customary tenement of the said manor did descend ; that he had issue, and that she was dead. It was adjudged, that the husband was not entitled to curtesy, under



the custom ; because his wife was not a customary tenant at the time of the marriage.

Lord Ch. Just. Holt, and Powell, Just. held this age not to be law ; but it is observable that it is stated by Lord C. B. Gilbert, without any expression of dissent.

1 P. Wms.  
69.  
2 Ld. Raym.  
1028.  
Ten. 326.

55. Although the wife be not actually admitted to the copyhold, yet the husband will be entitled to curtesy.

56. The custom of a manor was, that if a man had a wife seised in fee of copyhold lands, according to the custom of the manor, and had issue by her, that he should be tenant by the curtesy. It was found, that A. a copyholder was seised, and had issue, a daughter, who was married to J. S. and had issue. A. died, his daughter entered, but died without being admitted. The Court seemed of opinion, that the husband was entitled to be tenant by the curtesy, before admittance of the wife ; and that the delay of admittance by the lord, should not prejudice the husband, who was a third person.

Ever v.  
Aston,  
Moo. 271.

Gilb. Ten.  
287.

57. By the custom of some manors the husband of a copyholder is entitled to curtesy, though he has no issue by his wife. But such estate is forfeitable by a second marriage.

58. Copyhold estates are as much under the control of the legislature as any others. But where they are not expressly mentioned in an act of parliament, it often does not extend to them, upon the ground that it was not the intention of the legislature that it should affect them.

What Sta-  
tutes extend  
to Copy-  
holds.

59. Lord Coke has laid down the following rules for distinguishing between those statutes that do, or do not extend to copyholds. Where an act of parliament alters the service, tenure, or interest of the

Co. Cop.  
§ 53.

land, or other thing, in prejudice of the lord, or of the custom of the manor; or in prejudice of the tenant; there the general words of such an act of parliament extend not to copyholds. But where an act is generally made for the good of the commonwealth, and no prejudice may accrue by reason of the alteration of any interest, service, tenure, or custom of the manor, there usually copyholds are within the general purview of such acts.

60. In conformity to these principles it is held, that the statute 4 Hen. VII. of fines, as to their being a bar after five years non-claim; the statutes of bankruptcy, the statutes of limitations, the statutes of mortmain, the statute 7 Ann. relative to conveyances by infant trustees, and many others, extend to copyholds. It has been already stated, that the statute *De Donis* extends to copyholds, where the custom co-operates with it.

61. But it is also settled, that the statute of Westminster 2. c. 18. which gives the writ of *elegit*; the statute 11 Hen. VII. respecting alienations by a wife of the lands of her husband; the statute of uses and jointures; the statute of wills; the statute 32 Hen. VIII. as to discontinuance, by the wife, of the husband's lands; the statute 13 Eliz., for making accountants lands liable to the debts of the Crown; and several other statutes, do not extend to copyholds.

Tit. 32. c. 3. 62. Copyhold estates are within the 4th section of the statute of frauds, concerning the sale of lands; and the 7th section, which requires declarations of trust to be in writing; but they are not within the sections of the statute which relate to devises of lands.

Tit. 38. c. 4.

## TITLE X.

## COPYHOLD.

## CHAP. IV.

*Of Fines and Heriots.*

- |                                                                    |                                                          |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Fines upon Descent.</i>                                      | 18. <i>Nor on an Agreement to surrender.</i>             |
| 3. <i>Upon voluntary Grants.</i>                                   | 20. <i>Only due on Admittance.</i>                       |
| 4. <i>Upon Admission of Tenants by the Curtesy and Free Bench.</i> | 26. <i>Fines on Change of the Lord.</i>                  |
| 5. <i>Upon Alienation.</i>                                         | 30. <i>No more than two Years value can be demanded.</i> |
| 8. <i>Upon a Devise.</i>                                           | 41. <i>Except on voluntary Grants.</i>                   |
| 10. <i>Not due from Remaindermen.</i>                              | 43. <i>Fines must be assessed severally.</i>             |
| 13. <i>Without a Special Custom.</i>                               | 44. <i>When payable.</i>                                 |
| 15. <i>Nor unless there is an Alteration of the Tenant.</i>        | 45. <i>How recovered.</i>                                |
|                                                                    | 49. <i>Of Heriots.</i>                                   |

## SECTION 1.

**W**HEN copyholds were allowed to descend to the children of the copyholders, the lords, from whose permission and continued acquiescence the right of descent was derived, would not admit the heir of a copyholder to succeed to the land whereof his ancestor died possessed, without paying something; from which arose a custom, that upon every descent of a copyhold a sum of money, or fine, was due from the heir to the lord, as a consideration for the renewal of the grant. And where a person enters as special occupant, he is also liable to the payment of a fine.

Fines upon Descent.

Gilb. Ten.  
327.

4 Rep. 22 b.  
Gilb. Ten.  
292.

infra, c. 5.

Upon volun-  
tary Grants.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 56.  
4 Rep. 22 b.  
Cro. Ja. 103.

Upon Ad-  
mission of  
Tenant  
by the Cur-  
tesy or in  
Free Bench.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 56.

Upon Aliena-  
tion.

Tit. 37. c. 1.  
1 Inst. 59 b.

Drury v.  
Mam,  
1 Atk. 95.

Vide 5 Geo. 2.  
c. 30. § 26.

2. The lord is not however entitled to a fine upon a descent, till the heir is admitted: if the heir refuses to come in and accept his ancestor's copyhold, the Lord cannot compel him, but may seize the estate to his own use. The death of the heir, or an alienation made by him before admittance, will not however deprive the lord of his fine.

3. If a lord of a manor, having a copyhold by escheat or forfeiture, or other means, makes a voluntary admittance to it, which implies a grant, he becomes entitled to a fine from the new tenant.

4. Where a man acquires a copyhold by the custom of curtesy; or a woman acquires a copyhold by the custom of free bench; a fine is payable in some manors on the admittance of these tenants, and in others not.

5. As the power of alienating copyholds was originally derived from the bounty of the lord, who is still a party to every alienation, by admitting the alienee to become his tenant, a fine was paid to the lord; from which arose a general custom, that a fine was due to the lord upon every alienation of a copyhold.

6. These fines are preserved by the 6th section of the statute 12 Cha. II. c. 24; by which it is provided, that nothing in that act shall take away any fines for alienation due by particular customs of particular manors and places.

7. The assignees of a bankrupt must be admitted, and are consequently subject to the payment of a fine. Lord Hardwicke has therefore recommended it to commissioners of bankrupts to except copyholds out of the assignment of the bankrupt's estate, as it would save two fines. For the commissioners might convey to the purchaser in the first instance.

8. Where a copyhold is devised, the devisee must be admitted, and is subject to the payment of a fine. Upon a Devise.  
The executor of a devisee for years of a copyhold, claiming under the testator, must also be admitted, and pay a fine.

9. Henry Grey having a copyhold estate, devised it to John Taylour and Arthur Lake, their executors and administrators, for 99 years, if three persons should so long live; after the death of the testator, Taylour and Lake were admitted, and paid a fine of 280*l*. Taylour survived Lake and died, having appointed Doctor John Taylour his executor. The question was, whether he was obliged to be admitted, and to pay a fine. A case being sent out of Chancery for the opinion of the Court of King's Bench, it was certified that the executor of the surviving trustee ought to come in and be admitted, and pay a fine. Earl of Bath v. Abney, 1 Burr. 206.

10. By the general custom of copyholds, the admittance of a tenant for life is an admittance of the persons in remainder; therefore no fine is due from the remainder-men. For although there is an alteration of the tenant; yet there is no alteration of the estate; the fine not being assessed for the particular estate, but for the whole inheritance. Not due from Remainder-men. Brown's Case, 4 Rep. 22. Cro. Eliz. 504. 1 Mod. 102. 1 Burr. 212.

11. The father being seised of a copyhold estate, surrendered it to the use of himself and his wife for their lives, remainder to his son in tail. The father and mother were admitted, and paid a fine; being both dead, the son prayed to be admitted to the remainder, which was done, and a fine of 58*l*. set upon him; which he refused to pay, alleging that none was due, he being admitted by the admittance of his father and mother. It was adjudged, that no fine was due, unless there was a special custom for it. Barnes v. Corke, 3 Lev. 308.

*Auncelme v.  
Auncelme,  
Cro. Ja. 31.*

12. A copyholder of inheritance surrendered to the use of his wife for life, remainder to his youngest son in fee. The wife was admitted, but the son refused to be admitted during his mother's life. Afterwards without being admitted, he surrendered to the use of the plaintiff in the lifetime of his mother. It was adjudged, that the admittance of the wife was the admittance of the son, in remainder: for she being admitted to the particular estate, the remainder depended on that, and vested without other admittance; for both made but one estate.

*Without a  
special  
Custom.  
4 Rep. 23 a.  
Blackburn v.  
Graves,  
1 Mod. 120.*

13. In some manors fines are due, by particular custom, on the admittance of persons in remainder; but even in this case the admittance of the tenant for life is said to be the admittance of the person in remainder, but not to prejudice the lord of his fine; to which he may be entitled by the particular custom of the manor. And it was held, in the following modern case, that a custom requiring a remainder man, coming into possession on the death of a tenant for life, to be admitted, and to pay a fine, was good.

*Doe v.  
Jenney,  
5 East, 522.*

14. E. Jenney was admitted in 1749 to certain copyhold estates in fee, upon whose admission a full fine was paid. In the year 1765 he surrendered the lands to the use of himself for life, remainder to the defendant, then Ann Brook, spinster, for life, with divers remainders over. On the 10th of April 1766, E. Jenney was admitted tenant of these lands, to hold to himself for life, according to the form and effect of the said surrender by the rod, at the will of the lord, according to the custom of the manor, by the rents and services therefore due and accustomed, saving every person's right. No fine was paid by E. Jenney on his admission in 1766 as tenant for

life, under the marriage settlement, or assessed or paid in respect to the remainders. In August 1801, E. Jenney, the tenant for life, died; the defendant (his widow) was called on to be admitted; thereupon she appeared at a court baron of the manor, and offered to swear her fealty, or have it respited; but refused to be admitted, insisting that she was the lord's tenant by virtue of the surrender and admittance of her husband. The question was, whether the lord might seise the copyhold on account of this breach of the custom. The jury having found, that by the custom of the manor, when a person who had been admitted tenant for life of a copyhold estate, holden of the manor, died, the tenant in remainder, whether for life, in tail, or in fee, should come in to be admitted, and pay a fine thereon. The Court held the custom good.

15. A fine is only due as a consideration for the admittance of a new tenant; therefore, where there is no alteration of the tenant, no fine is due.

Nor unless there is an Alteration of the Tenant.

16. Thus, if a copyholder surrenders for life, reserving the reversion to himself, and the tenant for life dies, the surrenderor may enter without paying a fine, because the reversion was never out of him.

Co. Cop. § 56.

17. So if a copyholder grants his estate to a stranger upon condition, and afterwards enters for the condition broken, he is not liable to the payment of a fine, because he comes in of his old estate.

Idem.

18. A covenant or agreement to surrender a copyhold will not entitle the lord to demand a fine from the person with whom such covenant or agreement is made, unless he demands to be admitted.

Or on an Agreement to surrender.

19. One Benham, a copyholder of the manor of Hendon, covenanted to surrender to Goodrich; which covenant the homage presented at the lord's

The King v. Lord of Hendon, 2 Term Rep. 484.

court, and the consideration money was paid ; but no surrender was ever made to him. Goodrich then assigned his interest in the copyhold to one Rankin, who claimed to be admitted. The lord of the manor resisted the application, on the ground that no fine had ever been paid him for the conveyance to Goodrich ; that this was a mode of cheating him of his fines ; that therefore, before Rankin was admitted, he ought to pay both the fines that were due.

The Court said, that all the lord had a right to require was, to have a tenant ; in this case he had one during the whole time ; that any private agreement between Benham and Goodrich, not followed up by a surrender of the estate, could not give the lord of the manor a right to a fine, notwithstanding it was presented by the homage.

Only due on  
Admittance.

20. A fine being only due on the admittance of a new tenant, it follows, that where a person who acquires an interest in a copyhold is not obliged, from the nature of that interest, to be admitted tenant to the lord, he is not subject to the payment of a fine.

Co. Cop.  
§ 56.

21. Thus, if a person marries a woman having a copyhold, though an interest becomes thereby vested in him, yet as he is not seised *jure proprio*, but only *jure alieno*, he is not obliged to be admitted ; therefore is not liable to the payment of a fine.

Idem.

22. It is the same if a married woman be a termor of a copyhold ; for though the term becomes vested in the husband by the marriage, so that he may dispose of it if he pleases, yet he is only possessed of it in right of his wife.

Tit. 8. c. 1.  
§ 28.

Idem.

23. Where by the custom of a manor the bailiff is to have the wardship of the heir of a copyholder, he shall not be admitted, or pay a fine ; because he is



but a pernor of the profits; not in his own right, but in right of his ward.

24. Where a testator directs certain persons to sell his copyholds, they need not be admitted; consequently are not liable to the payment of a fine.

25. A person seised in fee of copyhold lands, by his will, directed that A. and B. should make sale thereof, and apply and dispose of the monies arising therefrom in the manner mentioned in his will. A. and B. bargained and sold the lands by deed to one Ray and his heirs. Ray claimed to be admitted under this deed, which the lord of the manor refused, insisting that the trustees should have been admitted to the said premises previous to their making sale thereof, and have paid a fine for their admission. The Court was of opinion, that the trustees were not obliged to be admitted, because they had no estate or interest, but only a naked power or authority; and that the lord was bound to admit the purchaser to the copyhold.

*Holder v. Preston,*  
2 Wils. Rep.  
400.

26. By the custom of many manors fines are due from the copyholders on every change of the lord, which happens by the act of God.

*Fines on Change of the Lord.*

27. Upon the death of the duchess of Somerset, the duke her husband, who was tenant for life in remainder after the duchess, under the settlement made on his marriage, claimed a general fine of the several customary tenants of the manors of Cockermouth, &c. in the county of Cumberland, which were the inheritance of the duchess. The duke having assessed their fines, and the tenants refusing to pay them, the duke brought his bill in the Court of Chancery, to establish his right to these fines, as the next admitting lord. The bill stated, that it was the custom of these manors for the lord or lady thereof for

*Duke of Somerset v. France,*  
1 Stra. 654.

the time being to admit the several tenants of the manors to their respective estates. That by virtue of such admittance, the several tenants had a right to hold their respective estates, during the joint lives of such tenant and such admitting lord or lady. That in consideration of such admittances, the tenants had time out of mind respectively paid to such admitting lord a fine or *gressum*, which had been generally assessed by the lord's steward, at a court held for that purpose, called the court of demissions. That these fines or *gressums* were called the general fines, and were due to the next succeeding lord, upon the death of the last admitting lord, by whose death there was a general determination of the estates of the tenants. The fines which the duke demanded were the general fines, which he insisted were due to him as next admitting lord, upon the death of the duchess. The bill set forth that the duchess, being the lady of these manors, and having married the duke, a court of demissions was held in the names of the duke and duchess, in order to grant the tenants new estates, their former ones having been determined by the death of the duchess's father. At such courts, admittances were granted to the several tenants, during the joint lives of the duchess, and the tenants. That upon the death of the duchess, the duke became lord of the said manors, and the tenant's estates being determined by the death of the duchess, the duke, as next admitting lord, had a right to a general fine.

The defendants in their answer insisted, that by the customs of these manors, a lord who was tenant by the curtesy, or a lady tenant in dower, had no right to a general fine: that they were only obliged to pay a general fine to the lord who came in by descent; or to him that came in *loco hæredis*. That although the

duke was become tenant for life of these manors, by the duchess's death, yet no fine was due to him ; for if he had been tenant by the curtesy, no fine would have been due ; and his claiming by settlement, could not better his case ; for then it would be in the power of the lords of such manors to multiply the tenants fines, and greatly burthen their estates, if every such lord, who had an intervening estate by settlement, should be entitled to a general fine.

Lord King said, the principal question was, whether a fine was due to the duke from his tenants, upon the death of the duchess ? In resolving this question it was first to be considered, upon what account these general fines became due. Now it appeared from the nature of the admittances, that upon the death of the last admitting lord, all the estates of the tenants, which were held under his admittances, were determined ; and their estates being so determined, it was necessary for the tenants, before they could have any new estate, to have a regrant from the succeeding and next admitting lord, which regrant they had a right to, and that right gave their estates the denomination of tenant right estates. From hence it appeared that the fines were paid upon account of the admission to the new estate ; therefore, that the lord who had a right to admit, had a right to the fines. The lord granted the tenant a new estate ; in consideration of that, a fine became due to him from the tenant. The only question then seemed to be, whether the duke had a right to admit, and the tenants seemed to agree that he had ; for they allowed that if a particular tenant died, the duke, upon the admission of his heir, was entitled to a dropping fine ; nor could the duke be entitled to his dropping fine, if he was not the admitting lord. If he had power to admit,

and had a right to a fine upon the determination of a particular estate, upon the death of a particular tenant, why had he not an equal power to admit, and an equal right to his fines upon the determination of the tenants estates in general, by the death of the last admitting lord? It was very extraordinary to allow it in the one case and not in the other. If a particular tenant died, his estate was determined, and his heir must pay a fine to the duke; yet if the last admitting lord died, all the estates were determined, yet the duke had no right to a fine. It had been objected that this was multiplying the fines of the tenants, and subjecting them to frequent burthens of this kind; but where was the inconvenience to the tenants? They were still to hold during their own lives and the life of the lord who admitted them; that was the very tenure of their estates. Nay, if a lessee for years or any other *dominus pro tempore* should admit them, their estates would be good, according to these admittances, during their own lives and the life of such lord; and the determination of the lord's estate would have no influence upon theirs.

Indeed, if there should appear to be any fraud or contrivance in a settlement of this kind, by putting in a number of lives successively, on purpose to multiply the fines of the tenants, the Court would undoubtedly interpose in such a case, and relieve them; but in this case, nothing of that kind could be pretended. These were his thoughts on the subject; but as an issue had been insisted on, he readily agreed to it.

An issue was accordingly tried at the bar of the Court of King's Bench, by a jury of Middlesex. Whether a general fine was due to the Duke of Somerset from the tenants of the manors of Cocker-

north, &c. as next admitting lord, upon the death of the Duchess of Somerset. The jury, by the direction of the Court, brought in a verdict for the Duke of Somerset.

The cause came on again before the Chancellor, who decreed the tenants to pay their fines, and gave the duke his costs.

28. By the custom of many manors in the north, a fine is due on the death of the last admitting lord, whether he was, at the time of his death, in possession of the manor, or not; and this custom was held good by the House of Lords.

29. Philip Duke of Wharton became entitled by descent to several manors in Cumberland and Westmorland, in which the custom was, that the tenants should pay a fine upon the change of the lord by death. In the year 1721, the duke sold these manors to Mr. Lowther; and having afterwards withdrawn himself from the kingdom, he died in Spain in the year 1721. Mr. Lowther assessed a general fine upon all the tenants, in consequence of the duke's death, which they refused to pay; he filed his bill in Chancery to compel the payment of them. Lord Talbot dismissed the bill; but the House of Lords reversed the decree, and declared that Mr. Lowther became entitled to a general fine on the death of the duke.\*

Lowther  
v. Raw,  
2 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 451.

30. With respect to the *quantum* of the sum which may be demanded as a fine, it is probable that when fines were first introduced, they were at the mere will and discretion of the lords. But the benevolence of some lords established fines certain in particular manors, while they continued uncertain in others.

No more  
than two  
Years Value  
can be de-  
manded.

---

\* A custom that a fine is due on every change of the lord by alienation has been held void. For by this means the tenants might be oppressed by a multitude of fines. 1 Inst. 59.b.

Nor does it appear that the courts of law interposed before the reign of Queen Elizabeth, to moderate the exercise of the lord's right to demand whatever he pleased, where the custom had left the amount of the fine uncertain.

Hobart v.  
Hammond,  
4 Rep. 27 b.

31. It was resolved by the Court of King's Bench in 42 & 43 Eliz. that if the fines of copyholders upon admittance be uncertain, yet the lord cannot demand or exact excessive or unreasonable fines; that if he does, the copyholder may by law refuse to pay them. And it shall be determined by the opinion of the justices, before whom the matter is depending, either upon demurrer, or upon evidence to a jury, upon confession or proof of the yearly value of the land, whether the fine demanded was reasonable or not. For if the lord might assess excessive fines at his pleasure, all the estates of copyholders would be, at the will of the lord, defeated and destroyed.

Willowe's  
Case,  
13 Rep. 1.

32. A lord of a manor demanded a fine of 5*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* for an admittance, upon a surrender to a cottage and an acre of pasture, which was let at a rack rent of 53*s.* a year. It was resolved, 1st. That although a fine be uncertain and arbitrary, yet it ought to be *secundum arbitrium boni viri*, that is, reasonable, and not excessive; for *excessus in re qualibet, jure reprobatur communi*. The common law forbids any unreasonable distress; if an excessive or unreasonable amercement be imposed in any court baron, or other court, which is not of record, the party shall have *moderate misericordia*. 2d. That if the lord and tenant cannot agree about the fine, and the lord demands more than a reasonable fine; the same shall be decided and adjudged by the Court in which any suit shall be brought on account of the denial of such fine. 3d. That the fine demanded in this case was

unreasonable, for this was not a voluntary grant, as where the copyholder has but an estate for life.

33. In trespass the question was, whether the lord might assess two years and a half's value of the land, according to the rack rent, for a fine ; all the Court held he could not, for it was unreasonable ; that one year and a half's rent, according to the improved value, was high enough ; but that the tenant might refuse to pay two years and a half.

Dow v. Golding, Cro. Car. 196.

34. Lord Keeper Coventry in 5, and again in 12 Cha. I. held that one year's improved value was a reasonable fine. Guarding the decree, that one year's value should not be counted a fine certain, but referable to the discretion of the Court, whether it was reasonable or not ; and that the payment was then directed, because it was reasonable.

Middleton v. Jackson, Rep. in Cha. 18. Popham v. Lancaster, Id. 51.

35. It appears to have been settled about the latter end of the reign of Cha. II. that two years improved value is a reasonable fine, in the case of a fine arbitrary, or more properly arbitrable ; and the courts will not permit a lord to take more.

Doug. R. 726. n. 6 East, 56.

36. Where a person is admitted to an estate in remainder, the fine is usually one half. But a tenant for life must pay the whole fine, equally as if he were tenant in fee, in cases where the heirs are finable. For the admission of the tenant in fee is only the admission of an individual ; when he dies, his heir must be admitted.

1 Watk. on Cop. 481.. 2d ed.

37. In some manors the fine usually taken for two lives, is as much and half as much as the fine for one life ; and the fine for three lives, is as much and half as much as the fine for two lives. This must be understood of persons taking *successive*, or one after another ; for if they take as joint-tenants, or tenants in common, it would be different.

1 Burr. 207. 217.

1 Watk. 483.

Gilb. Ten.  
327.

Halton v.  
Hassell,  
Stra. 1042.

Grant v.  
Astle,  
Doug. 724. n.

Cowper  
v. Clark,  
3 P. Wms.  
155.

Except on  
voluntary  
Grants.

Wharton  
v. King,  
Anst. Rep.  
659.  
Abergavenny  
v. Thomas,  
Id.  
Grafton  
v. Horton,  
2 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 284.

Fines must  
be assessed  
severally.  
4 Rep. 28 a.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 56.

38. It has been stated, that a person who acquired a copyhold as a special occupant is liable to a fine, as a purchaser. But this fine should be proportioned to the probable duration of the life of the *cestui que vie*.

39. The fine must be estimated according to the improved yearly value; not according to the rent under a lease. In a modern case it was held, that no deduction was to be made out of the two years full improved value on account of the land tax; but quit rents were always deducted.

40. A bill in Chancery cannot be brought by a copyholder to be relieved against an excessive fine; for that ought to be tried by a jury. But a bill will lie to settle a general fine, to be paid by all the copyhold tenants of a manor, in order to prevent a multiplicity of suits.

41. Where copyholds are only granted for lives, without any tenant right of renewal, and fall into the lord's hands, there the fine is uncertain; because it being in the option of the lord to renew or not, he may demand whatever sum he pleases.

42. In order therefore to support a custom of renewal of copyholds for lives, the plaintiff must allege such custom to be on payment of a fine certain; for it will not be sufficient to allege it to be on payment of a reasonable fine, on account of the difficulty of ascertaining the *quantum* of such fine. If a custom be not found to renew on payment of a fine certain, the lord may insist on his own terms. And the only proof that can be given of such a custom is, the fact of renewals having taken place, according to some certain standard; that is, upon a fine certain.

43. Where a person holds several copyholds of the same manor, the lord must assess and demand the fines severally; for the tenant may refuse to pay the



one for one, and pay it for the others. Lord Coke says, if two joint-tenants, two tenants in common, or a tenant for life and the remainder-man, join in a warrant of a copyhold, one fine only is due. But this has been denied, in a modern case, as to tenants in common, who have several estates.

Attree  
v. Scutt,  
6 East, 476.

44. Where a fine is certain, the tenant is bound to pay it immediately upon his admittance. Otherwise where it is uncertain; because as the copyholder cannot tell what the lord will assess, it would be impossible for him to provide the precise sum; therefore he will be allowed a convenient time to pay it.

When pay-  
able.

45. The lord may bring an action of debt against a copyholder for the recovery of his fine. But if a copyholder in fee dies, and his heir waives the possession, the lord cannot bring an action against him for the fine, but may seise the copyhold.

How re-  
covered.  
3 P. Wms.  
151.  
Doug. 727. n.  
ante, § 2.

46. If a copyholder be admitted, and before payment of the fine, the lord dies, and the manor descends to his son and heir, who also dies; the executor of the son may maintain an action of *assumpsit* against the copyholder, to recover the fine; whether it be a fine certain, or at the will of the lord.

Shuttleworth  
v. Garnett,  
3 Mod. 140.

47. The lord may recover from the copyholder the fine assessed by him on admittance, though there be no entry of the assessment on the court-rolls, but only a demand of such a sum for a fine, after the value of the tenement is found by the homage.

Northwick  
v. Stanway,  
6 East, 56.

48. By the statute 9 Geo. I. c. 29, reciting that doubts had arisen in the law respecting the power of lords of manors to seise copyhold lands parcel of their manors, on the neglect or refusal of persons to come in and be admitted tenants; it is enacted, that feme coverts and infants may be admitted to copyhold estates by their attorney or guardian; and in default

of appearance the lord may appoint a guardian. That upon every such admittance the fine may be demanded by a note in writing, to be left with such infant or feme covert. If the fine be not paid within three months after such demand, the lord may enter on the copyhold, and receive the profits thereof till he is paid his fine and costs, &c. By the 4th section it is enacted, that guardians and husbands paying such fines, shall reimburse themselves out of the rents and profits of the copyholds, notwithstanding the deaths of such infants and feme coverts.

Of Heriots.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 24.  
Bro. Ab.  
Heriot, pl. 5.

49. Besides a fine, there is also a custom in many manors, that upon the death of every copyholder, though only for life, the lord becomes entitled to his best beast, or *averium*. In some manors it is the best chattel, under which a jewel or piece of plate is included. But it is always a personal chattel, which immediately on the death of the tenant, being ascertained by the option of the lord, becomes vested in him, as his property; and is no charge on the lands, but merely on the goods and chattels of the tenant.

Parker v.  
Combleford,  
Cro. Eliz.  
725.

50. A custom that the lord of a manor shall have the best beast of every person who dies within the manor, whether he be a copyholder or not, is void; for it cannot have a lawful beginning between the lord and a stranger.

51. Although the copyholder be ousted or disseised, yet the lord will be entitled to a heriot, for he still continues to be a legal tenant.

Norrice v.  
Norrice,  
2 Roll. Ab.  
72.

52. A copyholder for life, in a manor where the custom was, that if the tenant died seised, a heriot should be paid, was disseised or ousted, and died; the lord having first granted the seignory to A. for 99 years, if the tenant should so long live, remainder to B. for 4,000 years. Two questions were made.

1st, Whether any heriot should be paid, because the copyholder did not die seised. As to this the Court held clearly, that a heriot was due and payable; for notwithstanding the ouster and disseisin, the copyholder still continued legal tenant; and such disseisin might have been by combination to defeat the lord of his heriot. 2d, To whom the heriot should be paid. As to this the Court held clearly, that the remainder-man for 4,000 years could have no right to it, because the copyholder was never his tenant; and as to the grantee for 99 years, it was doubted, because the moment the copyholder died, his estate was determined.

53. A heriot is only due on the death of the legal tenant; not on the death of the person entitled to an equitable estate in a copyhold. And the lord is only entitled to a heriot on the death of the tenant who has an interest in the copyhold; not on the death of persons for whose lives a copyhold is granted.

Trin. Coll.  
v. Brown,  
1 Vern. 441.  
2 Ld. Raym.  
994.

54. If a copyholder for life, on whose death the lord is entitled to a heriot, becomes a bankrupt, and the copyhold is assigned for the benefit of the creditors; this transmutation of the tenant, by act of parliament, shall not work a prejudice to the lord, who shall have a heriot on the death of the copyholder; but not on the death of the assignee.

2 Ld. Raym.  
1002.

55. No heriot is due on the death of a married woman, because she can have no chattels.

Anon.  
4 Leon. 239.

56. In many manors there is a customary composition as 10s. or 20 s., in lieu of a heriot, by which the lord and tenant are both bound, provided it be an indisputably ancient custom. But a new composition of this kind will not bind the heirs or representatives of either party; for that amounts to the creation of a new custom, which cannot now be done.

8 Rep. 106 b. 57. If a heriot be due by the custom of the manor, upon the death of the tenant, and the lord purchases part of the tenancy, such purchase will not extinguish the lord's right to a heriot; for the tenant is still within the lord's homage.

Snag v. Fox,  
Palm. 342.

58. Where a copyholder is bound to pay a heriot, and he conveys part of his copyhold to one person, and part to another, the heriot will be multiplied; it is the same if he devises it by will to several persons in severalty.

Attree  
v. Seutt,  
6 East, 476.

59. It was resolved in a modern case, that where a copyhold estate was divided into two parts by a devise of it to two persons, as tenants in common, each of the devisees was subject to the payment of a separate fine, and to a several heriot: that if one of the two persons surrendered his moiety to the other, the estates notwithstanding continued several, and were subject to several heriots. For if an estate held by indivisible services was divided and holden in severalty, and afterwards, by the act of the parties, came again into one hand, the services which were multiplied should continue to be payable, not as for one tenement, but for each portion respectively, that is, as for distinct tenements; for they did not again become, in respect of the lord, one tenement. That this doctrine was as applicable to an estate held in common, as to estates held in severalty.

2 Inst. 131.  
Austin v.  
Bennett,  
1 Salk. 356.

60. In the case of heriot custom, the lord may seize the best beast of the tenant, or whatever is due as a heriot, wherever he can find it, either within the manor or out of it; even on the highway.

Parker  
v. Gage,  
1 Show.  
Rep. 81.

61. In trover on not guilty before Lord C. J. Holt, the question being about a horse seized for a heriot; it was held, that either heriot service or heriot custom was seizable off the manor, because it lies in prender.

**62.** If a man shortly before his death bargains and sells all his horses to another, without any consideration, to defraud the lord of his heriot, it is void. *Dyer, 351 b.*

**63.** The Court of Chancery will not interpose in favour of the lord in the case of heriots, because the custom is unreasonable; the loss a family sustains being thereby aggravated. *Wirty v. Pemberton, 2 Ab. Eq. 279.*

## TITLE X.

## COPYHOLD.

## CHAP. V.

*Of the Forfeiture of Copyholds.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>2. <i>Attainder of Treason or Felony.</i></p> <p>5. <i>Alienation contrary to the Custom.</i></p> <p>8. <i>Leases contrary to the Custom.</i></p> <p>12. <i>Unless by Licence of the Lord.</i></p> <p>14. <i>A Covenant that a Person shall enjoy is no Forfeiture.</i></p> <p>18. <i>Waste.</i></p> <p>21. <i>Disclaiming Tenure.</i></p> <p>23. <i>Refusal to perform the Services.</i></p> <p>28. <i>Refusal to pay Fines.</i></p> <p>31. <i>Refusal to pay Rent.</i></p> | <p>34. <i>Non-appearance of the Heir to be admitted.</i></p> <p>39. <i>Of a Person in Remainder.</i></p> <p>41. <i>Of a Surrenderee.</i></p> <p>42. <i>Of a Devisee.</i></p> <p>45. <i>Who may forfeit.</i></p> <p>50. <i>Extent of a Forfeiture.</i></p> <p>52. <i>Where Presentment is necessary.</i></p> <p>54. <i>What dispenses with a Forfeiture.</i></p> <p>61. <i>Who may take Advantage of a Forfeiture.</i></p> <p>63. <i>Where Equity relieves.</i></p> <p>67. <i>Where Relief has been refused.</i></p> |
|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**A**S Copyholds were originally held by the lowest and most abject vassals, the marks of feudal dominion continue much stronger in this tenure than in any other. So that copyholds are not only subject to the same forfeitures as estates held in socage, but also to a variety of other forfeitures, particularly incident to them.

Attainder of  
Treason or  
Felony.  
Hawk. P. C.  
c. 49. § 7.  
Skin. R. 8.

2. If a copyholder be attainted of high treason, his estate becomes forfeited to the lord of the manor; not to the crown; except by the express words of an act of parliament. So if attainted of felony.

3. A person to whom a copyhold is devised, but who is convicted of felony, and hanged, before admittance, does not forfeit such copyhold.

4. Mr. Jefferies devised a copyhold to his niece Elizabeth Jefferies, who was convicted and hanged for the murder of the testator. Miss Jefferies was not admitted, nor ever did any act to show that she was the lord's tenant. The Court was of opinion that Miss Jefferies had no legal interest in the copyhold, so could have no legal remedy to recover it; and having neither *jus in re*, nor *ad rem*, could not forfeit any thing.

Roe v. Hicks,  
2 Wils. R. 13.

5. Copyholders can only alienate their estates in the manner prescribed by the custom; any other mode of alienation will operate as a forfeiture. Thus it is said by Littleton, that if a copyholder aliens by deed, it is a forfeiture; for a copyholder being tenant at will, such an act would amount to a determination of his will.

Alienation  
contrary to  
the Custom.

§ 74.

6. Lord Coke says, if a copyholder makes a charter of feoffment, or a deed of demise, for life, without giving livery of seisin, it is no forfeiture, because nothing passes. According to Roll, though livery is not made, yet the feoffment is a forfeiture, if there be a letter of attorney to deliver seisin; because then the feoffee may at any time perfect the conveyance. And that Lord Coke ought to be understood with that distinction.

1 Inst. 59 a.  
n. 3.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 58.

1 Roll. Ab.  
508. pl. 12  
& 13.

Mr. Hargrave does not acquiesce in Roll's doctrine. "For (says he) the criterion of forfeiture of a copyhold by alienation, seems to be the actual passing of an unlawful estate, to the lord's prejudice. In the case of the feoffment, no interest can pass until livery; nor is it strictly true that the feoffee may at any time perfect the conveyance, for it is possible that before

1 Inst. 59 a.  
n. 3.

livery, the feoffor may revoke the power of attorney, or the attorney may die, or refuse to execute the authority."

Vol. 1. 508.  
pl. 11.

7. It is also said in Roll's Abridgement, that if a copyholder bargains and sells his copyhold to another in fee, it is a forfeiture; although the deed be not enrolled. But this position has been denied by Lord Coke.

Co. Cop.  
§ 58.

Leases con-  
trary to the  
Custom.

4 Rep. 26 a.  
1 Bulst. 190.  
Jackman v.  
Hoddeston,  
Cro. Eliz.  
351.

East v.  
Harding,  
Cro. Eliz.  
498.

8. It has been stated, that a copyholder may make a lease for one year. But if he makes a lease for any longer term, whether by indenture or parol, without the consent of the lord, it is a forfeiture; unless there be an express custom to warrant it. Thus, where a copyholder made a lease for three years, to begin the next Michaelmas term, and the lessee died before Michaelmas, it was held that it was a forfeiture.

9. By the particular custom of some manors, a copyholder of inheritance may lease his land for three years, without the consent of the lord.

4 Rep. 26 a.  
1 Roll. Ab.  
507. pl. 8.  
Cro. Ja. 308.

10. Where a copyholder leased for one year, and so from year to year, during the life of the lessor; reserving to the lessor in every year the 25th day of March; it was held to be a forfeiture. For it was a lease for two years at least, reserving one day: so that a greater estate than for one year passed in interest. And the reserving a day in every year was but a shift, to avoid the forfeiture.

Mathews v.  
Wheaton,  
1 Roll. Ab.  
508. pl. 10.  
Cro. Car.  
233.

11. A copyholder agreed to make three several leases by indenture, one to commence after another; there being two days between the end of the first, and the commencement of the second, and so between the second and third. He made them accordingly, and sealed them at the same time. This was held to be a forfeiture, for it was an apparent



fraud, and a greater estate than for one year passed presently.

12. It has been stated, that a lease for any number of years, made by licence from the lord, is not a forfeiture ; and that in such case the lessee may assign his term, or make an under-lease, without any new licence ; for the interest of the lord is discharged by the licence.

Unless by  
Licence of  
the Lord.  
ante, c. 3.  
§ 20.  
1 Roll. Ab.  
508. pl. 14.

13. Lord Chief Baron Gilbert says, if the lord licences the copyholder to let for five years, and he lets for thrée, this is good. So if the lord licences a copyholder for life to let for five years, if the copyholder so long live ; and he lets for five years absolute, this is good ; for the limitation is implied by law, and so need not be expressed. But if the copyholder had an estate in fee, it had been a forfeiture of his estate to make an absolute lease ; because in that case he did more than his licence allowed.

Ten. 296..

Hall v. Ar-  
rowsmith,  
Poph. 105..

14. Where a copyholder made a lease for a year only, according to the custom ; and covenanted that after the end of the year, the lessee should have the lands for another year, and so *de anno in annum* for ten years ; it was held to be no such lease as would make a forfeiture ; because the lessee had a lawful estate but for one year only.

A Covenant  
that a Per-  
son shall en-  
joy, is no For-  
feiture.  
Montague's  
case,  
Cro. Ja. 301.

15. Lord C. B. Gilbert seems in the first instance to doubt this case, because the words covenant and grant make a lease. He afterwards however says,—  
“ But in another case it was held that these words, by construction, might make a lease, where the lands might be let ; but otherwise where the lands could not be let. Which distinction seems very reasonable ; for the words themselves do not import a lease ; and it would be a very injurious construction to make

Ten. 233.

Tit. 32. c. 5..

them a lease, and so a forfeiture, when they only import of themselves a covenant.”

Tit. Lease,  
l. 6.

16. It is said in Bacon's Abridgement, that in such a covenant it would be better if the words were, *to permit and suffer* the lessee to hold the lands. For a covenant in that form respecting freehold lands, would not amount to an immediate lease; because the words *permit and suffer* would prove that the estate was still to continue in him from whom the the permission came. For if any estate thereby passed to the covenantee, he might hold and enjoy it without any permission from the covenantor. Therefore in such case the covenantee would only have the bare covenant for his security of enjoyment; without any actual estate made to him.

1 Inst. 59 a.  
n. 4.

17. Mr. Hargrave appears to acquiesce in this doctrine—“Because though in general a covenant amounts to a lease, yet it seems harsh to give such a construction, where a lease amounts to a forfeiture; and the intention of the parties may have effect by way of agreement.” And in a modern case it was settled, that an executory agreement, for a lease of a copyhold, did not operate as a forfeiture.

Doe v.  
Clare,  
2 Term. R.  
739.

Waste,  
ante, c. 3.  
§ 8.

4 Rep. 27 a.  
Co. Cop.

§ 57.

Owen 17.  
Gilb. 235.

4 Rep. 27 a.

18. Every species of waste, whether voluntary or permissive, not warranted by the custom of the manor, will operate as a forfeiture of a copyhold.

19. Lord Coke says, if a stranger commits waste upon a copyhold, without the assent of the copyholder, it will not operate as a forfeiture.

Tit. Copy-  
hold, M. 3.  
Rook v.  
Warth,  
1 Ves. 462.

In Comyn's Digest, the contrary doctrine is said to have been settled in Lutw. 802. But Lord Hardwicke appears to have considered copyholders as answerable for waste, in all cases; except where occasioned by the act of God.

20. A copyholder cut down more timber than he could justify, and a bill being brought against him in Chancery, for a discovery ; he demurred, because it would subject him to a forfeiture, as being waste. The demurrer was allowed.

Attorney General v. Vincent,  
2 Ab. Eq. 378.  
Doe v. Wilson,  
11 East, 56.

21. If a copyholder disclaims holding of his lord, or swears in court that he is not the lord's copyholder ; or if the steward shows the court-roll to a copyholder, to prove that his land is held by copy, and the copyholder asserts his estate to be freehold, and tears the court-roll ; these acts will operate as a forfeiture.

Disclaiming Tenure.  
Co. Cop. § 57.

22. But if a copyholder, in presence of the court, speaks irreverent words of the lord, as that he exacts and extorts unreasonable fines, and undue services ; this is fineable only, and no forfeiture. If he says in court that he will devise means to be no longer the lord's copyholder ; this is neither cause of fine nor forfeiture ; for perhaps the means he intends are lawful, by conveying away his copyhold.

Idem.

23. Copyholds are forfeited by the neglect or refusal of the tenant to perform the services required by the custom. Thus, if a copyholder neglects to appear at the court, after summons, he will forfeit his estate. To make this a forfeiture, there must be a particular warning to each tenant, or a general notice within the parish ; after which it is a forfeiture, without any express refusal. For unless the copyholders attend, no court can be held, which would be highly prejudicial, not only to the lord, but to the tenants.

Refusal to perform the Services.  
1 Roll. Ab. 506.  
Gilb. Ten. 229.

24. A copyholder neglected to do his suit and service for the space of three years together. The question was, whether this was a sufficient cause of forfeiture. It was said by the Court that it was no

Hammond v. Wennibank,  
3 Buls. 368.

cause of forfeiture, if a warning was not given by the lord, of the time when his court was to be held, and notice thereof given to the copyholder himself: that the withdrawing of his suit by a copyholder was only finable; but if he refused to do his suit and service, then it was a forfeiture.

Gilb. Ten.  
230.

25. Where the lord required the copyholder to do his services, and he answered that if they were due he would do them, but it should be tried at law whether they were due or not; this was held not to be a forfeiture.

Co. Cop.  
§ 57.

26. If a copyholder is confined by sickness, or is afraid of being arrested, or is a bankrupt, he will be excused from attending the lord's court.

Idem.  
Dyer, 211 b.

27. When the copyholders are assembled in the lord's court, they are bound to do the proper business of the court; and if they refuse, it will amount to a forfeiture.

Refusal to  
pay Fines.  
Dalton v.  
Hammond,  
Cro. Eliz.  
779.

28. The refusal of a copyholder to pay the fine due on his admittance is a forfeiture, provided such fine be certain; where the fine is uncertain, a refusal to pay the fine assessed by the lord, upon the ground that a greater fine is demanded than is warranted by the custom, will not amount to a forfeiture.

Co. Cop.  
§ 57.

29. If the fine be uncertain, though a reasonable fine be assessed, yet as no man can provide for an uncertainty, the copyholder is not bound to pay it presently upon demand; but shall have a convenient time to discharge it, where the law does not appoint a day certain for its payment. If however it is not paid on the day appointed, the estate will be forfeited.

Gardiner v.  
Norman,  
Cro. Ja. 617.

Willowe's  
Case,  
13 Rep. 1.

30. Though the fine assessed be reasonable, yet the lord must appoint the time and place where it must be paid; because it stands upon a point of forfeiture

of the estate : and the copyholder is not obliged to carry his fine always about him. Where the fine is certain, the copyholder is obliged to pay it immediately upon admittance.

31. If a copyholder is bound by the custom to the payment of a rent to the lord, and refuses to pay it, he will forfeit his copyhold. Such a refusal must however be founded on the principle that the lord has no right to the rent ; which implies a disclaimer of the tenure. For if the copyholder admits the lord's claim to the rent, but says he has no money, or makes any other excuse of that sort, it is no forfeiture.

Refusal to  
pay Rent.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 57.  
Gilb. Ten.  
225.  
ante, § 25.

32. Where a copyholder was absent when the lord demanded the rent, and no person was there to pay it, which is a refusal in law, yet the Court doubted whether it was a forfeiture, as it did not amount to a voluntary refusal : and two of the Judges said, there ought to be a demand from the person of the copyholder, to make it a forfeiture.

Crisp v.  
Freer,  
Cro. Eliz.  
505.

Hob. 135.  
Gilb. Ten.  
225.

33. Where the estate of a lord of a manor ceases by limitation of a use, and is thereby transferred to another person, who demands rent of the copyholder, and he refuses to pay it, this is no forfeiture, without notice given to the copyholder of the alteration of the use and estate.

8 Rep. 92 a.

34. Where copyholds are descendible, the heir is bound, on the death of his ancestor, to come to the lord's court, and require to be admitted. If he neglects to appear within the time prescribed by the custom of the manor, a proclamation is made for him to come in and be admitted ; if he does not then appear, farther proclamations are made, at the two or three next courts according to the custom ; and if he does not appear immediately after the last proclamation, the lord may seize the copyhold as forfeited.

Non-appear-  
ance of the  
Heir to be  
admitted.

Gilb. Ten.  
231.

35. If the heir of a copyholder is beyond sea at the time of his ancestor's death, or within age, or *non compos mentis*, or in prison, his non-appearance at the lord's court to be admitted, will not amount to a forfeiture.

Lechford's  
Case,  
8 Rep. 99.

36. The custom of a manor was that, those who claimed copyholds by descent, ought to come at the first, second, or third court, upon proclamation made, to take up their estates; or else they should be forfeited. A tenant of the manor, having issue inheritable by the custom, died, such issue being at that time beyond sea; the proclamations all passed, and the heir did not appear for two years; upon his return he prayed to be admitted to the copyhold, and proffered the lord his fine in court, which the lord refused to accept, or to admit the heir, but seised the land, as forfeited. It was adjudged, that this was no cause of forfeiture, because the heir was beyond sea at the time of the proclamations; and the lord was at no prejudice, for he had taken all the profits of the land in the mean time.

Underhill  
v. Kilsey,  
Cro. Ja. 226.  
S. P.

Lord Salis-  
bury's Case,  
1 Keb. 287.

37. It seems to be now held, that there must be a particular custom to warrant the forfeiture of a copyhold, by the mere non-appearance of the heir to be admitted. That by the general custom, the lord is only authorized to seise the land, until the tenant comes in to be admitted. It is also required, that all the proceedings be strictly conformable to the customs of the manor; and the proclamations proved *viva voce*, not by the court-rolls only; otherwise no forfeiture will be incurred.

Roe v.  
Helier,  
8 Term R.  
162.

38. At a court-baron holden for the manor of Featherstone in 1785, the homage presented the death of Sir S. Helier, and an entry of a proclamation on the rolls was made as follows: "At this

public proclamation was made, for the first time, for the heir of Sir S. Helier, Knight, deceased, to come into court, and be admitted tenant to all and singular the messuages, &c. within the precincts of this manor, whereof the said Sir S. Helier died seised; or else the same would be seised by the lord of the said manor for want of a tenant. But nobody came who shewed any title to the same; therefore such default and this proclamation are recorded." Two other similar proclamations were made, at two subsequent courts, &c. By an entry on the rolls of a small court, and court-baron holden in 1786, it appeared as follows:—"At this court a precept was issued by the steward of the manor, and delivered to W. B. bailiff and officer of the manor, directing him to seise into the hands of the lord, all and singular the several copyhold messuages, &c. which are situate and being in Featherstone, &c. of which Sir S. Helier died seised; and to return the precept at the next court to be holden on, &c." By another entry on the rolls it appeared as follows:—"At this court W. B. bailiff of this manor, and officer of this court, returned the precept which issued and was delivered to him at the last court, holden for this manor, in every thing obeyed and executed; to wit, that he had taken actual possession of, and seised into the hands of the lord of the manor, all those copyholds &c. whereof the said Sir S. Helier died seised, as by the said precept he was commanded." At a subsequent court, the lord of the manor granted the said copyhold premises to a stranger, his heirs and assigns for ever, according to the custom of the said manor, who was admitted tenant, paid the lord a fine of 692*l.*, and made his fealty. The heirs at law of Sir S. Helier did not apply to be admitted till the year



1788, when they were refused ; and in consequence thereof brought their ejectment. A verdict was found for the plaintiffs, subject to the opinion of the Court on the above case.

After several arguments Lord Kenyon said,—“ The first point made is on the supposed forfeiture, by reason of the heirs of Sir S. Helier neglecting to come to the lord’s court to be admitted as his tenants, and to satisfy the lord’s claim of the fruits of his tenure. I cannot but observe, that the interest of the lord of this manor was not very deeply concerned in the heir’s not coming in to be admitted, because it is stated that no fine was due on admission. The case does indeed state, that he had a minute interest; namely, a relief of 3s. 6d. ; but however small this fruit of tenure was, the lord undoubtedly had a right to it ; and to see, by the inspection of his court-rolls, who were his tenants. But the severity of the law in these, as in all other cases of forfeiture, warrants the courts in taking care that there is the greatest accuracy in the lord’s proceeding. It is so in the case of outlawry, and all cases of criminal proceedings. Several cases were mentioned, which show that a general forfeiture of a copyhold estate, for not coming in to be admitted, does not accrue, unless there be a custom to warrant it. In such cases the lord has only a right to enter into possession, to satisfy himself of the injury he sustains for the want of a tenant ; he can only retain the possession *quousque*. It seemed almost, and would have been very properly admitted in the argument, that if the lord, having a right to seise *quousque*, did seise absolutely, there was a defect in the seisure which vitiated the whole. But it was contended that there was no defect in the seisure, for that the Court might presume, for any



thing that appeared to the contrary, that the lord did only seise till a tenant came in to be admitted; and that *omnia presumuntur solemniter esse acta*; but I think, that sufficient appears in the case, to show that the seisure was irregular. A seisure generally, and undefined, must necessarily be a seisure of the whole property; if it were not, what other line could be drawn? So an entry upon an estate generally, is an entry for the whole; and if it be for less, it should be so defined at the time. The case however does not rest on this observation, for we collect from subsequent acts of the lord, which are unambiguous, what his idea was when he did seise; for he made an absolute grant of the whole of this property to the defendant, his heirs and assigns for ever, taking a fine of 692*l.* for his admission. Then I am bound to say, that the lord entered as for an absolute forfeiture; and as this is a proceeding where the most strict regularity is necessary in all its parts, we are warranted in saying that here was no seisure binding on the parties."

The other Judges concurring, judgement was given for the heirs of Sir S. Helier.

39. Where the custom of the manor requires, that a person taking an estate in remainder, shall come in and be admitted, the lord may seise *quousque* the tenant comes in. And the proclamations being in general terms for any person to come in and make title, and the presentment of default being also general, are good; though the person in remainder were known, and named in the surrender.

Of a Person in Remainder.

40. In a modern case, which has been already stated, where a remainder-man refused to come in and be admitted, the custom requiring that persons in remainder should come in and be admitted; there

Doe v. Jenney,  
5 East. 522.

was a presentment by the homage, that E. I., who was tenant for life, died seised; and three proclamations were made at three different courts, that if any person or persons would come into Court and make any just claim to the lands whereof the tenant for life died seised, such person or persons should come into court and take admission to the same. No one coming to be admitted, a precept was issued by the steward of the manor, directed to the bailiff, authorizing him, in the presence of two or more copyhold tenants of the manor, to seise into the hands of the lord, *quousque* the tenant should come in to be admitted, all such copyhold lands, &c. to and for the use of the lord. The lands were accordingly seised by the bailiff, and the lord made a lease and brought an ejectment.

It was objected, that the next tenant being known and named in the rolls, the proclamations and the presentment should have been against her by name.

Lord Ellenborough delivered the judgement of the Court. He said, the question was, whether the presentment that the tenant for life died seised, and the proclamations made, "that if any person would come into court and make just claim or title to the lands whereof E. I. died seised, such person should come into court and take admission of the same," was sufficient. No authority had been cited in support of this objection; but it rested wholly in what was said to be the usual practice in courts-baron, of mentioning in the presentment and proclamations the name of the person, when known, who ought to come in and be admitted. If the tenant, when known, were likely to be prejudiced by not being named, this objection would have weight; and though, as the object of the presentment was for the information and

instruction of the lord, it would, in respect of him, be better to mention the person who ought to come in and be admitted, when known ; yet, in respect to the heir or remainder-man, this was not the purpose of the presentment, nor were the proclamations intended to inform persons of their titles, but to give notice to those who had a right to be admitted, that the tenancy was vacant, and that the lord required of those who were entitled, to take upon themselves the tenancy ; and it seemed sufficient, so far as the tenant was concerned, if the presentment and proclamations were in the general terms used on this occasion. For these reasons, the Court thought there should be judgement for the lord.

41. A custom that the person to whose use a copyhold is surrendered, shall come in and be admitted, after three proclamations, or otherwise that the lands shall be forfeited, is good. But in a case of this kind, infancy will excuse.

*Of a Surrenderer.  
King v.  
Dilliston,  
1 Freem.  
494.*

42. It has been stated that copyholds are indirectly devisable. In such a case, the non-appearance of a devisee to be admitted operates in general as a forfeiture.

*Of a Devisee.*

43. A copyhold was devised to six persons upon certain trusts ; one offered to be admitted and to pay his proportion of the fine, which the lord refused, unless he would pay the whole ; the other five declined the trust. The lord, after three proclamations for the six trustees to come in and be admitted, seised for the forfeiture. The Court held, that the lord ought to have admitted the person who offered himself, and then he might have proceeded to recover his fine from the six devisees, if it was due either by law, or the custom of the manor ; and that he had been too hasty in entering for a supposed forfeiture before

*Roe v.  
Hutton,  
2 Wils. 162.*

admittance. A seisure *quousque* was till somebody came to be admitted; so that it was clear the lord had no right to seise.

Clayton v.  
Cooke,  
2 Atk. 449.

44. The lord of a manor, cannot bring a bill in Chancery against a copyholder, to compel him to come in and be admitted tenant; for he has his remedy at law, by making proclamations so many court days. But if there be any confusion arising from copyhold lands being blended together, the lord may bring a bill of discovery, to ascertain the lands.

Who may  
forfeit.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 59.

45. All persons of sufficient understanding may forfeit a copyhold; but a man of nonsane memory, an idiot, or a lunatick, are unable to forfeit. So an infant under fourteen, because he wants discretion. But an infant at the age of discretion may forfeit his copyhold, not by offences which proceed from negligence or ignorance, but by such as proceed from contempt.

Idem.

46. A feme covert cannot by any act of her own forfeit her copyhold; because she is not *sui juris sed sub potestate viri*. But she may, by an act done with the consent of her husband, incur a forfeiture. And it was resolved in 27 Eliz. that where a woman tenant for life takes a husband, who commits waste and dies, the estate of the wife is forfeited.

4 Rep. 27 a.  
Gilb. Ten.  
243.

47. By the statute 9 Geo. I. c. 29. § 5. it is enacted, that no infant or feme covert shall forfeit any copyhold messuages, &c. for their neglect or refusal to come into any court or courts to be kept for any manor, whereof such messuages, &c. are parcel, and to be admitted thereto; nor for the omission, denial, or refusal to pay any fine imposed or set on their admittances. And by the sixth section it is provided, that if the fines so imposed shall not be warranted by the custom of the manor, or shall

be unlawful, then such infant or feme covert shall be at liberty to controvert the legality of such fine or fines.

48. It was resolved in a modern case, that if one of several coheirs of a copyholder be a feme covert, and the lord seises the whole estate, in default of the heirs not coming in to be admitted, after three proclamations, without first appointing a guardian for the feme covert, according to this act, a seisure of the whole estate is irregular; though it was not known to the lord that one of the heirs was a feme covert.

*Doe v. Helier,*  
3 Term R.  
162.

49. This statute is confined to the cases expressed; namely, title by descent, or surrender to the use of a will; and does not extend to a title under a deed.

*Kensington v. Mansell,*  
13 Ves. 240.

50. A forfeiture, in general, only extends to the copyhold in which the act has been done. For if a copyholder be seised of Black Acre, White Acre, and Green Acre, and commits waste in Black Acre, it is thereby forfeited; but there is no forfeiture of White Acre or Green Acre.

*Extent of a Forfeiture. Taverner v. Cromwell,*  
4 Rep. 27 a.  
Gilb. Ten. 217.

51. If a copyholder makes a feoffment of one acre of his copyhold, all is not forfeited, but only that acre. But if a copyholder cuts down a tree growing upon any part of his copyhold, this is a forfeiture of all.

*Fuller v. Terry,*  
1 Roll. Ab. 509.  
Gilb. Ten. 217. 246.

52. Some acts amount to a forfeiture, the moment they are committed: others are not forfeitures till they are presented by the homage, in the lord's court. Offences which are apparent and notorious, of which the lord, by common presumption, cannot choose but have notice, are forfeitures immediately. But presentment by the homage is necessary in those cases

*Where Presentment is necessary. Co. Cop. § 57, 8. Gilb. Ten. 246.*

where the lord cannot be presumed to have notice of himself; as where the tenant is convicted of treason or felony, or makes an alienation contrary to the custom.

ante.

Ten. 246.

53. It was, however, resolved in the case of *East v. Harding*, where a copyholder incurred a forfeiture by making a lease, that presentment was not absolutely necessary, but only for the lord's better instruction of his title, that the lord may take advantage of a forfeiture before presentment. But Lord Chief Baron Gilbert says, it is safer to get all forfeitures presented; and if there be a particular custom, it must be pursued.

What dispenses with a Forfeiture.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 61.

54. Forfeitures may, in many cases, be dispensed with by the act of the lord. Thus, if a copyholder has broken the customs of the manor, by committing waste, refusing to perform his services, or to pay his rent, the forfeitures arising from these acts may be dispensed with by a subsequent acceptance of rent, or other act by which the lord acknowledges the copyholder to be his tenant.

*Milfax v. Baker*,  
1 Lev. 26.

55. If a copyholder commits a forfeiture, and the lord *pro tempore*, having a legal title, grants an admittance, it will operate as a dispensation of the forfeiture; not only as to himself, but as to the person in reversion; for such a new grant and admittance amounts to an entry for the forfeiture, and a new grant. But a lord by wrong cannot by such an admittance purge the forfeiture, so as to bind the rightful lord.

*Pascall v. Wood*,  
3 Keb. 641.

56. A copyholder cut timber, sold it, and died; the succeeding lord brought an ejectment against the heir, who pleaded, that in trespass brought by him, the lord (now plaintiff) justified for taking a heriot.

The Court said, that justification for heriot service on seisin of the ancestor, was an acceptance of the heir as tenant, and purged the forfeiture. Gilb. Ten. 247.

57. It was said in this last case, that where there is an actual entry by the lord in the lifetime of the copyholder, for a forfeiture by him, no acceptance after will purge the forfeiture. And though it never was presented by the homage, that was not material, it being a thing notorious.

58. Lord Coke says, some make this difference, that those forfeitures only which destroy not the copyhold, are confirmable by subsequent acknowledge-  
Co. Cop. § 61. Gilb. Ten. 334.  
 ment, and not those forfeitures which tend to the destruction of a copyhold. As if the copyholder makes a feoffment, by this the copyhold is destroyed; therefore no subsequent acknowledgement of the lord will confirm it. And in the Supplement to Lord Coke's Copyholder, it is said, that if a copyholder levies a fine, makes a feoffment, or suffers a common recovery, which destroy the estate, no acceptance of rent, or act done by the lord, will be available to make the estate good. But where the custom of the manor only is broken, as if the copyholder makes a long lease, or refuses to pay his rent, or to be sworn of the homage, or commits waste, there his estate may be afterwards confirmed. § 11.

59. This doctrine has been denied in a modern case, in which it was held, that a forfeiture by a copyholder's levying a fine, might be waived by the lord. In that case the lord suffered many years to elapse without taking advantage of the forfeiture, and by several solemn acts in his court, recognized the person who levied the fine as his tenant. It was first presented that he died seised; then the lord required the heir to come in and be admitted. These,  
Doe v. Helier, 3 Term R. 162.



ante, § 55.

Mathews v.  
Whitton,  
Cro. Car.  
233.  
6 Vin. Ab.  
149. pl. 14.  
Cornwallis's  
Case,  
2 Vent. 38.

Who may  
take Advan-  
tage of a  
Forfeiture.  
Co. Cop.  
§ 60.  
1 Roll. Ab.  
509.  
9 Rep. 107 a.  
Duke of  
York v.  
Marshall,  
Hard. 432.

Where  
Equity  
relieves.

said Lord Kenyon, were as solemn acts of recognition, as the admittance of the copyholder in *Milfax v. Baker*; and he did not think he was straining that case in saying, that any act equally solemn on the part of the lord, was sufficient to preclude him from taking advantage of the forfeiture.

60. Where the lord is ignorant of the act by which a copyhold has been forfeited, nothing done by him will operate as a dispensation of the forfeiture. And it seems, that if the lord accepts a surrender from a tenant, who has committed a forfeiture, this is no dispensation or bar to the entry of the lord, or his lessee; if the cause of forfeiture be such as the lord might well be supposed ignorant of, otherwise not; as making a private lease. But for failure of suit of court, or nonpayment of rent, &c., it is otherwise, because he cannot be presumed ignorant of these.

61. The lord of the manor is in general the only person who can take advantage of the forfeiture of a copyhold. Even a lessee for years of the manor shall take advantage of a forfeiture, for he is *dominus pro tempore*.

62. In all cases of forfeiture for treason or felony by a copyholder, the lord becomes entitled to the copyhold, and not the king, unless there be a special act of parliament for that purpose. And where by the statute 12 Cha. II. all the lands, tenements, and hereditaments of the regicides were forfeited to the Crown, Lord Hale held, that copyholds were not included; for if a copyhold was forfeited by this act to the Crown, it would be thereby destroyed, and pass by letters patent, not by surrender.

63. There have been several cases in which the Court of Chancery has interposed, to moderate the rigour of copyhold customs, and to relieve against unreasonable forfeitures.



64. A copyholder for life had committed a forfeiture, by cutting down timber trees, which was found so by a trial, and verdict at law; the lord entered and admitted the defendant, who was the remainder-man. The copyholder exhibited his bill to be relieved against the forfeiture, offering, if it should appear to be waste, to make satisfaction. An issue was directed to try whether it was the primary intention of the copyholder, in cutting down the timber, to commit waste; it being found for the plaintiff, it was decreed he should be relieved; and that the defendant, the remainder-man, should deliver up the possession to the plaintiff, and account for the mesne profits.

Thomas v.  
Porter,  
1 Cha. Ca.  
95.

65. A person having two copyholds held of the same manor, cut down timber in the one, and employed it in repairing the other, pretending that he was authorized by the custom of the manor; the timber being assigned and set out by two of the customary tenants. An ejectment was brought by the lord, upon the supposition that this was voluntary waste, and consequently a forfeiture. Upon the first trial a verdict was given against the lord; but upon a new trial the jury found against the custom. A bill was then brought in Chancery to be relieved against the forfeiture. It was admitted that by the custom, when timber was wanting on one copyhold tenement, the lord, by his woodman or bailiff, might assign timber for repairs on any of the other copyhold estates; but here a custom was set up for two tenants to assign to a third, which might be prejudicial to the lord; as more timber might by that means be cut than was necessary, and thriving timber, when there might be found enough, of that which was decaying, fit for repairs. It was however

Nash v.  
Earl of  
Derby,  
2 Vern. 537.

admitted that the timber was of small value, and all of it employed in the repairs of the copyhold.

The Lord Keeper relieved the plaintiff against the forfeiture; but decreed him to pay the costs of both the trials at law, and the costs of this suit.

Cudmore  
v. Raven,  
2 Vern. 664.

66. The Court of Chancery relieved a quaker against a forfeiture, which he had incurred by not doing suit and service.

Where Re-  
lief has been  
refused.

67. A court of equity will not, however, interpose in cases of this kind, unless there are equitable circumstances which entitle the party who committed the forfeiture to relief.

Cox v.  
Higford,  
1 Ab. Eq.  
121.

68. The plaintiff brought his bill to be relieved against the forfeiture of his copyhold estate. It appeared that he had been guilty of the greatest disobedience possible to his lord; that after six several presentments to repair, and an entry by the lord for the forfeiture, he brought an ejectment; and when upon the trial, a rule was entered into by consent, that upon payment of 4*l.* to the lord for his costs, which was not a fourth part of the costs to which he had put the lord, and putting the estate into repair, he should be admitted to it again; yet he never complied with the rule, nor made any offer of costs to the lord, but instead of that brought another ejectment, and was nonsuited; and after nine or ten years more, brought his bill.

Upon these circumstances the Lord Keeper declared he ought to have no relief, or if he were to be relieved, yet it must be upon payment to the lord of all his costs, and putting the estate into good repair; which would amount to more than his interest was worth, having only an estate for life; and dismissed the bill, but without costs. The Lord Keeper likewise declared, that though this were a

voluntary waste and forfeiture, against which it was objected that the Court never gave relief, yet he thought the rules of equity not so strict, but that relief might be given, even against voluntary waste and forfeiture.

69. A copyholder made leases not warranted by the custom of the manor, and worked a quarry of stone from his freehold lands into the copyhold, without licence. Afterwards his son cut down trees, and inclosed some of the copyhold lands, notwithstanding several repeated admonitions from the lord ; who brought his ejectment, and had a verdict as for a forfeiture.

*Peachey v. Somerset, Prec. in Cha. 568. 2 Ab. Eq. 227.*

On a bill brought for relief, Lord Macclesfield was clear of opinion that there was no foundation for equity to interpose. That it would be to alter the nature of the tenure whereby copyholds subsisted. That if this was a forfeiture at law, a court of equity had nothing to do with it ; and that it was like the case of a feoffment or fine levied by a particular tenant, against which there could be no relief. That copyholders were but tenants at will, though it were according to the custom of the manor. That this entirely differed from the case of a forfeiture for non-payment of rent or of a fine ; for there the estate was in the nature of a security for those sums, and the lord might be recompensed in damages and costs. That making a lease for years was a forfeiture, as it was a determination of his will : and though the lord should refuse to grant a licence, yet the tenant had no remedy, nor would the Court compel the lord to grant such licence. That though those copyholds were mended by time, and were in the nature of an inheritance, yet still the tenant was obliged to observe the law and custom to which they were subject.

That these customs were in the nature of the limitations of an estate, which determined on the breach of them : and that unless there were some equitable circumstances in the case, the Court could not interpose, as that would be to repeal and destroy the law.

## TITLE X.

## COPYHOLD.

## CHAP. VI.

*Of the Extinguishment and Suspension of Copyholds.*

- |                                              |                                           |
|----------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------|
| 2. Surrender to the Lord.                    | 17. Escheat or Forfeiture.                |
| 5. Release to the Lord.                      | 18. When the Land ceases to be demisable. |
| 7. Conveyance by the Lord to the Copyholder. | 19. Suspension of Copyholds.              |
| 10. Enfranchisement.                         |                                           |

## SECTION 1.

**C**OPYHOLD estates may be destroyed in several ways ; for whenever an estate of this kind ceases to be held by copy of court roll, according to the custom of the manor, it is said to be extinguished and gone.

2. Thus if a copyholder surrenders his estate to the lord, to the use of the lord, the copyhold is thereby extinguished. It is however necessary in a case of this kind, that the lord to whom the surrender is made have a lawful estate in the manor ; for a surrender by a copyholder to a person who is possessed of the manor by wrong, will not operate as an extinguishment of the copyhold. Surrender to the Lord.

3. A bishop having been disseised of a manor during Cromwell's usurpation, a copyholder surrendered to the disseisor, *ut inde faciat voluntatem suam*. After the restoration, the bishop entered. Resolved, that the copyhold was not extinguished, because the surrender was void. Pitt v. Moore, 2 Show. 156. T. Jones, 153. Roe v. Wigg.

St. Paul  
v. Dudley  
and Ward,  
15 Ves. 167.

4. It was held by Lord Eldon, in a late case, that where the lord of a manor was tenant for life, with remainders over, and purchased in a copyhold held of the manor, taking the surrender to him and his heirs, it was extinguished ; and as parcel became subject to the limitations of the manor.

Release to  
the Lord.  
Gilb. Ten.  
300.

5. If a copyholder releases all his estate and interest to his lord, it will operate as an extinguishment of his copyhold. For although a release cannot in its own nature pass away a possession, yet it may amount to a signification of the tenant's intention to hold the lands no longer ; and the rule is, that every thing amounting to a determination of the copyholder's will to hold no longer, extinguishes the copyhold.

Idem.  
Wakeford's  
Case,  
1 Leon. 102.

6. So if the lord conveys away the freehold of a copyhold to a stranger, and the copyholder releases to the stranger ; this will also extinguish the copyhold. But if a copyholder be ousted, and the lord of the manor disseised, and the copyholder releases to the disseisor, it will have no effect.

Mortimer's  
Case,  
Hett. 150.  
Conveyance  
by the Lord  
to the Copy-  
holder.

7. Any conveyance of the land by the lord to the copyholder, for an estate of freehold, or even for a term of years, will extinguish the copyhold. For the estate of the copyholder being only at will, becomes merged by the accession of any greater estate.

Co. Cop.  
§ 62.  
Lane's case,  
2 Rep. 16 b.  
4 Rep. 31 a.  
Idem.  
1 Leon. 170.

8. If the lord demises the land held by copy to a stranger for years, and the stranger assigns over his term to the copyholder, this will extinguish the copyhold ; for both these interests cannot exist in the same person, *simul et semel* ; and consequently one of them must be determined, which of necessity must be the customary estate, for the estate derived from the common law cannot merge in that ; and when common law and custom come together, and

one or the other must necessarily stand, the common law shall be preferred.

9. It has been resolved, upon the same principle, that where a copyholder in fee took a lease for years of the manor, the copyhold was extinct for ever, and not during the lease only. Hide v. Newport, Moo. 185. 4 Rep. 31 b.

10. The next mode of extinguishing a copyhold, is by enfranchisement, by which the tenure is changed from base to free. This may be done by the lord's releasing to the copyholder his seignioral rights and services, by which the tenure is extinguished. For as the copyholder was tenant at will to the lord, by which there was a privity of estate between them, the release enlarges the copyholder's estate, and gives him the freehold. Enfranchisement. 1 Inst. 270 b. Tit. 32. c. 6.

11. It has been stated, that a conveyance of the freehold by the lord to the copyholder, extinguishes the copyhold; for in fact it operates indirectly as an enfranchisement, because a freehold and a copyhold tenure cannot subsist together. ante, § 7. ante, § 8.

12. Upon a question whether lands were freehold or customary, it appeared that they had originally been customary, or tenant right estates, holden of a manor in Cumberland, by the payment of certain ancient customary rents and other services; and descendible from ancestor to heir: that the lord of the manor, by an indenture made in 24 Cha. II., in consideration of 61 years rent, ratified and confirmed to the then tenant and his heirs, all his customary and tenant right estate, with the appurtenances, &c., and granted, that the tenant and his heirs should be freed, acquitted, exempted, and discharged from the payment of all rents, fines, heriots, &c. dues, customs, services, and demands, at any time thereafter happening Doe v. Huntingon, 4 East, 271.

to become due in respect of the tenancy, except one penny yearly rent ; and also excepting and reserving suit of court, with the services incident thereto ; and saving and reserving all royalties, escheats, and forfeitures, and all other advantages and emoluments belonging to the seignior, so as not to prejudice the immunities thereby granted to the tenant ; and also granted liberty to cut timber, and to sell or lease, &c. without licence.

Vide ante  
c. 1. § 9.

Plowd. 140.

Lord Ellenborough delivered the judgement of the Court. He said, that assuming these estates to have been holden prior to the deed of 24 Cha. II. by copy of court-roll, within the enlarged sense of those words, as they occurred in the stat. 12 Cha. II. the Court was of opinion that, by virtue of the deed of 24 Cha. II. operating upon that species of tenure, the tenement in question was become frank free ; or, in other words, land holden in free and common socage. To confirm to the tenant his customary and tenant right estate, freed, acquitted, and discharged from the payment of all rents and services, &c. except the one penny rent which was reserved or retained out of the old rent, was tantamount to a release of those rents, services, &c. which were not so specifically exempted and restrained : for “ where words are equivalent in substance to words of release, the law takes them as a release ;” and “ where there are words of substance, the law appoints how they shall enure ;” taking these words of acquittance, exemption, and discharge, on the part of the lord, as operating in substance a release of the services specified, and assuming that there was no material difference between the tenure in question, and that of antient demesne. For this purpose, there were



several cases in point, to show that the customary qualities of this tenure were extinguished by the deed. Roe v. Ireland, 11 East, 280.

13. Where a copyhold is enfranchised, either by a release of the services, or a conveyance of the freehold to the copyholder, the lands are severed from the manor; and in consequence of the statute *Quia emptores* will afterwards be held of the lord paramount. Nor can the lord of a manor, upon enfranchisement, reserve to himself the antient services. Lit. § 146. Dissert. c. 2. § 14.

14. In an action of debt to recover 2s. 6d., in which sum the defendant was amerced for not attending a court baron; it appeared that the defendant was seised of 14 acres of land, which had formerly been held of the manor, whereof the plaintiff was lord, by copy of court-roll; but that in 18 Ja. I. the then lord of the manor made a feoffment of the land to the then copyholder, reserving a yearly rent, which was stated in the deed to be the antient yearly rent, for all manner of suits, services, and demands whatsoever. The question was, whether the owner of this land was bound to attend the plaintiff's court. Bradshaw v. Lawson, 4 Term R. 443.

Lord Kenyon observed, that the principal question was settled by the statute *Quia emptores*, 18 Edw. I.; for after that statute, the lord could not by any deed reserve the old services, when he conveyed away the estate in respect of which those services were due, as the tenant must hold of the superior lord. By the conveyance, the estate was no longer parcel of the manor, nor held of the manor; neither was the defendant's ancestor any longer a tenant of the manor; therefore it was clear that the defendant was not bound to attend the plaintiff's court, as a tenant of the manor.

ante, c. 1.  
§ 39.

15. The lord of a manor who enfranchises a copyhold, must either be seised in fee simple, or have a power to convey the fee simple of the lands to the copyholder.

Wynne v.  
Cokes,  
1 Bro. R.  
515. 2d ed.

16. Although a copyholder should only have a particular estate in his copyhold, yet he may take an enfranchisement, which will be deemed absolute. But in a case of this kind, the enfranchisement shall be for the benefit of the persons in remainder, who would have taken the copyhold interest, in case there had not been an enfranchisement: a court of equity will accordingly direct a conveyance from the heirs at law of the particular tenant, to the persons in remainder, on their paying a proportionate part of the consideration given for the enfranchisement.

Escheat or  
Forfeiture.

c. 1. § 35.

17. Where copyholds come to the lord by escheat or forfeiture, the copyhold tenure is extinguished. But it has been stated, that in cases of this kind, the lord may grant them out again by copy of court-roll.

When the  
Lands cease  
to be demis-  
able.  
c. 1. § 25.

18. It has also been stated that whenever lands which had been held by copy of court-roll, have ceased to be demised or demisable by copy, they can never be granted again by that tenure; and consequently the copyhold is thereby extinct.

Suspension  
of Copy-  
holds,  
2 Sid. 82.

19. There are several cases in which copyholds are suspended only for a certain time, and not absolutely extinguished. Thus it is said, that where a person holding a copyhold becomes king, the copyhold is suspended; for it would be beneath the dignity of a king to perform such services as those to which copyholders are subject. But after his decease, the next person who becomes entitled to it, not being a king, shall hold by copy.

20. Where a copyholder married the lady of the manor ; it was held that this operated as a suspension of the copyhold, during the marriage only ; and was not an extinguishment. Co. Cop. § 62. Anon. Cro. Eliz. 8.

21. Where a copyholder took a lease for years of the manor, of which he held ; it was resolved that the copyhold was suspended : because no person can be lord and tenant at the same time. But that the lessee might grant it out as copyhold. 4 Rep. 31 a.

22. If a copyholder bargains and sells his lands to the lord of the manor, he being only lessee of the manor for years, the copyhold is not extinguished. For the lessee being lord of the manor, the lands are always demisable by copy. Gilb. Ten. 301. 1 Inst. 59 a n. 4.

TITLE XL

USE.

CHAP. I.

*Of the Origin of Uses.*

CHAP. II.

*Of the Nature and Quality of a Use before the  
Statute 27 Hen. VIII.*

CHAP. III.

*Of the Statute 27 Hen. VIII. of Uses.*

CHAP. IV.

*Of the Modern Doctrine of Uses.*

---

CHAP. I.

*Of the Origin of Uses.*

2. Origin of Uses.

6. Of the Fideicommissum.

12. Jurisdiction of the Chancel-  
lors over Uses.

14. Introduction of the Writ of  
Subpoena.

---

SECTION 1.

**H**AVING treated of legal and customary estates,  
we now come to discuss the nature and pro-  
perties of what are called equitable estates.

Origin of  
Uses.

2. The original simplicity of the common law  
admitted of no immediate estate in lands, which was

not clothed with the legal seisin and possession. In process of time, a right to the rents and profits of lands, whereof another person had the legal seisin and possession, was introduced; and though not recognized for a long time by the courts of common law, was, notwithstanding, supported by the Court of Chancery, and became well known by the name of a use.

3. The introduction of this novelty has been attended with the most serious consequences; for, though at first it appears to have been but a trivial innovation, yet in its progress it has in fact produced a revolution in the system of real property, and has introduced a mode of transferring land, very different from that which the old law had originally established.

4. A use was created in the following manner:—The owner of a real estate conveyed it by feoffment, with livery of seisin, to some friend, with a secret agreement, that the feoffee should be seised of the lands to the use of the feoffor, or of a third person. Thus the legal seisin was in one, and the use or right to the rents and profits in another.

5. It would be a matter of considerable difficulty to ascertain the precise time when this distinction between the legal seisin, and the right to the rents and profits, was first introduced. It is, however, certain, that the practice of conveying lands to one person, to the use of another, did not become general till the reign of Edw. III., when the ecclesiastics adopted it, in order to evade the statutes of mortmain, by procuring conveyances of lands to be made, not directly to themselves, but to some lay persons, with a secret agreement that they should hold the lands for the use of the ecclesiastics, and permit them to take the rents and profits.

Bae. Read.  
edit. 1785.

22,

1 Rep. 123 a.

Of the Fidei-  
commissum.

Bac. Read.  
19.

Vin. ad Inst.  
Lib.2. Tit.23.  
§ 1.

Just. Inst.  
Lib.2. Tit.23.  
§ 1.

Id. § 2.

6. The idea of a use, and the rules by which it was first regulated, are now generally admitted to have been borrowed by the ecclesiastics from the *fideicommissum* of the civil law; of which it will, therefore, be necessary to give some account.

7. By the Roman law, a great number of persons were incapable of being constituted heirs, or even of taking a legacy, under the testament of a Roman citizen; such as exiles, unmarried persons, those who had no children, &c. In order to evade this law, it became usual for testators to constitute some person their heir who was capable of inheriting, and to annex a request to the devise, that the person thus constituted heir should give the inheritance to some other person who was incapable of taking under the will.—

*Quibus enim non poterunt hæreditatem vel legata relinquere, si relinquebant, fidei committebant eorum qui capere ex testamento poterant.*

8. This was called a *fidei commissum*, of which the form is preserved in Justinian's Institute.—*Cum igitur aliquis scripserit Lucius Titius hæres esto, potest adjicere, rogo te, Luci Titi, ut cum primum poteris hæreditatem meam adire, eam Caio Seio reddas restituas.* In cases of this kind, the person thus constituted heir was called *hæres fiduciarius*, and the person to whom the testator directed the inheritance to be given, was called *hæres fidei commissarius*.

9. The *hæres fidei commissarius* had only what the Roman lawyers called a *jus precarium*, that is, a right in curtesy, for which the remedy was only by intreaty or request; so that the *hæres fiduciarius* was under no legal obligation of complying with the request of the testator.—*Sciendum itaque est, omnia fideicommissa primis temporibus infirma fuisse; quia nemo invito cogebatur præstare id de quo rogatus erat. Et ideo*

Just. Inst.  
Lib.2. Tit.23.  
§ 1.

*fideicommissa appellata sunt, quia nullo vinculo juris, sed tantum pudore eorum qui rogabantur, continebantur.*

10. Thus stood the Roman law respecting the *fideicommissum* for some centuries, during which time several frauds were committed by those who, being constituted heirs, with a direction to give the inheritance to some other person, refused to execute the trust reposed in them by the testator, and converted the property to their own use. This induced the Emperor Augustus to direct the consuls to take cognizance of all future cases of this kind.—*Postea Idem. divus Augustus primus, semel iterumque gratia personarum motus, vel quia per ipsius salutem rogatus quis diceretur, aut ob insignem quorundam perfidiam, jussit consulibus auctoritatem suam interponere. Quod quia justum videbatur et popolare erat, paulatim conversum est in assiduam jurisdictionem; tantusque eorum favor factus est, ut paulatim etiam prætor crearetur, qui de fideicommissis jus diceret, quem fideicommissarium appellabant.*

11. The Emperor Justinian completed this system, and extended the rights of the *hæres fideicommissarius* by a law, which enacted, that if a testator should direct the person whom he instituted his heir, to give either the whole or part of the inheritance to another, and this circumstance could not be proved, either by the written will of the testator, or the testimony of five witnesses; in case the person instituted heir should refuse to comply with the intentions of the testator, he was compellable either to take a solemn oath that the testator had not created any *fideicommissum*, or else to execute the trust reposed in him. Id. § 12.

12. Upon the first introduction of uses into the English law, the person to whom a use was limited, who was called the *cestui que use*, was exactly in the Jurisdiction of the Chancellors over Uses.

same situation with the *hæres fidei commissarius* ; and depended entirely on the good faith of the feoffees to uses, or the persons to whom the lands were conveyed. It is natural to suppose, that while the rights of the *cestui que use* were so extremely precarious, and depended so entirely on the good faith of the feoffee to uses, many breaches of trust were committed ; nor is it improbable but that even the ecclesiastics, who first introduced this species of property, became in some instances the dupes of those to whom lands had been conveyed for their use. This induced the clerical chancellors of those times to consider the limitation of a use as similar to a *fideicommissum*, and binding in conscience. They therefore assumed the jurisdiction which the Emperor Augustus had given to the Roman consuls, of compelling the execution of uses in the Court of Chancery.

13. It however soon appeared, that even this assumed jurisdiction was not sufficient to answer their purposes ; for whenever a positive declaration of a use could not be proved, which must frequently have happened, when uses were declared in a secret manner, by words only, without writing ; the Court of Chancery could not compel the feoffees to uses to execute them, there being no legal proof that they held the lands to the use of any other person.

Introduction  
of the Writ  
of Subpœna.

14. To remedy this inconvenience, John Waltham, bishop of Salisbury, and chancellor to King Rich. II. took advantage of the privilege given him by the statute of Westminster 2. 13 Edw. I. c. 34. of devising new writs, and invented the writ of *subpœna*, returnable only into the Court of Chancery.

15. The writ of *subpœna* was originally a process in the courts of common law, to enforce the attendance of a witness to give evidence ; but this new writ of *sub-*



*perna* was used in the Court of Chancery for the same purpose as a citation in the courts of civil and canon law, to compel the appearance of a defendant, and to oblige him to answer upon oath the allegations of the plaintiff, contrary to one of the first principles of the common law, that no man can be compelled to criminate himself.

16. It is well known how averse the English nation always was from any alteration of their ancient customs; and that they were particularly jealous of every maxim or rule taken from the civilians or canonists, which was attempted to be introduced or substituted in the room of the common law; accordingly we find that this innovation did not pass unnoticed; for early in the next reign, namely, in 2 Hen. IV. the commons took notice of the introduction of this writ of *subpœna*, and presented a strong petition to the king against it; praying that it might be abolished: to which King Henry IV., who was not then firmly settled on the throne, gave a palliating answer.

Rot. Parl.  
vol. 3. 471.

17. Another petition was presented by the commons to King Henry V. complaining of the hardships to which all persons were become liable, from the introduction of this new writ of *subpœna*. Observing that it was a novelty against the form of the common law, which John Waltham, late bishop of Salisbury, out of his subtlety found out and began; by which persons were compelled to answer upon oath, pursuant to the form of the civil law, and the law of the holy church; praying that those who sued out such a writ should insert all their allegations; and if any person was aggrieved by a writ of this kind, in any matter which was determinable at com-

Rot. Parl.  
vol. 4. 84.

mon law, that he should be paid the sum of forty pounds.

To this petition the king returned an answer in the negative; by which means the writ of *subpœna* was firmly established, and was thenceforth constantly used for the purpose of compelling all persons to declare on oath, whether they held particular lands to their own use, or to the use of another.

18. From this account of the progress of uses, it evidently appears that the ecclesiastical chancellors adopted the principles of the civil law, in the support and construction of them; and that the bishop of Salisbury derived the idea of the writ of *subpœna* returnable into Chancery, from that law of Justinian which has been mentioned in a preceding part of this chapter.

19. Notwithstanding the invention of the writ of *subpœna*, it appears that the Court of Chancery did not immediately possess itself of that absolute jurisdiction over persons enfeoffed to uses, which it afterwards exercised; for in the rolls of parliament, 4. 151. 9 Hen. V. there is a petition from William Lord Clynton, stating, that upon his going on an expedition to Ireland, he had enfeoffed William De La Pool of all his lands, for the performance of his will. Pool having afterwards refused to comply with his intentions, was personally called on and examined in parliament, and it was ordered that he should re-enfeoff Lord Clynton.

20. The abuses arising from the writ of *subpœna* were in some degree restrained by the statute 15 Hen. VI. c. 4., which, after reciting “that divers persons had been greatly vexed and grieved by writs of *subpœna*, purchased for matters determinable by

he common law of the land, to the great damage of such persons so vexed, and in subversion and impediment of the common law ;” it was enacted, that no writ of *subpœna* should be granted until surety was found to satisfy the party so grieved and vexed, for his damages and expences, if the matter could not be made good which was contained in the bill.

## TITLE XI.

## USE.

## CHAP. II.

*Of the Nature and Quality of a Use before the Statute  
27 Henry VIII.*

- |                                                         |                                               |
|---------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Nature of a Use.</i>                              | 28. <i>Might change by Matter subsequent.</i> |
| 8. <i>Necessity of Confidence in the Person.</i>        | 29. <i>Might commence in futuro.</i>          |
| 12. <i>And of Privy of Estate.</i>                      | 30. <i>Were revocable.</i>                    |
| 15. <i>Who might be seised to Uses.</i>                 | 31. <i>Not an Object of Tenure.</i>           |
| 20. <i>What might be conveyed to Uses.</i>              | 34. <i>Not subject to Dower or Curtesy.</i>   |
| 21. <i>Rules by which Uses were governed.</i>           | 35. <i>Not extendible, nor Assets.</i>        |
| 22. <i>Could not be raised without a Consideration.</i> | 36. <i>Devisable.</i>                         |
| 23. <i>Were alienable.</i>                              | 38. <i>Descendible.</i>                       |
| 27. <i>Without Words of Limitation.</i>                 | 40. <i>Inconveniences of Uses.</i>            |
|                                                         | 41. <i>Statutes made to remedy them.</i>      |

## SECTION 1.

Nature of a  
Use.  
Bac. Read. 5.

**L**ORD Bacon, in his justly celebrated Reading on the statute of uses, observes, that it is the nature of all human science and knowledge, to proceed most safely by negative and exclusive, to what is affirmative and inclusive; and then says, "An use is no right, title, or interest in law," neither *jus in re*, nor *ad rem*; that is, neither an estate nor a demand; so that it is nothing for which a remedy is given by the course of the common law; being a species of property totally unknown to it, and for which it was therefore impossible that it should have made any provision.

1 Rep. 140 a.

2. Lord Bacon then proceeds to state affirmatively what a use is ; and after giving the definition of a use from Plowden, namely, that a use is a trust re- 352.  
posed by any person in the terretenant, that he may suffer him to take the profits, and that he will perform his intent ; he says, “ *usus est dominium fiduciarium ;* use is an ownership in trust ; so that *usus et status, sive possessio, potius differunt secundum rationem fori, quam secundum naturam rei :* for that one of them is in court of law, the other in court of conscience.”

3. The reason why the *cestui que use* had no property whatever by the common law, in the lands given to his use, was, because where lands were legally conveyed to one person to the use of another, the limitation of the use was deemed absolutely void ; as it only derived its effect from the declaration of the feoffor ; whereas no legal right to a freehold estate in lands could be transferred without the ceremony of livery of seisin.

4. Thus, in a case mentioned in the year books, 4 Edw. 4. 3. where A. enfeoffed B. to the use of himself, the Judges observe, that in Chancery a man shall have his remedy according to conscience ; but in the Common Pleas and the King's Bench, it was otherwise ; for the feoffee should have the land, and the feoffor should have nothing against his own feoffment, though it was only upon confidence. It is said in Plowden, that by the common law *cestui que use* 349.  
could not enter upon the land ; but if he had entered, the feoffees might have an action of trespass against him, and punish him ; for the land as fully belonged to the feoffees, as if there had been no use of it ; so that if the feoffees had ousted the *cestui que use*, or had sued him for taking the profits, he would not have any answer or defence at the common law, but

was driven to seek his remedy in a court of conscience.

1 Rep. 140 a.

5. Although the *cestui que use* was generally in possession of the lands, yet he was only considered by the courts of common law as tenant at sufferance; his title to the land was of so low and precarious a nature, that he could not even justify the seizing of cattle for trespass; and if he made a lease, the lessee might plead that he had nothing in the land.

6. When the Court of Chancery first assumed a jurisdiction in cases of uses, it went no farther than to compel payment of the rents and profits to the *cestui que use*. In process of time it proceeded another step, and established it as a rule, that the *cestui que use* had a right to call on the feoffees to uses for a conveyance of the estate to himself, or to any other person whom he chose to appoint; and also to compel him to defend the title to the land.

Read. 10.

Hence Lord Bacon has said, that a use consists of three parts: "The first, that the feoffee will suffer the feoffor to take the profits: The second, that the feoffee, upon request of the feoffor, or notice of his will, will execute the estates to the feoffor or his heirs, or any other by his direction: The third, that if the feoffee be disseised, and so the feoffor disturbed, the feoffee will re-enter, or bring an action to re-continue the possession. So that those three, permanency of the profits, execution of estates, and defence of the land, are the three points of a trust or use."

7. As to the legal estate in the land, it was vested in the feoffee to uses, who performed the feudal duties, and who was in every respect deemed to be the tenant of the fee. It was liable to all his incumbrances; his widow was entitled to dower out of it; if he died leaving an infant heir, the lord, as guardian to the

infant, became entitled to the lands ; and if he was attainted of treason or felony, they were forfeited.

8. The right in conscience and equity to the rents and profits of land, which constituted a use, was not issuing out of the land, but was collateral thereto, and only annexed in privity to a particular estate in the land ; that is, the use was not so attached to the land, that when once created, it must still have existed, into whose hands soever the lands passed ; as in the case of a rent or right of common. But it was created by a confidence in the original feoffee, and continued to be annexed to the same estate, as long as that confidence subsisted, and the estate of the feoffees remained unaltered. So that to the execution of a use, two things were absolutely necessary ; namely, confidence in the person, and privity of estate.

Necessity of Confidence in the Person.  
1 Rep. 122 a.  
Plowd. 352.  
Poph. 71.

9. Confidence in the person signified the trust reposed in the feoffees, which arose from the notice given them of the use, and of the persons who were intended to be benefited by the feoffment. This confidence was sometimes expressed, and sometimes implied. Thus, if a feoffee to uses enfeoffed another person of land, who had notice of the uses to which such land was liable, without any consideration ; the new feoffee took it under an implied confidence, and was compellable to execute the use. For it was resolved, that wherever there were feoffees to a use ; their heirs and feoffees, and all who came into the land under them in the *per*, without consideration, provided they had notice of the use, should be seised to such use, and be compelled in Chancery to execute it. But if a feoffee to uses enfeoffed a stranger of the land for valuable consideration, who had no notice of the use ; as there was no confidence in the person,

1 Rep. 122 a.

either expressed or implied, the use was destroyed, nor could the new feoffee be compelled to execute

Idem.

10. If a stranger purchased lands from a feoffee to uses, for a valuable consideration ; yet if he had notice of the former uses, he would be compelled to perform them. For although the consideration implied a seisin to his own use, yet the notice of the former uses was a circumstance which, in a court of equity, would render him liable to the performance of them.

Keilw, 42.

11. The idea of confidence in the person was at first extremely limited, as it only extended to the original feoffee. Lord Bacon says, in 8 Edw. IV. the Judges were of opinion, that a *subpoena* did not lie against the heir of the feoffee, who was in by law but that the *cestui que use* was driven to his bill in parliament. It was however settled, in the reign of Hen. VI., that a *subpoena* would lie against all those who came in in the *per*, without paying a valuable consideration ; and also against all those who had notice of the former uses, although they did pay a valuable consideration.

And of  
Privity of  
Estate.

1 Rep. 139 b.

12. With respect to privity of estate, it is to be observed, that a use was a thing collateral to the land, and only annexed to a particular estate in the land, not to the mere possession thereof ; so that whenever that particular estate in the land to which the use was originally annexed, was destroyed, the use itself was destroyed. Thus, where a person came into the same estate whereof the feoffee to uses was seised, by contract or agreement with him, such person was liable to the performance of the uses ; but if he came in of any other estate than that whereof the feoffee to uses was seised, although he had full notice of the use, yet the privity of estate was thereby destroyed ;



and consequently the lands were no longer liable to the uses.

13. It followed, from these principles, that where a *feoffee to uses* was disseised, the disseisor could not be compelled in Chancery to execute the use, because the privity of estate was destroyed; for the disseisor came in in the *post*, that is, he did not claim by or from the *feoffee to uses*, but came in of an estate paramount to that of such *feoffee*. On the other hand, if a person was disseised of lands which were liable to a rent, right of common, or any other property of that kind, the lands would still continue subject to those charges, notwithstanding the disseisin; because they were annexed to the possession of the land. Idem. 1 Rep. 122 b.

14. In the same manner, where a *feoffee to uses* died without heirs, or committed a forfeiture, or married; neither the lord who entered for his escheat or forfeiture, nor the husband who claimed the lands as tenant by the curtesy, nor the wife who was assigned her dower, were liable to perform the trust, because they were not in in the *per*, that is, in privity of the estate to which the use was annexed; but claimed an estate paramount to that which was liable to the use. Id. 122 a.

15. With respect to the persons who were capable of being *feoffees to uses*, all private persons whom the common law enabled to take lands by feoffment, might be seised to a use, and were compellable in Chancery to execute it. Thus, Lord Bacon says, "A feme covert, and an infant, though under years of discretion, may be seised to an use; for ~~as well~~ as land might descend unto them from a *feoffee to use*, so may they originally be enfeoffed to a use." Who might be seised to Uses. Read. 58.

16. A corporate body could not be seised to a use, because the Court of Chancery could not issue any Plowd. 102.

process against them, for the execution of it. And a corporation cannot be intended to be seised to any other's use.

Year Book,  
7 Edw. 4.  
17.

17. Neither the king, nor queen regnant, on account of their royal capacity, could be seised to any use but their own : that is, they might hold the lands but were not compellable to execute the use ; as no process could be awarded against them by the Court of Chancery.

18. When King Richard III. was Duke of Gloucester, he had been frequently made feoffee to uses ; therefore, upon his accession to the throne, he would have been entitled to hold the lands discharged of the uses. To obviate so notorious an injustice, an act of parliament was immediately passed, stat. 1 Rich. III. c. 5., by which it was enacted, that where the king had been so enfeoffed jointly with other persons, the lands should vest in the other feoffees, as if he had never been named ; and that where the king stood solely enfeoffed, the estate itself should vest in the *cestui que use*, in like manner as he had the use.

Bac. Read.  
57.

19. A queen consort could not be seised to a use ; for although she was enabled to grant and purchase without the king, yet in regard of the government and interest which the king had in her possessions, she could not be seised to a use.

What might  
be conveyed  
to Uses.

20. With respect to the species of property which might be conveyed to uses, it was held, that nothing whereof the use was inseparable from the possession, such as annuities, ways, commons, &c. *quæ ipso usu consumuntur*, could be granted to a use : but that all corporeal inheritances, as also incorporeal hereditaments, which were in *esse*, as rents, advowsons, ~~in-anss~~, local liberties and franchises, might be conveyed to uses.

W. Jones,  
127.

21. A use being a species of property totally unknown to the common law, and owing its existence to the equitable jurisdiction of the Court of Chancery, the rules by which uses were governed, were derived from the civil law; and differed materially from those by which real property was regulated in the courts of common law. Hence Lord Bacon has observed, that uses stood upon their own reasons, utterly differing from cases of possession.

Rules by which Uses were governed. Bac. Read. 13.

22. By the common law a feoffment is good without any consideration; but Lord Bacon observes, it was established in Chancery that a use could not be raised without a sufficient consideration; a doctrine evidently taken from the maxim of the civil law, *ex nudo pacto non oritur actio*. In consequence of this rule, the Court of Chancery would not compel the execution of a use, unless it had been raised for a good or a valuable consideration; for that would be to enforce *donum gratuitum*.

Could not be raised without a Consideration. Read. 13.

23. Although a use was but a right, and could only be considered as a *chose in action*, which, according to the principles of the common law, is neither transferrable nor assignable, yet a use might be aliened: and Lord Bacon observes, that there are two instances where a right to a use was allowed to be transferred; for as no action at law could arise from such a transfer, there was no danger of maintenance.

Were alienable.

Read. 16.

24. It frequently happened that *cestui que use* being in possession, aliened the lands, and afterwards the feoffees entered; which gave rise to several vexatious suits in Chancery. To remedy this inconvenience, the statute 1 Rich. III. c. 1. gave the *cestui que use* in possession a power of alienating the legal estate, without the consent or concurrence of the feoffees.

25. A use might be transferred by one person to another, by any species of deed or writing. And from its nature, it was impossible that it could be the subject of a feoffment, with livery of seisin.

Read. 14. 26. Lord Bacon says, there is no case at common law, where a person can take under a deed, unless  
Tit. 32. c. 2. he is a party to it ; whereas a use might be declared to a person who was not a party to the deed, by which the use was raised ; because a conveyance to a use was nothing but a publication of a trust.

Without  
Words of  
Limitation.  
1 Rep. 87 b.  
100 b.

27. In the alienation of uses none of those technical words, which the law requires in the limitation of particular estates, were deemed necessary. Thus a use might be limited in fee simple, without the word heirs ; for if a sufficient consideration was given, the Court of Chancery would decree the absolute property of the use to be well vested in the purchaser. And as a use was a thing which consisted merely in confidence and privity, and was not held by any tenure, the rules of the common law were not violated.

Might change  
by Matter  
subsequent.  
Bro. Ab.  
Feoff. al Use,  
pl. 30.  
13 Rep. 48.  
Jenk. Cent.  
8. 52.

Read. 18.

28. A use might be limited in such a manner as to change from one person to another, upon the happening of some future event. Thus a use might be limited to A. and his heirs, until some particular event should happen, and then to B. and his heirs. For although the rules of the common law do not allow an estate in fee simple to be limited after an estate in fee simple ; yet the Court of Chancery admitted this species of limitation to be good in the case of a use, because, as Lord Bacon observes, “ things may be avoided and determined by the ceremonies and acts like unto those by which they are created and raised : that which passeth by livery ought to be avoided by entry ; that which passeth by

grant, by claim ; that which passeth by way of charge, determineth by way of discharge. And so a use, which is raised but by declaration or limitation, may cease by words of declaration or limitation, as the civil law saith ; *in his magis consentaneum est ut iisdem modis res dissolvantur quibus constituentur.*”

29. If an estate had been limited at common law to a man, and to such woman as he should afterwards marry, the man would have taken the whole ; because a freehold estate could not be created to commence *in futuro*. But the limitation of a use in this manner would have been good. So if a man had made a feoffment to the use of one for years, and after to the use of the right heirs of J. S., this limitation had been good.

Might commence *in futuro*.  
1 Rep. 101 a.

Id. 135 a.  
Tit. 16. c. 4.

30. It was determined upon the same principles, that a power of revocation might be annexed to the limitation of a use ; by which means the grantor might at any future time revoke the uses he had declared, and limit new uses to other persons ; which the feoffee to uses was bound to execute.

Were revocable.  
1 Inst. 237 a.  
3 Cha. Ca. 66.

31. A use not being considered as an estate in the land, was not an object of tenure ; and was therefore freed from all those oppressive burthens which were introduced into England by the Normans, as consequences of the feudal system. Thus if a *cestui que use* was attainted of treason or felony, the use was not forfeited, either to the king or to the lord of the fee ; because a use was not held of any person. Therefore in some general acts of parliament relating to treason, as that of 21 Rich. II. c. 3. and in most particular acts of attainder passed after that time, there was a special provision made, that the persons attainted should forfeit all lands whereof they, or any to their use, were seised. In most of

Not an Object of Tenure.

Dissert. c. 2.  
§ 23, &c.

those acts provision was also made to save from forfeiture such lands whereof the persons attainted were seised to the use of others.

1 Inst. 76 b. 32. In the same manner if a *cestui que use* died, leaving a son or a daughter within age, the lord had not the wardship or marriage of the heir, or a relief on the death of the ancestor: nor could he claim the lands as an escheat, on the death of the *cestui que use* without heirs.

33. After the ecclesiastics had been restrained by the statute 15 Rich. II. c. 5. from acquiring the use of lands, it might be supposed that the practice of conveying lands to uses would have ceased; but it was soon found that this was the most effectual mode of evading the hardships of the feudal tenures; and also of securing estates from forfeiture for high treason. So that during the contests between the houses of York and Lancaster, as it was the constant practice to attain the vanquished, almost all the lands in England were conveyed to uses.

Not subject  
to Dower or  
Curtesy.  
Perk. § 457.  
Tit. 5 & 6.

34. Another circumstance attending a use was, that the husband or wife of a *cestui que use* could neither be tenant by the curtesy, nor tenant in dower of the use, because the *cestui que use* had no legal seisin of the land. This was a grievance much complained of; therefore it became customary, when most estates in the kingdom were vested in feoffees to uses, to settle some estate, before marriage, on the husband and wife for their lives; which, as we have seen, gave rise to the modern jointure.

Not Ex-  
tendible, or  
Assets.

35. A use was not extendible, because there was no process at common law but against legal estates; for uses were mere creatures of equity; so that many persons conveyed their lands to uses, for the purpose of defrauding their creditors: and as a use

1 Rep. 121 b.  
1 Inst. 374 b.

was neither a chattel nor an hereditament, it was not assets to executors, or to the heir.

36. Uses were devisable, although at that time lands were not ; and Lord Bacon observes, that one of the reasons why so much land was conveyed to uses was, because persons acquired by that means a power of disposing of their property by will ; which enabled them to make a much better provision for their families, than they could otherwise have done.

Devisable.  
Read. 20.  
1 Rep. 123 b.

37. One of the first cases in the year books respecting uses was this :—A woman who had made a feoffment to uses, afterwards married, and by her will directed that her feoffees should convey the legal estate to her husband. It was adjudged that the will was void at law, being made by a feme covert ; therefore should also be void in Chancery.

Mich.  
18 Edw. 4.

38. There was, however, one instance in which the Court of Chancery followed the rules of the common law in cases of uses ; for it was held that they descended in the same manner as legal estates, the doctrine of the half blood was allowed to take place, and even local customs were left unviolated in this instance ; for where a *cestui que use* of lands held in gavelkind or borough english died, leaving several sons, the use descended either to all of them, or to the youngest, according to the custom.

Descendible.  
Bac. Read. 11.  
1 Inst. 14 b.

Tit. 29.

39. So where a person seised *ex parte materna* made a feoffment to uses, the use descended to the heirs *ex parte materna*, in the same manner as the legal estate would have done.

2 Roll. Ab.  
780.

40. Thus stood the doctrine of uses, as regulated and settled by the Court of Chancery ; in this state it was in some instances applied to very useful purposes, by removing the restraints on alienation, and enabling the proprietors of real property to exercise

Inconveniences of  
Uses.



several powers over it, which were not allowed by the rules of the common law. But uses became so general, and were applied to such bad purposes, that at length they were productive of very great grievances. Feoffments to uses were usually made in a secret manner; so that where a person had cause to sue for land, he could not find out the legal tenant, against whom he was to bring his *præcipe*; widows were deprived of their dower, husbands of their curtesy; creditors were defrauded, the king and the other feudal lords lost the profits of their tenures; their wardships, marriages, and reliefs; and an universal obscurity and confusion of titles prevailed; by which means purchases for valuable consideration were frequently defeated.

Statutes  
made to  
remedy  
them.

41. As a remedy for these inconveniences, several statutes were made to subject uses to the same rules as real estates. By the statute 50 Edw. III. it was enacted, that where persons conveyed their tenements to their friends by collusion, to have the profits at their will, their creditors should have execution of such tenements, as if no such gifts had been made. Two other statutes of the same kind were made, 1 Rich. II. c. 9. and 2 Rich. II. stat. 2. c. 3.

42. By the statute 1 Rich. III. c. 1. reciting that by privy and unknown feoffments, great insecurity, trouble, costs, and grievous vexations daily grew; it was enacted, that all acts and conveyances made by persons having only the use of lands, should be good and effectual, not only against the persons making such acts, but also against all persons having or claiming any estate or interest in the same, to the use of those who should make such acts.

43. By the statute 1 Hen. VII., reciting that whereas divers of the king's subjects, having cause



of action by formedon, &c., were defrauded and delayed of their said actions, and oftentimes without remedy, because of feoffments made of the same lands and tenements to persons unknown, &c.; it was enacted, that the demandant, in every such case, should have his action against the person or persons of the profits of the lands or tenements demanded, whereof any person or persons had been enfeoffed to his or their use.

44. By the statute 4 Hen. VII. c. 17. it was enacted, that if any person or persons should be seised of any estate of inheritance, being tenant immediate to the lords of any castles, &c. holden by knight-service, to the use of any other person or persons, and of his heirs only, and he to whose use he or they were so seised dieth, his heir being within age, no will by him declared, nor made in his life touching the premises; the lord of whom such castles, &c. were holden immediately, should have a writ of right of ward, as well for the body as for the land, as the lord should have had if the same ancestor had been in possession of the estate, so being in use at the time of his death, and no such estate to his use made: and that if any such heir was of full age at the death of his ancestor, to pay relief as his ancestor, whose heir he was, would have paid if he had been in possession of that estate, so being in use at the time of his death, and no such estate to his use made or had.

45. By the statute 19 Hen. VII. c. 15. it was enacted, that it should be lawful for every sheriff, or other officer to whom any writ or precept should be directed, at the suit of any person or persons, to have execution of any lands, tenements, or other heredita-

ments, against any person or persons, upon any condemnation, statute merchant, &c., to make and deliver execution unto the party in that behalf suing, of all such lands and tenements as any other person or persons were in any manner seised, to the only use of him against whom execution was so sued.

## TITLE XI.

## USE.

## CHAP. III.

*Of the Statute 27 Henry VIII. of Uses.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                               |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Statement of the Statute.</i><br>7. <i>Circumstances necessary to its Operation.</i><br>8. <i>1° A Person seised to a Use.</i><br>9. <i>What Persons may be seised to Uses.</i><br>13. <i>Of what Estate.</i><br>14. <i>Estate Tail.</i><br>19. <i>Estate for Life.</i> | 22. <i>What may be conveyed to Uses.</i><br>26. <i>2° A Cestui que use in esse.</i><br>31. <i>In what Cases the Statute operates.</i><br>39. <i>3° A Use in esse.</i><br>40. <i>The Statute then transfers the actual Seisin.</i><br>42. <i>Saving of all former Estates.</i> |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

NOTWITHSTANDING the variety of statutes by which it was endeavoured to make uses subject to the rules of the common law, yet means were found of evading them, particularly in cases of marriages, wardships, and reliefs; for in the statute 4 Hen. VII., for enabling lords to have the wardship of persons entitled to a use only, an exception was inserted where the ancestor had made a will, of which many persons took advantage, to the great detriment of the king, and the chief lords.

Statement of  
the Statute.

ante, c. 2.  
§ 44.

2. It is mentioned in Burnet's History of the Reformation, and also by Mr. Justice Harper, that King Henry VIII., in the 23d year of his reign, caused a bill to be brought into Parliament to remedy the abuses that arose from the universal practice which then prevailed of making feoffments to uses; but that it was rejected by the Commons.

Vol. I. 116.  
2 Leon. 16.

3. Four years after, parliament passed the statute 27 Hen. VIII. c. 10. entitled, "An act concerning uses and wills," usually called the Statute of Uses; reciting, that by the common law lands were not devisable by will, nor ought to be transferred but by livery of seisin; yet nevertheless divers and sundry imaginations, subtle inventions and practices, had been used, whereby the hereditaments of the realm had been conveyed by fraudulent feoffments, fines, recoveries, and other assurances, and also by wills and testaments; by reason whereof heirs had been unjustly disinherited, the lords had lost their wards, marriages, reliefs, heriots, escheats, aids, &c.; married men had lost their tenancies by the curtesy, widows their dower; and manifest perjuries were committed.

4. It is therefore enacted, (§ 1.) "That where any person or persons stood or was seised, or at any time thereafter should happen to be seised, of and in any honors, manors, lands, tenements, rents, services, reversions, remainders, or other hereditaments, to the use, confidence, or trust of any person or persons, or of any body politic, by reason of any bargain, sale, feoffment, fine, recovery, covenant, contract, agreement, will, or otherwise, by any manner or means whatever it be; that in every such case, all and every such person and persons, and bodies politic, that had or thereafter should have any such use, confidence, or trust, in fee simple or fee tail, term of life, or for years, or otherwise, or any use, trust, or confidence in remainder or reversion, should from thenceforth stand and be seised, deemed and adjudged, in lawful seisin, estate, and possession of and in the same honors, castles, &c. to all intents, constructions, and purposes in the law, of and in such like estates as they had or should have in use, trust, or confidence of or in the

ame ; and that the estate, right, title, interest, and possession that was in such person or persons, that were or thereafter should be seised of any lands, tenements, or hereditaments, to the use, confidence, or trust of any such person or persons, or of any body politic, to be from thenceforth clearly deemed and adjudged to be in him or them that had or thereafter should have such use, confidence, or trust, after such quality, manner, form, and condition, as they had before, in or to the use, confidence, or trust that was in them.

“ Where divers and many persons were or thereafter should happen to be jointly seised of and in any lands, tenements, rents, reversions, remainders, or other hereditaments, to the use, confidence, or trust of any of them that were so jointly seised ; that in every such case, that those person or persons which had or thereafter should have any such use, confidence, or trust in any such lands, &c. should from thenceforth have, and be deemed and adjudged to have, only to him or them that had or thereafter should have any such use, confidence, or trust, such estate, possession, and seisin of and in the same lands, &c. in like nature, manner, form, condition and course, as he or they had before in the use, confidence, or trust of the same lands, tenements, or hereditaments.” § 2.

5. It is evident from the words of this statute, that the intention of the legislature was, entirely to abolish uses, by destroying the estate of the feoffees to uses, and transferring it from them to the *cestuis que use* ; 2 Leon. 17. by which means the use should be changed into a legal estate : and the statute has so far answered the intention of the makers of it, that no use, upon which the statute operates, can exist in its former state for more than an instant ; as the legal seisin and posses-

sion of the land must become united to it immediately upon its creation.

6. It therefore followed, that where this statute operated, lands conveyed to uses could never in future become liable to the charges or incumbrances of the feoffees. But, on the other hand, they would be always subject to the charges and incumbrances of the *cestui que use*, and to all the rules of the common law ; so that they ceased to be devisable ; and by that means the great object of king Henry VIII. was attained ; which was, to preserve his right to wardship, and other feudal profits, out of the lands of the nobility.

Circum-  
stances ne-  
cessary to its  
Operation.

1 Rep. 126 a.

7. There are three circumstances necessary to the execution of a use by this statute. 1st, A person seised to the use of some other person. 2d, A *cestui que use* in esse ; and 3d, A use in esse, in possession, remainder, or reversion.

1° A Person  
seised to a  
Use.

8. With respect to the first of these circumstances, the words of the statute expressly require it ; these are, “ Where any person or persons stand or be seised, or at any time hereafter shall happen to be seised, of and in any honors, &c. to the use, confidence, or trust of any other person or persons, &c.” It will however be necessary in this place to inquire ; first, What persons are capable of being seised to uses : secondly, Of what estate or interest they can be seised to uses.

What Per-  
sons may be  
seised to  
Uses.

9. All those who were capable of being seised to uses before the statute, may still be seised to a use ; on the other side, all those who were incapable of being seised to uses before the statute, still labour under the same incapacity.

10. It has been stated, that neither the king nor the queen could, before the statute, have been seised to a use ; or rather were not compellable to execute

the use. This law continued after the statute ; and a singular case arose in 35 Eliz. respecting the prerogative of the crown to hold lands discharged of all uses.

11. A. committed high treason in 18 Eliz., for which he was attainted in 26 Eliz. Between the treason and the attainder, a fine was levied to him by B. of certain lands, to the use of B. and his wife (who was sister to A.) and of the heirs of the said B. Afterwards B. bargained and sold the lands to J. S. for money. Upon discovery of the treason and the attainder of A. the purchaser was advised by Plowden, Popham, and many others, that the land was in the queen ; because the queen was entitled to all the lands that traitors had, at the time of the treason, or after ; so the use which was declared to B. and his wife upon the fine was void, by the relation of the right of the queen under the attainder ; and the queen must hold the land, discharged of the use ; because she could not be seised to a use. It is but justice to mention, that the case being represented to queen Elizabeth, she granted the land to the *cestui que use*.

Pimb's Case,  
Moo. 196.  
1 Inst. 13 a.  
n. 7.

12. By the words of the statute, which are, “ any person or persons,” aliens and corporations are excluded from being seised to a use ; therefore it was determined, in a case reported by Dyer, that where an alien and a natural-born subject were enfeoffed to uses, the moiety of the alien should, upon office found, become vested in the crown.

Bac. Read.  
42—57.

King v.  
Boys,  
Dyer, 283 b.

13. With respect to the estate or interest of which a person may be seised to a use, the words of the statute are, “ where any person or persons stand or be seised, or at any time hereafter shall happen to be seised.” Now the word *seised* extends to every

Of what  
Estate.

species of freehold estates, although it appears to have been the general opinion, before and immediately after the passing of this statute, that all feoffees to uses must have been seised in fee simple.

**Estate Tail.** 14. It was therefore formerly much doubted, whether a tenant in tail could be seised to a use.

**Cent. 5. ca. 1.** Jenkins states it as a point determined, by all the Judges, that a tenant in tail cannot be seised to a use, either expressed or implied : 1st, Because the tenure creates a consideration ; 2dly, Because the statute *De Donis* has so appropriated and fixed the estate tail to the donee, and the heirs of his body, that neither he nor they can execute the use. Hence

**1 Inst. 19 b.** Lord Coke has said, that if an estate be made to a man and the heirs of his body, either to the use of another and his heirs, or to the use of himself and his heirs, this limitation of use is utterly void.

15. The case upon which Lord Coke and Jenkins have founded their opinion is, that of *Cowper v. Franklin*, which arose in 12 Ja. I., and is thus reported by Croke :—John Walter being seised in fee, made a feoffment in fee to Thomas Walter, *habendum* to him and the heirs of his body, to the use of him and his heirs and assigns for ever. The question was, whether Thomas Walter had an estate in fee tail only, or in fee simple determinable upon the estate tail. This depended upon two points : 1st, Whether a use might be limited upon an estate tail before or after the statute of uses. 2dly, Whether this limitation of uses to Thomas Walter and his heirs should not be intended the same uses, being to the feoffee himself, and to the same heirs, as it was in the *habendum*.

Croke reports the case to have been adjourned : but the opinion of the Court upon the argument,



inclined that he was tenant in tail; and that the limitation of the use out of the estate tail was void, as well after the statute of uses as before; for the statute never intended to execute any use, but that which might be lawfully compelled to be executed before the statute: but this could not be of an estate tail, for the Chancery could not compel a tenant in tail, before the statute, to execute the estate; so the statute did not execute it then.

Bulstrode reports a second argument upon this case, together with the judgement of the Court; which was, that Thomas Walter took an estate tail, because a tenant in tail could not be seised to a use. 3 Buls. 184.

Godbolt reports the case to have arisen upon a limitation to one and the heirs of his body, *habendum* to the donee, to the use of him, his heirs and assigns for ever; and that two points were resolved. 1st, That the limitation in the *habendum* did not increase or alter the estate given in the premises of the deed. 2dly, That a tenant in tail might stand seised to a use expressed; but such use could not be averred. 269.

The same case is also reported by Moor by the name of Carrier v. Franklin, where the court appears to have considered it as a question of construction: and held that the feoffee only took an estate tail, because the use to him and his heirs, immediately succeeding the *habendum*, must be construed to mean the same kind of heirs to whom the estate had been already limited, namely, the heirs of the body of the feoffee. 848.

16. If this case be considered as an authority, it will only prove that a tenant in tail cannot be seised to a use in fee: but that a tenant in tail may be

Road. 57.

seised to a use, co-extensive with his estate, is a doctrine which it would be extremely dangerous to controvert. Lord Bacon expressly says, that a tenant in tail may be seised to a use. — “If I give land in tail by deed since the statute to A. to the use of B. and his heirs, B. hath a fee simple determinable upon the death of A. without issue ; and like law, though doubtful, before the statute was ; for the chief reason that bred the doubt before the statute was, because tenant in tail could not execute an estate without wrong ; but that, since the statute, is quite taken away, because the statute saveth no right of entail, as the statute of 1 Rich. III. did.

10 Rep. 95.  
Plowd. 557.Vide Tit. 32.  
c. 9.

17. In Seymour's case, 10 Ja. I., a tenant in tail bargained and sold his estate tail to a stranger in fee : it was unanimously resolved, by the Court of King's Bench, that the bargainee took an estate to him and his heirs, determinable upon the death of the tenant in tail. Now this determination must have been founded on the principle that a tenant in tail might be seised to a use ; for otherwise the bargain and sale would have been void.

2 Rep. 77 a.

18. It may therefore be now laid down as an undoubted principle of law, that a tenant in tail may be seised to a use, even in fee ; and that such use will be good against the tenant in tail himself. And as tenants in tail have ever since the time of Lord Coke been in the practice of transferring their estates to the persons who were to be tenants to the *præcipe*, in fee simple, by conveyances derived from the statute of uses ; if it were established that a tenant in tail cannot be seised to a use, the consequence would be, that almost all the common recoveries which have been suffered for the two last centuries, would be void for want of a good tenant to the *præcipe*.

19. A tenant for life may be seised to a use ; such use will however determine together with the legal estate, which is transferred to it by the statute upon the death of the tenant for life ; for a *cestui que use* cannot have an estate in the use, of greater extent than the seisin out of which it is raised.

Estate for Life.

20. In 2 & 3 Eliz. this case was moved :—Lands were given to two persons for their lives, and the life of the survivor of them, to the use of A. B. for his life. The two donees to uses died ; and the question was, whether the estate to A. B. was determined. The Court thought it was determined ; because the estate on which the use was created and raised was gone.

Dyer 186. a. pl. 1. Crawley's Case, 2 And. 130.

21. It follows from this case, which is cited and admitted to be good law in Bulstrode's report of the case of Cowper v. Franklin, and also in a case reported by Croke ; that all persons having a legal estate of freehold may be seised to a use. If the use is greater than the estate out of which it is limited, it will cease upon the determination of that estate, but will be good in the mean time.

Cro. Car. 231.

22. With respect to the different kinds of property whereof a person may be seised to the use of another ; the words of the statute are—" Honors, castles, manors, lands, tenements, rents, services, reversions, remainders, or other hereditaments." Which comprehends every species of real property, in possession, remainder, or reversion ; therefore not only corporeal hereditaments, but also incorporeal ones, such as advowsons, tithes, rents, &c., are within this statute.

What may be conveyed to Uses.

23. Nothing however can be conveyed to uses, but that whereof a person is seised at the time ; for, in law, every disposal supposes a precedent property.

2 Roll. Ab. 790. Crod. Eliz. 401.

No man can therefore convey a use in land, of which he is not in possession, when the conveyance is made.

Read. 43.

24. Lord Bacon says, the word hereditament in the statute of uses is to be understood of those things whereof an inheritance is in *esse*; yet that a grant of a rent charge *de novo* for life, to a use was good enough; although there be no inheritance in being of the rent. It should however be observed, that in this case there is a seisin of the land out of which the rent is granted.

Co. Cop.  
§ 54.  
Gilb. Ten.  
182.  
Cowp. R.  
709.

25. Copyhold estates are not comprised in the statute of uses; because a transmutation of possession, by the sole operation of the statute, without the concurrence or permission of the lord, would be an infringement of his rights, and tend to his prejudice.

2. A Cestui  
que Use in  
Esse.  
Bac. Read.  
42—60.

26. The second circumstance necessary to the execution of a use by this statute is, that there must be a *cestui que use* in *esse*. If therefore a use be limited to a person not in *esse*, or to a person uncertain, the statute can have no operation.

27. With respect to those who may be *cestuis que use*, all persons capable of taking lands by any common law conveyance, may also be *cestuis que use*; and by the words of the statute, corporations may be *cestuis que use*.

1 Inst. 112 a.

28. Although a man cannot by any conveyance at common law limit an estate to his wife; yet he might have made a feoffment to the use of his wife, or a covenant with another to stand seised to the use of his wife. And such a use now created in this manner will be executed by the statute.

Read. 60.

29. Lord Bacon says, the king may be a *cestui que use*, but it behoveth both the declaration of the use,

and the conveyance itself, to be matter of record ; because the king's title is compounded of both.

30. By the words of the statute of uses a *cestui que use* may be entitled to an estate, "in fee simple, or fee tail, term of life, or for years, or otherwise," or in remainder or reversion.

31. The *cestui que use* must in general be a different person from him who is seised to the use ; for the words of the statute are, "Where any person or persons stand or be seised, &c. to the use, confidence, or trust of any *other* person or persons, &c." And Lord Bacon says, "The whole scope of the statute was to remit the common law, and never to intermeddle where the common law executed an estate. Therefore the common law ought to be expounded, that where the party seised to the use, and the *cestui que use*, is one person, he never taketh by the statute, except there be a direct impossibility or impertinency for the use to take effect by the common law."

In what Cases the Statute operates.

Read. 63.

32. Thus, where lands were given to a man and his wife, *habendum* to the said husband and wife, to the use of them and the heirs of their two bodies ; and for default of such issue, to the use of A. B. The question was, whether the husband and wife had an estate tail, or only an estate for their lives. It was adjudged that they took an estate tail.

Jenkins v. Young, Cro. Car. 230. Dyer 186 a. n.

Upon a writ of error in the King's Bench, it was argued that the estate out of which the use arose was but for their lives, consequently the use could not be limited for a larger estate. But Croke, Jones, and Whitlock were of opinion, that there was a difference where an estate was limited to one, and the use to another ; there the use could not be more than the estate out of which it was derived. That it was otherwise where the limitation was to two persons,

*habendum* to them, to the use of them and the heirs of their bodies; this was no limitation of the use, nor was the use to be executed by the statute, but they took by the common law.

Meredith v.  
Jones, Cro.  
Car. 244.

ante, § 32.

33. The same point arose in the subsequent term, in a writ of error from a judgement given in Wales. The Court held the limitation in the *habendum*, to the use of the grantees, and the heirs of their bodies, to be as a limitation of the land itself, being all to one person; as if it had been said, *habendum* to them and to the heirs of their bodies; and not like the case in Dyer, 186. For true it was, when the estate was limited to one or two, to the use of others and their heirs, the first estate was not enlarged by this implication, and the use could not pass a greater estate. But here, when the grant and *habendum* conveyed the estate, and the limitation of the use was to the same person, that showed the intent of the parties, and was a good limitation of the estate; for it was not an use divided from the estate, as where it was limited to a stranger, but the use and estate went together; wherefore it was all one as if the limitation had been to them and their heirs of their bodies. Sir William Jones said he knew many conveyances had been made in this manner, and twice brought in question, and adjudged to be an estate tail.

Gilb. Rep.  
16, 17.

34. It was held by Lord C. J. Holt and Powell, in a subsequent case, that when a fine was levied, or a feoffment made, to a man and his heirs, the estate was in the cognizee or feoffee, not as an use, but by the common law, and might be averred to be so.

Cases and  
Opin. Vol. 2.  
281.

35. This doctrine is most ably discussed by Mr. Booth, in an opinion on the following case:—An estate was conveyed by lease and release to D. C. and S. and their heirs, to hold unto the said D. C. and S.

For and during the natural lives of them and the survivor and survivors of them. The question was, whether they took by the common law, or by the statute of uses. As to this point Mr. Booth says,

“ We will now return to the words of the *habendum* in the release; taking the words, “ to the use.” The *habendum* stands literally thus; to hold unto the said D. and his companions, their heirs and assigns, to the only proper use and behoof of the said D. and his companions, their heirs and assigns, for and during the natural lives of the said D. and his companions, and the life and lives of the survivor and survivors of them. Here you observe the use limited, is not limited to any person different from the person to whom the estate is granted. The *habendum* is to D. and his companions, and the use is limited to D. and his companions; so that the estate and the use are both to one and the same person; and therefore this cannot be a statute use, for the seisin doth not go or belong to one person, and the use to another person; whereas the statute requires that there should be a standing seised by some third person or persons to the use of some *other person*. And that case of *Young v. Jenkins* is express, that where the use is ante § 32. not divided from the estate, and the use and the estate go together, there it amounts only to a limitation of the estate, and consequently is not a statute use, but only a common law use. And if at this day a man should enfeoff I. S. to hold to the said I. S. and his heirs, to the use and behoof of the said I. S. and his heirs for ever, no man living would call that a statute use; for the words would import no more than the words, “for his and their sole benefit and behoof;” and would only serve to show in how ample and beneficial a manner the feoffee was to take

the estate limited to him by the *habendum*; which being manifestly an estate at common law, could not also give or create a statute use. The words of Lord Holt in the case of Lord Altham v. Earl of Anglesey, before recited, are directly in point. In like manner it would be, if there were a feoffment to a man and his assigns, to hold to that man and his assigns, to the only use and behoof of him and his assigns, during his life; that would only limit an estate of freehold to him for his life, at common law; and not be the limitation or creation of any statute use. It would be the same in the case of a feoffment to one of lands, to hold to the feoffee and his heirs, to the only use and behoof of the feoffee and his heirs, during the lives of A. B. C. D. and twenty other persons. There the words to the use and behoof would pass no statute use, or pass any thing distinct from the estate; which estate would be an estate at common law; and the words to the use and behoof, would serve only to shew the amplitude of the estate given by the feoffment; and that the feoffee and his heirs were to take the same for his and their own benefit, without return of any service whatever to the donor."

Bac. Read.  
63.  
13 Rep. 56.

36. There are however some cases where the same person may be seised to a use, and also *cestui que use*. Thus, if a man makes a feoffment in fee to one, to the use of him and the heirs of his body; in this case, for the benefit of the issue, the statute, according to the limitation of the uses, divests the estate vested in him by the common law, and executes the same in himself, by force of the statute: and yet the same is out of the words of the statute, which are, "to the use of any other person." and here he is seised to the use of himself. But the statute has always been beneficially expounded, to satisfy the intention of the



**parties**, which is the direction of the use, according to the rule of the law.

**37.** So if a man seised of lands in fee simple, cove- Idem.  
nants with another, that he and his heirs will stand  
seised of the same land, to the use of himself and the  
heirs of his body ; or to the use of himself for life,  
the remainder over in fee. In that case, by the ope-  
ration of the statute, the estate which he hath at the  
common law, is divested, and a new estate vested in  
himself, according to the limitation of the use.

**38.** Lord Bacon says, if a person enfeoffs I. S. to Read. 64.  
the use of I. D. for life, remainder to the use of  
I. S. for life, remainder to the use of I. N. in fee,  
I. S. is in by the statute; because the law will not  
admit fractions of estates. So if a person enfeoffs  
I. S. to the use of himself and a stranger, they shall  
both be in by the statute, because they cannot take  
jointly, taking by several titles. Like law, if I enfeoff  
a bishop and his heirs, to the use of himself and  
his successors; he is in by the statute, in right of  
his see.

**39.** The third circumstance necessary to the exe- 3. A Use in  
Esse.  
1 Rep. 126 a.  
cution of a use by this statute is, that there should be  
a use in esse, in possession, remainder, or reversion ;  
and this use may either be created by an express de-  
claration, or may result to the original owner of the infra, ch. 4.  
estate, or arise from an implication of law.

**40.** When these three circumstances concur, the The Statute  
then trans-  
fers the  
actual Seisin.  
legal estate and possession of the lands, out of which  
the use was created, is immediately taken from the  
feoffee to uses, and vested in the *cestui que use*. And  
the seisin and possession thus transferred, is not a mere  
seisin and possession in law, but an actual seisin and Bac. Read.  
46.  
Anon. Cro.  
Eliz. 46.  
possession in fact ; not a mere title to enter upon the  
land, but an actual estate.

1 Inst. 266 b. 41. Lord Coke appears to have been of opinion, that by a conveyance to uses, executed by the statute, only a freehold in law passed. And others have said that the statute only transfers a civil seisin, it being impossible for an act of parliament to give an actual seisin; therefore that an entry is necessary to complete the seisin. It has however been found that the admission of this principle would be attended with dangerous consequences; it is therefore now held that the statute transfers the actual possession; a construction fully warranted by the words of the statute, which are, “every person having a use shall be in lawful seisin, estate, and possession, to all intents, constructions, and purposes, in the law.”

Gilb. Uses,  
230.

Barker v.  
Keate, Tit.  
32. c. 11.

Saving of all  
former Es-  
tates.

42. The third section of the statute contains a saving “to all and singular those persons and to their heirs, which were or thereafter should be seised to any use, all such former right, title, entry, interest possession, rents, customs, services, and action, as they or any of them might have, to his and their own proper use, in or to any manors, lands, tenements, rents, or hereditaments, whereof they were or thereafter should be seised to any other use, as if the said act had not been made.”

43. In consequence of this clause, no term for years, or other interest, whereof a person, to whom lands are conveyed to uses, is possessed in his own right, will be merged by such conveyance.

Cheyney's  
Case, Moo.  
196.  
2 And. 192.

44. A husband being seised in fee, made a lease to O. and S. in secret confidence, for the preferment of his wife. Afterwards he made a feoffment to O. and others, of the same lands, to other uses. It was decreed in the Court of Wards, by the advice of Wray, Anderson, and Manwood, that the term was not extinguished by the feoffment, by reason of the pro-

iso ; and because O. had the lease to his own use, it was not extinguished by the feoffment, which he took to the use of another.

45. A. demised lands to B. for 99 years ; afterwards A. by bargain and sale enrolled, and fine, conveyed the same lands to B. and others and their heirs, to the use of them and their heirs, to the intent that a common recovery should be had and suffered against them, with voucher of the lessor, to the use of a stranger ; all which was done accordingly. The question was, whether the term for years was merged.

Ferrers v.  
Fermor.  
Cro. Ja. 643.  
1 Vent. 195.  
1 Mod. 107.

Resolved, that the term still subsisted ; for although it was merged, by the union of the estates, till the recovery was suffered, yet when that was done, the uses thereof being guided by the bargain and sale, it was the same as if there had been no conveyance ; it being within the equity and intent of the saving in the third section of the statute of uses : for the intention of that statute was not to destroy prior estates, but to preserve them. It was also agreed by the whole Court, that if a fine or feoffment had been levied or made to the lessee for years, his term would not have been thereby extinguished. An objection was made that the bargain and sale, and fine, were to the use of the lessee for years, otherwise he could not have been tenant to the freehold ; therefore the saving in the statute of uses did not extend to this case ; but it was answered and resolved, for the former reasons, that the term was saved by the equity of the statute.

46. The saving in the statute of uses extends to cases, where the inheritance is conveyed by lease and release.

47. Cook let to Fountain for 99 years ; two years after Cook conveyed the inheritance by lease and release to Fountain and another, to the use of Cook

Cook v.  
Fountain,  
Bac. Ab. Tit.  
Lease, R.

and the heirs of his body, with divers remainders over. The question was, whether by this conveyance the lease for 99 years was merged and destroyed, in all or in part. First it was agreed, that if such conveyance to uses had been by fine or feoffment, it would not have been destroyed, but would have been preserved by the saving in the statute of uses. So likewise it was admitted, that if there had been no lease for a year, but the release had been immediate to the lessee for 99 years, to such uses, in this case also the lease for 99 years had been preserved by force of that statute: but here being a lease for a year precedent, it was argued that this was to the use of the lessee, and then by acceptance thereof, he admitted the lessor's power to make such lease; and by consequence before the release to the other uses came to take place; then the release after could not revive it: it was also said, that though this were all one conveyance, yet it differed from a feoffment, for it would not purge a disseisin, nor make a discontinuance: that if, before the release, the lessee granted a rent-charge or made a lease for half a year, and then a release was made to him and his heirs, to such uses, yet he who had the inheritance would have no remedy to avoid these charges but in Chancery.

On the other side it was argued that this was no merger of the 99 years term, or if it were, yet for no more than a moiety: for the reason of merger and extinguishment was not, as had been argued, the party's admittance of the lessor's power to make a lease; but the merger was effected by the accession of the immediate reversion to the particular estate; therefore a new lease by the lessor to his lessee, was not a merger or surrender of the first term, if there was any interposing or intermediate term; yet in

that case the lessee admitted the lessor's power to make the lease presently, as much as in the other : then if the union and accession of the two estates were the cause of the merger, the *quantum* of the thing granted would be the measure of that merger ; by consequence the first lease here would be extinguished, but for a moiety of the lands. Secondly, that it was not extinguished for any part, for the term was saved within the letter, or at least within the equity of the statute 27 Hen. VIII. c. 10. § 3. ; for the intent of the saving therein was to preserve the balance between the *cestui que use* and his feoffees, according to the rule of equity, by which they were governed before. Now suppose that Fountain had a lease for 99 years before this statute, and that Cook had desired him to accept a feoffment to his use ; without doubt the Chancery would not have compelled him to assign, till the 99 years term expired : and the same right seemed now to be preserved by the saving ; for the words were general : " All that shall be seised to any use," not all that shall be seised by feoffment or fine : so that the seisin to use was the only thing the statute regarded, not by what sort of conveyance : that lease and release was become a common conveyance ; and the lease being expressly said to be, to enable the lessee to accept a release to other uses, should not be construed to any other intent, or to be to his own use, otherwise than to enable him to accept such release : then if it should be admitted that the lease for 99 years were extinguished by the lease for a year, yet by the release it was revived ; for being but one conveyance, it was within the equity of the statute : the case of *Ferrers v. Fermor* was stronger, and yet it was resolved there, that though the bargain and sale

Vide Tit. 32.  
c. 11.

ante, § 45.

had destroyed the term for a time, yet by the recovery it was revived; because then but one conveyance *ab initio*; so here.

No judgement appears to have been given; but Lord C. B. Gilbert says it seemed reasonable that the lease for 99 years should not be merged, or at least but for a moiety; and even in that case, equity would set up the moiety, or the whole term again.

## TITLE XI.

## USE.

## CHAP. IV.

*Of the modern Doctrine of Uses.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Construction of the Statute.</i><br>3. <i>Of Contingent Uses.</i><br>4. <i>Uses arising on the Execution of Powers.</i><br>9. <i>Conveyances derived from the Statute of Uses.</i><br>16. <i>Whether the Statute extends to Devises to Uses.</i><br>20. <i>Resulting Uses.</i><br>36. <i>Uses by Implication.</i><br>39. <i>No Use results but to the Owner of the Estate.</i> | 40. <i>Nor against the Intent of the Parties.</i><br>45. <i>Parol Evidence allowed to show the intent.</i><br>47. <i>Nor which is inconsistent with the Estate limited.</i><br>51. <i>Nor on the Grant of an Estate Tail, for Life, or Years.</i><br>55. <i>Nor on a Devise.</i><br>56. <i>What Use results to a Tenant in Tail.</i> |
|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|--------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**W**HEN the statute of uses first became a subject of discussion in the courts of law, it was held by the Judges, that no uses should be executed by the statute, which were limited against the rules of the common law ; for it appeared by the preamble that it was the intent of the makers of the act to restore the ancient law ; and to extirpate and extinguish such subtle practised feoffments, fines, recoveries, abuses, and errors, tending to the subversion of the good and ancient common law of the land. So that it was plain this act was never intended to execute any use which was limited against the rules of the common law ; the object of the act was to extinguish and extirpate, not the feoffment, fine, or

Construction  
of the Sta-  
tute.

1 Rep. 129 &

recovery ; for these were laudable and good conveyances of lands and tenements, by the common law, as in effect recited in the beginning of the preamble ; but those uses which were abuses and errors, therefore mischievous, because they were against the rules of the common law : the statute was a law of restitution, namely, to restore the good ancient common law, which was in a manner subverted by abusive and erroneous uses, not to give more privilege to the execution of uses, than to estates which were executed by the ancient common law.

2. The courts have so far adhered to this construction of the statute, that the same technical words of limitation are now required in the creation of estates through the medium of uses, as in the creation of estates at common law. But, in many other instances, this doctrine was departed from, and advantage was taken of an expression in the statute of uses, in order to support several of those limitations which had been allowed by the Court of Chancery, in declarations of uses, when they were distinct from the legal estate.

Of contingent Uses.

ante, c. 2.  
§ 28.

3. The statute of uses enacts, that the estate of the feoffees to uses, shall be in the *cestuis que use* “ after such quality, manner, form, and condition, as they had before, in or to the use, confidence, or trust that was in them.” Now, the Court of Chancery having permitted a limitation of a use in fee, or in tail, to arise *in futuro*, without any preceding estate to support it ; and also that a use might change from one person to another, by matter *ex post facto*, though the first use were limited in fee ; the courts of law in process of time admitted of limitations of this kind, in conveyances to uses ; and held, that in such cases, the statute would transfer the possession



to the *cestui que use*, after such quality, form, and condition, as he had the use.—An account of the nature of these limitations will be given in Title XVI. *Remainder*.

4. By the rules of the common law, no restriction or qualification could be annexed to a conveyance of lands, except a condition. In consequence of this principle, a fine or feoffment, with a power of revocation annexed to it, was void at common law; because the fine or feoffment transferred the whole property and right of disposal, to the cognizee or feoffee; therefore the power of revocation was repugnant to the force of the preceding words. Besides the admission of such a clause would have introduced a double power, vested in different persons, over the same thing, which was contrary to the rules of the common law.

Uses arising on the Execution of Powers.

1 Inst. 237 a.

5. We have however seen, that before the statute of uses, if a feoffment was made to uses, the feoffor might reserve a power, either to himself or to some other person, to revoke the uses declared on the feoffment; and to appoint the feoffees to stand seised to other uses. For the principle on which uses were originally founded being, that the feoffee to uses was bound in conscience to pursue the directions of the feoffor, this obligation was equally binding; whether the agreement was, that the feoffor should receive the rents and profits himself, or some stranger; or whether they were to be paid in such manner as the feoffor, or any other person, to whom he delegated his power, should at any future time appoint.

ante, c. 2. § 30.

6. The statute of uses vests the legal estate in the *cestui que use*, after such quality, manner, and form as he had in the use: from which the courts concluded, that in all conveyances to uses, a power might

1 Inst. 237 a.

be reserved, of revoking a former limitation of a use, and of appointing a new use to some other person.

7. In an opinion of the late Mr. Booth, which has been published by Mr. Hilliard at the end of Shepard's Touchstone, is the following account of contingent uses and powers :—" By the old law, no fee simple could be limited upon or after a fee simple ; but, since the statute of uses, executory fees by way of use have not only been allowed, but are become frequent, in all conveyances operating by way of transmutation of possession. The uses are served out of the seisin of the feoffees, grantees, releasees, &c. In all future or executory uses there is, the instant they come in *esse*, a sufficient degree of seisin supposed to be left in the feoffees, grantees, &c. to knit itself to and support those uses ; so as that it may be truly said the feoffees or grantees stand seised to those uses, and then, by force of the statute, the *cestui que use* is immediately put into the actual possession. It is wholly immaterial how, or by what means, the future use comes in *esse* : whether by means of some event provided for, in case it happened in the creation of the uses, which event may be called the act of God ; or by means of some work performed by any certain person, for which provision was likewise made in the creation of the uses, which may be called the act of man ; in either case the statute operates the same way ; for the instant the future use comes in *esse*, either by the act of God or the act of man, the statute executes the possession to the use, and the *cestui que use* is deemed to have the same estate in the land, as is marked out in the use, by the deed that created it. When the use arises from an event provided for by the deed, it is

called a future, a contingent, an executory use: when it arises from the act of some agent or person nominated in the deed, it is called a use arising from the execution of a power. In truth, both are future or contingent uses, till the act is done; and afterwards they are, by the operation of the statute, actual estates. But till done, they are in suspense, the one depending on the will of heaven, whether the event shall happen or not; the other on the will of man."

8. If a person conveys his estate by lease and release to trustees and their heirs, to the use of himself for life, remainder to his first and other sons in tail, and inserts a proviso in the release, that it shall be lawful for him, at any future time, to revoke these uses, and to declare new ones; and that immediately upon such revocation and new declaration, the trustees shall stand seised of the lands to the use of such persons as the settlor shall appoint; this is a power of revocation and appointment. As soon as it is executed, the uses originally limited cease, and a new use immediately arises to the person named in the appointment, for such estate as is given to him by it; and the statute transfers the legal estate to such appointee, who by that means acquires the actual seisin and possession.

The nature of revocations and appointments to Tit. 32. c. 13. uses will be explained hereafter.

9. Lord Bacon says, the chief object of the statute of uses was to destroy all those secret conveyances to uses which had been so much complained of.—“The principal inconvenience, which is *radix malorum*, is the diverting from the grounds and principles of the common law, by inventing a mean to transfer lands and inheritances without any solemnity or act no-

Conveyances derived from the Statute of Uses. Bac. Read. 33.

1 Atk. 591.

Read. 39.

torious; so as the whole statute is to be expounded strongly towards the extinguishment of all conveyances, whereby the freehold or inheritance may pass, without any new confections of deeds, executions of estate, or entries." It is therefore somewhat singular that the statute, instead of having had that effect, has given rise to several new modes of transferring lands, unknown to the simplicity of the common law; and of a more secret nature than feoffments to uses: so that, notwithstanding the great caution with which this statute was made, it has not answered the intention of the Legislature.

10. Lord Bacon has, however, clearly proved, that the intention of the statute was only to destroy the estate of the feoffee to uses, by transferring it to the persons who were entitled to the use; and not to destroy the form of the conveyance to uses. 1. Because the words of the statute are, "Where any person is seised, or *hereafter* shall be seised to any use, &c." 2. In the same session in which this statute was made, it was enacted, that all bargains and sales to uses should be enrolled; which proved the intention of the Legislature, to leave the form of the conveyance, with the addition of a farther ceremony. 3. By the twelfth section of the statute, it was provided that the king should not take any primer seisin, or other feudal profits, on account of any estate which should be executed by means of the statute, till the 1st of May 1536. But that he should take the feudal profits for all uses which should become executed by the statute *after* that time.

11. Whatever might have been the intention of the Legislature in passing this statute, it is certain that it has given rise to several new sorts of conveyances, which operate contrary to the rules of the

common law: for it being soon observed that there was nothing in the statute to prevent the raising of uses, but only a provision that when a use was raised, the possession of the land should be transferred to such use; it was only necessary to raise a use, and the legal seisin and estate, together with the actual possession, became immediately vested in the *cestui que use*, without livery of seisin, entry, or attornment. ante, c. 3.  
§ 40.

12. In consequence of this doctrine, it became customary to raise a use to the person to whom the lands were intended to be conveyed, and then the statute transferred the possession to the *cestui que use*. This was done in two different ways; first, by a conveyance which only transferred a use, and which is said to operate without any transmutation of possession, because the alteration of the legal seisin is effected by the mere operation of the statute. There are two modes of conveyance which operate in this manner: a bargain and sale to uses, and a covenant to stand seised to uses; of which an account will be given in Title XXXII. *Deed*.

c. 9 & 10.

13. The second mode of conveying lands through the medium of uses, is effected in the following manner: the legal estate and possession is transferred by a feoffment, fine, or recovery, to some indifferent person, who stands in the place of the ancient feoffee to uses; a deed is then executed, reciting, that by such feoffment, fine, or recovery, the lands have been transferred to A. B., and declaring that such feoffment, fine, or recovery shall enure and operate, and that the feoffee, cognizee, or recoveror in such feoffment, fine, or recovery, shall be seised of such lands, to the use of a third person. Or else a deed is first executed, reciting that a fine or recovery is intended

to be levied or suffered, or covenanting to levy a fine or to suffer a recovery; and declaring that these assurances, when completed, shall enure to the use of a third person.

14. In both these cases a use arises out of the seisin of the feoffee, cognizee, or recoveror, to the person to whom such use is declared, and the statute immediately transfers to that use, the legal estate and actual possession.

15. These latter assurances are said to operate by transmutation of possession, because the legal seisin and estate is first transferred by some common law conveyance or assurance. They are usually called deeds to lead or declare the uses of a fine or recovery, and will be treated of in Title XXXII. *Deed*.

c. 12.

Whether the Statute extends to Devises to Uses.

16. As the statute of uses preceded the statute of wills, the former has been said not to extend to devises to uses. It is however observable, that the words of the statute of uses are,—“Where any person, &c. is seised to the use of any other person by reason of any bargain, sale, &c. *will*, or otherwise.” Now, though at the time when this statute was made, the word *will* could only apply to wills of lands then devisable by custom, yet when the statute of wills passed, the word *will* in the statute of uses became applicable to wills, or rather devises, of all the lands over which the testamentary power was given.

Dyer, 127 a.

17. In a case in 2 & 3 Phil. & Mary, it is said that devises of land in use have been common. In

E. Hartop's Case,  
1 Leon. 253.

23 Eliz. it was agreed by the Court of Wards, that a devise might be to the use of another; and Lord Coke is there reported to have been of opinion, that the son of a devisor takes by descent, when the *cestui que use*, to whom the land is devised, refuses the use; for the devisee cannot take it to his own use, because,

if the use be void, the devise is also void. In the case of *Broughton v. Langley*, which will be stated in the next title, it was agreed that a devise may be to the use of another, and the use will be executed, if the intent of the devisor appear. In *Gilbert's Uses*, it is also said that a devise may be made to a use. Lutw. 823. pa. 281.

18. In the case of an immediate devise to uses, as a devise to the use of A. for life, remainder to the use of B. in tail, it is admitted that the remainder cannot take effect by way of use; because there is no seisin to serve the use. But in the case of a devise to A. and his heirs, to the use of B. for life, remainder to the first and other sons of B. in tail, there is no reason why the seisin of A. should not be deemed sufficient to support the uses to the sons of B.

19. In opposition to this doctrine, a note to an opinion of the late Mr. Booth's has been published, in which it is said that the statute of uses does not operate on a devise to uses. This note is not annexed to the original opinion, which was in the possession of the late Mr. Hilliard, though it is said by Mr. Butler to be annexed to two copies of the opinion made immediately under the eye of Mr. Booth, and delivered by him to the persons in whose custody they are, and also in a copy of it bequeathed by Mr. Booth to Mr. Holliday. Admitting the authenticity of this note, and the great authority to which Mr. Booth's opinions are justly entitled; yet, as it has been a universal practice for the two last centuries to devise lands to trustees and their heirs, to various uses, with several powers, in the same words as are used in declarations of uses on fines and recoveries; it would be extremely dangerous at this time to question the operation of the statute of uses in such cases. Collect. Jur. v. 1. 427. 1 Inst. 271 b. n. 1. § 3, 5.



Resulting  
Uses.

Dyer, 186 b.  
11 Mod. 182.

20. Before the statute 27 Hen. VIII., if a person had conveyed his lands to another, without any consideration, or declaration of the uses of such conveyance, he became entitled to the use or pernancy of the profits of the lands thus conveyed. This doctrine was not altered by the statute of uses; therefore it became an established principle, that where the legal seisin and possession of lands is transferred by any common law conveyance or assurance, and no use is expressly declared, nor any consideration or evidence of intent, to direct the use; such use shall result back to the original owner of the estate: for where there is neither consideration, nor declaration of uses, or any circumstance to show the intention of the parties, it cannot be supposed that the estate was intended to be given away.

1 Inst. 23 a.  
271 a.  
Dyer, 166 a.

21. In consequence of this principle, Lord Coke has laid it down as a rule,—“That so much of the use as the owner of the land does not dispose of, remains in him.” So that where a person seised in fee simple levies a fine, or suffers a recovery, without any consideration, or declaration of the uses to which it shall enure, the use results back to himself; and the statute immediately transfers the legal estate to such resulting use; by which means he is seised in fee simple in the same manner as he was before: if any particular uses are declared, so much of the old use as is not declared to be vested in some other person, results back to the original owner.

Sir E. Clere's  
Case,  
6 Rep. 17 b.

22. Thus, where a man made a feoffment to the use of such person or persons, and for such estate and estates, as he should appoint by his will; it was resolved that the use resulted to the feoffor till he made an appointment.



23. So where a person made a feoffment to the use of himself, and his intended wife, after their marriage ; it was determined that the use resulted to the feoffor and his heirs, till the marriage. Woodliff  
v. Drury,  
Cro. Eliz.  
439.

24. In an ejectment tried before Lord Chief Baron Parker, this short case was reserved for the opinion of the Court. A. B. being in possession of the lands in question, levied a fine *sur conusans de droit come ceo*, &c. to the conusee and his heirs, without any consideration expressed ; and without declaring any use thereof : nor was it proved that the conusee was ever in possession. So that the single question was, whether the fine should enure to the use of the conusor, or to that of the conusee. After two arguments, the Court gave judgement for the plaintiff, who claimed as heir of the conusor ; and said, that in the case of a fine *come ceo*, &c. where no uses were declared, whether the conusor were in possession, or the fine were of a reversion, it should enure to the old uses, and the conusor should be in of the old use. That in the case of a recovery suffered, the same should enure to the use of him who suffered it (who was commonly the vouchee), if no uses were declared. So in this case the ancient use was in the conusor at the time of levying the fine ; for it seemed to have been long settled, that a fine without any consideration, or uses thereof declared, should enure to the ancient use, in whomsoever it was, at the time of levying the fine ; and as it was here in the conusor, at the time, the judgement must be for the plaintiff. Armstrong  
v. Wholesey,  
2 Wils. R. 19.

25. Where a husband and wife levied a fine of the wife's estate, without any sufficient declaration of uses ; it was held that the use resulted back to the wife only ; because the estate in the land passed only Beckwith's  
Case,  
2 Rep. 58 a.  
Dyer, 146 b.

from her; and the husband joined with her only for conformity.

26. Where a person levies a fine of his estate to trustees, to certain uses, and does not declare any use of the estate during his own life, it will result to himself.

*Penhay v. Hurrell*,  
2 Vern. 370.  
2 Freem. 258.

27. A fine was levied to the use of trustees for 700 years, remainder to other trustees for 300 years, and from and after the death of the cognizor, to the use of his son for life, remainder to the first and other sons of such son in tail. It was resolved by the Lord Keeper, after consideration had with all the Judges, and a case, that as the cognizor had not limited away the freehold to any person during his life, it resulted back to himself.

*Wills v. Palmer*,  
2 Black. R. 687.  
*Fearne, Cont. Rem.* 45.  
6th edit.

28. Archdale Palmer, in consideration of the marriage of his son, settled an estate to the use of his son for life, remainder to his intended wife for life, remainder to the first and other sons of the marriage in tail, remainder to the heirs male of the body of Archdale Palmer, remainder over. It was resolved, that as the limitations to the son, and his first and other sons, might determine during the life of Archdale Palmer, a use resulted to him for life, expectant upon the determination of the estates limited to his son, &c.

29. But where the use is expressly limited away during the life of the grantor, no use can result to him.

*Tippin v. Coson*,  
4 Mod. 380.  
1 Ld. Raym. 33.

30. A person, in consideration of marriage, conveyed lands to trustees, to the use of himself and his heirs till the marriage, then to the use of his intended wife for life, for her jointure, remainder to trustees and their heirs during the life of the husband,

in trust to support contingent remainders, but to permit the husband to receive the rents and profits during his life, remainder to the first and other sons of the marriage in tail male, remainder to the heirs male of the husband by his then intended wife, remainder over. It was resolved that no use resulted to the husband, because there was an express estate limited to the trustees during his life.

31. The use will result according to the estate 2 Rep. 58 a. which the parties have in the land. Thus if there be two joint tenants, and they levy a fine without any declaration of uses, the use shall be to them of the same estate as they before had in the land. So if A. tenant for life, and B. in remainder or reversion, levy a fine generally, the use shall be to A. for life, the remainder or reversion to B. in fee. For each grants that which he may lawfully grant; and each shall have the use which the law vests in them, according to the estate which they convey over. So if A. seised in fee of an acre of land, and he and B. levy a fine of it to another, without consideration, the use shall be to A. only and his heirs: for a use, which is but a trust and confidence, and a thing in equity and conscience, shall be by operation of law to him who in truth was owner of the land, without having regard to estoppels or conclusions, which are averse from truth and equity.

32. It was determined in a modern case, where a fine was levied by a tenant for life, together with the remainder-man in tail, and the reversioner in fee; and a declaration of uses was executed by the tenant for life, and the remainder-man in tail only; that the use of the reversion in fee resulted to the reversioner, Roe v. Popham, Doug. Rep. 24.

33. It is somewhat doubtful, whether in the case of a lease and release without any declaration of uses, the

Vide Tit. 32.  
c. 11.

use results to the releasor; for reasons which will be stated when that mode of conveyance is explained. But if any particular use is declared on a lease and release, the residue of the use will result back to the releasor.

1 Inst. 22 b.

34. Where the same use is limited to the owner of the estate, which would have resulted to him, in case no declaration of that use had been made; the declaration is void, and he takes it as a resulting use.

Read and  
Morpeth v.  
Errington,  
Cro. Eliz.  
321.  
Moo. 284.  
2 Rep. 91 b.

35. Anthony Mitford being seised in fee of the estate in question, conveyed the same to the use of his eldest son and his wife, and the heirs male of the body of his son, remainder to the use of his own right heirs. It was resolved, that the use limited to the right heirs of Mitford was the ancient use, which was never out of him; and was in fact a reversion in him to grant or charge; and would descend from him to his heir if it had not been mentioned: that the limitation to his right heirs was therefore void, being no more than what the law had already vested in him.

Uses by  
Implication.

36. The same rule takes place in all conveyances to uses, which operate without transmutation of possession: as in covenants to stand seised, and bargains and sales, where the uses arise out of the estate of the covenantor or bargainor: for in these cases so much of the use as the covenantor or bargainor does not dispose of, still remains in him as his old estate; and is usually called a use by implication.

Pybus v.  
Mitford,  
1 Vent. 327.

37. A. being tenant in fee, covenanted to stand seised to the use of his heirs male, begotten, or to be begotten on the body of his second wife. It was determined that A. took an estate for life by implication: for the limitation being to the heirs of his body, &c. and it being impossible for him to have

any such heirs during his life, as *nemo est hæres viventis*, the use was undisposed of during his life, consequently remained in him.

38. It follows from the same principle, that where no use arises upon a covenant to stand seised, or bargain and sale, either for want of a sufficient consideration, or for any other cause, such use will remain in the covenantor or bargainor. Tit. 32. c. 10.

39. From the nature of resulting uses, and uses by implication; it follows, that they can never arise to any person but the original owner of the estate. No Use results but to the Owner of the Estate.

40. Husband and wife levied a fine of the wife's estate, to the use of the heirs of the body of the husband on the wife begotten; remainder to the husband in fee. It was resolved, that no estate resulted to the husband, because the lands originally belonged to the wife. This judgement was affirmed by the House of Lords. Davis v. Speed, Show. Ca. in Parl. 104.

41. Where there is any circumstance to show the intent of the parties to have been that the use should not result, it will remain in the persons to whom the legal estate is limited. Nor against the Intent of the Parties.

42. A recovery was suffered by one Hummerston, to the intent that the recoveror should make an estate to him and his wife for their lives, remainder to their eldest son in tail, &c. It was agreed by the Court, that after the recovery suffered, the recoverors should be seised to their own use; for if they were seised to the use of Hummerston, then they could not make the estate. But Southcot and Wray said they ought to do this in convenient time, otherwise the use would result to Hummerston. Hummerston's Case, Dyer, 166 a. n. 9.

43. A fine was levied, and an indenture made to declare the uses of it; the words of which were, "the fine was levied to the intent that they should make Idem.

an estate to him to whom J. E. the father (who was the cognizor) should name." And there was a proviso at the end of the indenture, that the cognizee should not be seised to any other use, except unto that use specified. It was holden by all the justices, that the lands should be to the use of the cognizees themselves, immediately as above: that after the nomination, they should be seised to the use of whomever he named; and if J. E. died without nomination, then the law would settle the use in his heir.

Winning-  
ton's Case,  
Jenk. Cent. 6.  
Ca. 44.

vide Altham  
v. Anglesey.

Thrustout  
v. Peake,  
Tit. 36. c. 2.

Parol Evi-  
dence al-  
lowed to  
show the  
Intent,  
Roe v. Pop-  
ham, Doug.  
24.

vide Tit. 32.  
c. 3.

11 Mod. 214.

Nor which is  
inconsistent  
with the  
Estate  
limited.

Dyer, 111 b.  
n. 46.

44. A feoffment was made by A. upon condition to reconvey to A. for life, remainder to the eldest son of A. in fee. It was resolved, that no use resulted to A.; for if so, then the estate would vest by the statute of uses, and the feoffee could not make an estate to A. and to his son.

45. As resulting uses depend on the intention of the parties, parole evidence is admissible, to show what the intent was: and the clause in the statute of frauds, requiring that declarations of trusts and confidences, which is held to include uses, should be made by some writing, signed by the party; extends, in cases of conveyances to uses, to third persons only; not to the persons conveying, or those to whom lands are conveyed to uses.

46. Where a use is expressly limited to the owner of the estate, he will not be allowed to take any resulting or implied use, inconsistent with the use limited to him.

47. At a moot in Lincoln's Inn Hall, Mr. Noy put this difference:—If a man makes a feoffment in fee to the use of himself for life, the fee simple remains in the feoffees, for otherwise he will not have an estate for life, according to his intention: But if the use

be limited to himself in tail, it is otherwise ; for both estates may be in him. Tit. 2. c. 1. § 38.

48. It was held in the Court of Wards, by Popham and Anderson, in the argument of the Earl of Bedford's case, that if A. makes a feoffment to the use of himself for forty years, and does not limit any other estate, the fee will not result, but will remain in the feoffees ; for otherwise the term would be merged. Idem.

49. One Savage being seised in fee, conveyed his estate, by lease and release, to trustees and their heirs, to the use of himself for 99 years, remainder to trustees for 25 years, remainder to the heirs male of his own body. It was determined that no use for life resulted to Savage, because that would be inconsistent with the term of 99 years expressly limited to him. Adams v. Savage, 2 Salk. 679.

50. A. by a settlement made on his marriage, conveyed certain lands to the use of himself for 99 years, if he so long lived, and after to the use of trustees for 200 years, remainder to the use of the heirs male of his own body, remainder to his own right heirs. Upon a case referred to the Judges of the Court of Common Pleas, from the Court of Chancery, they held that no estate of freehold could result to A. for his life, because another estate, viz. for 99 years, if he so long lived, was expressly limited to him ; which would be inconsistent with a resulting estate of freehold. Rawley v. Holland, 2 Ab. Eq. 753. 22 Vin. Ab. 188. pl. 11.

51. The doctrine of resulting uses only extends to those cases where an estate in fee simple passes. For if a person conveys an estate to another in tail, without any consideration, or declaration of uses, no use will result to the donor, and consequently the donee in tail will hold to his own use. For by a gift of this Nor on a Grant of an Estate Tail, for Life or Years.

Bro. Ab. Tit.  
Feoff. al, Use,  
pl. 10.

Dyer, 146 b.  
Perk. § 534,  
5.

kind there is a tenure created between the donor and the donee in tail, which amounts to a consideration, and prevents the use from resulting ; in the same manner as if a feoffment in fee had been made before the statute of *quia emptores terrarum*, the feoffee would have held the land to his own use because a tenure was thereby created ; in consequence of which he would have held of the feoffor by fealty at least.

Idem.

pa. 65.

52. In the same manner, if a person leases lands to another for life, or years, no use will result to the lessor. So if a lessee for life or years grants over his estate without any declaration of use, the grantee will have it to his own use. In Gilbert's Uses, the reason given for this doctrine is, that these lesser estates were not used to be delivered to be kept for the future support and provision of the family : therefore the mere act of delivering possession passed a right, without consideration ; since there was a presumption, from the use of the country, that these estates were transferred under secret trusts ; especially as rents were usually reserved ; and they were subject to waste, and other forfeitures.

53. In the case of a conveyance of an estate for life or years, without consideration, although a use should be declared of part of the estate to the grantee, yet there will be no resulting use to the grantor.

Castle  
v. Dod,  
Cro. Ja. 200.

54. A. being tenant for life, granted his estate to B. by fine, and by indenture declared the use to B. for the life of A. and B. ; and if B. died, living A., that it should remain to C. Afterwards B. died, living A. ; C. entered, and let to D. for years, and died, living A. The question was, whether the lessee should retain the land as an occupant, during the life



of A., or that A. should have it again as a resulting use.

“ It was adjudged, after argument, that D. should have it as an occupant, and that A. had not any residue of the use in him : for although where tenant in fee makes a deed of feoffment, and limits the use for life or in tail, and doth not speak of the residue, it shall be to the feoffor or conusor, because he had the ancient use in him in fee ; yet when tenant for life, or he who hath the particular estate, grants his estate by fine, and limits the use for years, or for a particular estate, it shall not return to him, but be to the conusee, although the fine were without any consideration ; because he who hath the particular estate by fine, is subject to the ancient rent and forfeiture ; which is a sufficient consideration to convey the estate to him.”

55. As a devise imports a bounty, it follows that it must be to the use of the devisee, if not otherwise expressed : and that no use can in any case result to the heirs of the devisor ; unless it appears by the will itself, that the devise was not made to the use of the devisee : if the use declared on the devise be void, the devise itself will be void. Nor on a Devise, Tit. 38. 1 Leon. 254.

56. Where a tenant in tail suffers a recovery of his estate, by which it is converted into an estate in fee simple, without declaring any uses thereof, it has been doubted whether the use which results to him be in tail or in fee. The language of the old books is, that where there is a feoffment, fine, or recovery, without consideration, or declaration of uses, these assurances shall enure to the old uses. What Use results to a Tenant in Tail.

57. Thus where a father tenant for life, and the son tenant in tail, joined in suffering a common reco- Argol v. Cheney, Latch. 82.

very, but the father alone executed the deed declaring the uses; the court directed the jury to find the uses according to the estates which the parties had at the time of suffering the recovery.

Waker  
v. Snow,  
Palm. 359.

58. So where a father tenant for life, and the son tenant in tail, suffered a common recovery, without any declaration of the uses to which it should enure; it was held that it enured to the former uses.

9 Rep. 11 a.

Gilb. Uses,  
64.

59. The doctrine laid down in the above cases is liable to great objections; for as resulting uses are guided by the intent of the parties, it follows that where a tenant in tail suffers a recovery without any declaration of uses, the presumption is, that this act was done for the special purpose of acquiring the absolute dominion over his estate; as it cannot be supposed that he would go to the expence of suffering a recovery, if he was only to acquire the same estate which he had before: and it has been admitted in the following case, that where a tenant in tail suffers a common recovery without any declaration of uses, the resulting use is to him in fee simple.

Nightingale  
v. Ferrers,  
3 P. Wms.  
207.

60. Earl Ferrers being tenant for life, with remainder to his first and other sons in tail male, and having an eldest son Robert, who was about seventeen years old, and several other sons, a very advantageous match had been agreed on between such eldest son and a young lady; and articles were entered into by Earl Ferrers and his son, whereby Earl Ferrers covenanted that he and his son should within a year after his son came of age, by fine or recovery, settle the bulk of his estate to the use of his son for life, remainder to his first and other sons in tail, &c. The marriage took effect, and the eldest son Robert, when he came of age, joined with his father in levying a fine and

suffering a common recovery, but there was no declaration of uses. The son died, leaving an only daughter and no son.

It appears from the case that the estates of which the recovery was suffered descended to the, only daughter of Robert the son, who had joined his father in the recovery, and had not declared any uses. Now if the recovery had enured, as to Robert the son's estate, to the old uses, he would have been tenant in tail male, with remainder to his brothers in tail male, successively; and upon his death without issue male, the estate would have vested in his next brother, not in his daughter. But it was so fully admitted by the counsel of Earl Ferrers, who was party to that suit, and who was a younger brother of Robert the son, who suffered the recovery, that in case of no declaration of uses, the use and estate resulted to Robert the son in fee; that the only point for which they contended was, that the articles executed by Robert the son, while an infant, and under which they claimed, amounted to a good declaration of the uses of the recovery.

61. This doctrine has been confirmed by the highest modern authorities. Thus Lord Hardwicke has said, "I take it for law that a tenant in tail suffering a recovery is in of the old use, and that the estate is discharged of the statute *De Donis*:" and in another case, "A common recovery will bar the entail, though there is no deed to lead the uses; because it is in respect of the satisfaction of estate in value, which creates the bar." And Lord C. J. Lee has said, "It is the use of the fee simple that passes to the recoveror from tenant in tail, and which results to him and his heirs, if no use is declared."

1 Atk. 9.

3 Atk. 313.

5 Term R.  
107. note.

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                |                                                                                                                                                                                                         |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 61. <i>Renewal of a Lease by a Trustee.</i><br>63. <i>Or by a Person having a particular Estate.</i><br>65. <i>Where there is Fraud.</i><br>66. <i>Trusts of Copyholds.</i><br>72. <i>A Purchase in the Name of a Child is an Advancement.</i> | 80. <i>Exception, Children emancipated.</i><br>82. <i>And also a Wife.</i><br>85. <i>No Trust between Lessor and Lessee.</i><br>87. <i>All Trusts are executory.</i><br>89. <i>Who may be Trustees.</i> |
|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

---

### SECTION 1.

Origin of  
Trusts.

**T**HE object and intention of the statute 27 Hen. VIII. certainly was to destroy that double property in land, which had been introduced into the English law, by the invention of uses; for which purpose the statute enacted, that the legal seisin and possession should be transferred to the use. If therefore the intention of the Legislature had been carried into full effect, no use could ever after have existed for more than an instant. But the strict construction which the Judges put on that statute defeated, in a great measure, its intent; as they determined that there were some uses to which the statute did not transfer the possession. So that uses were not entirely abolished, but still continued separate and distinct from the legal estate; and were taken notice of, and supported by the Court of Chancery, under the name of trusts.

Vaugh. 50.  
1 Atk. 591.

2. A trust is therefore a use not executed by the statute 27 Hen. VIII. For originally the words use and trust were perfectly synonymous, and are both mentioned in the statute. But as the provisions of the statute were not deemed coextensive with the various modes of creating uses, such uses as were not provided for by the statute, were left to their former jurisdiction.

1 Black. Rep.  
136.

3. A trust estate may be described to be a right in equity to take the rents and profits of lands, whereof the legal estate is vested in some other person; and to compel the person thus seised of the legal estate, who is called the trustee, to execute such conveyances of the land as the person entitled to the profits, who is called the *cestui que trust*, shall direct: in the mean time the *cestui que trust*, when in possession, is considered, in a court of law, to be tenant at will to the trustee.

Descrip-  
tion of.

1 Show. R.  
73.

4. There are three direct modes of creating a trust. The first arises from a rule established in 4 & 5 Philip and Mary; that a use could not be limited on a use. The reason given by Lord Bacon for this determination is, because the words of the statute are, "Where any person is seised of any lands or tenements." Which excludes uses, as they do not fall within either of those descriptions.

A Use limited  
upon a Use.

Tyrrell's  
Case, Dyer,  
155 a.

Bac. Read. 43.

5. Thus, on a feoffment to A. and his heirs, to the use of B. and his heirs, in trust for C. and his heirs, it was held that the statute executed only the first use: and that the second was a mere nullity. But as it was evident that B. was not intended to be benefited by that conveyance, the Court of Chancery took cognizance of the case; and decreed that B. should pay the rents and profits of the land to C. and execute such conveyances as he should direct.

2 Comm. 336.

6. In a settlement, lands were conveyed to trustees and their heirs, to the use of them and their heirs, to the use of A. B. for life, &c. It was held that the legal estate was vested in the trustees, and that the limitations to A. B. &c. were but trusts.

Whetstone  
v. Bury,  
2 P. Wms.  
146.

Wagstaff v.  
Wagstaff,  
Tit. 38. c. 5.

Att. Gen. v.  
Scott, Forrest  
R. 138.

7. Ann Ratford conveyed lands to T. B. and his heirs, to the use of him and his heirs, in trust to permit the said Ann and her husband to receive the profits during their lives. Lord Talbot held, that as the estate was limited to trustees and their heirs, to the use of them and their heirs, so that it was actually executed in them, whatever came afterwards could be looked upon only as an equitable interest; for there could not be a use upon a use.

Venables  
v. Morris,  
7 Term R.  
342, 438.

8. An estate was limited by deed and fine to the use of the husband for life, remainder to trustees and their heirs, during his life, to preserve contingent remainders; remainder to the wife for life, remainder to trustees and their heirs generally, and not during the life of the wife, to preserve the contingent uses and estates thereafter limited, remainder to such persons as the wife should appoint, &c.

Upon a case sent from the Court of Chancery, the Court of K. B. certified, that the trustees took a legal estate in fee, after the determination of the wife's estate; and that all the subsequent limitations were trusts.

Tit. 32. c. 10  
& 14.

9. Where lands are conveyed by covenant to stand seised, bargain and sale, or appointment under a power, to A. and his heirs, to the use of B. and his heirs, the legal estate will be vested in A., and B. will only take a trust.

Hopkins v.  
Hopkins,  
1 Atk. 581.  
Marwood  
v. Darrell,  
Ca. Temp.  
Hard. 91.  
S. P.

10. In the case of a devise, the rule is the same. Thus where a person devised his real estate to trustees and their heirs, to the use of them and their heirs, upon several trusts; it was declared by Lord Hardwicke that the legal estate was vested in the trustees, and the subsequent devisees only took trusts.

11. In a case of a devise to trustees to several uses, which was exactly similar to that of *Venables v. Morris*, Lord Thurlow held that the trustees took the legal estate. But in a subsequent case the Court of King's Bench held, that where it was not necessary for the trustees to take the legal estate, and the intention of the testator appeared to be, that the estate limited to the trustees should be confined to the lives of the tenants for life, the devise ought to be construed accordingly. And it has been held by Sir W. Grant, that this doctrine is applicable to the case of a deed.,

*Boteler v. Allington*,  
1 Bro. Rep.  
72.  
ante, § 8.

*Doe v. Hicks*,  
7 Term R.  
433.  
*Curtis v. Price*,  
12 Ves. 89.

12. The second mode of creating a trust arose from an opinion which was delivered by the Judges in 36 Hen. VIII., that where a man made a feoffment in fee, to his own use, during his life, and after his decease that J. N. should take the profits, this was a use in J. N.; contrary, if he said that after his death his feoffees should take the profits and deliver them to J. N. This would be no use in J. N., because he could have them only by the hand of the feoffees. Thus the feoffees would have the legal estate, and consequently J. N. could only have a trust, which would be enforced in equity.

*Limitation to Trustees to pay over the Rents.*

*Bro. Ab. Feoffm. al. Use 52.*

13. This rule has been applied to devises; but a distinction has been made between a devise to a person, in trust to pay over the rents and profits to another, and a devise in trust to permit some other person to receive the rents and profits. In the first case it was held that the legal estate should continue in the first devisee, in order that he might be able to perform the trust; for where he is directed to pay over the rents, he must necessarily receive them. But in the second case it has been adjudged that the legal

estate is vested, by the statute, in the person who is to receive the rents.

Broughton  
v. Langley,  
2 Ld. Raym.  
873.

14. Lands were devised to trustees and their heirs, to the intent to permit A. to receive the rents for his life, &c. It was determined that this would have been a plain trust at common law; and what at common law was a trust of a freehold, was executed by the statute; which mentioned the word trust, as well as use. And that the case of *Burchett v. Durdant*, which had been determined otherwise, was not law.

2 Vent. 312.

Trust for the  
separate Use  
of a Woman.

15. Where an estate is conveyed or devised to trustees for the separate use of a woman; the Courts will, if possible, construe the devise so as to vest the legal estate in the trustees; because such a construction will best effectuate the intention of the donor.

Neville v.  
Saunders,  
1 Vern. 415.

16. Lands were devised to trustees and their heirs, in trust for a married woman and her heirs; and that the trustees should from time to time pay and dispose of the rents to the said married woman, for her separate use. The Court held it to be a trust only, and not a use executed by the statute.

South v.  
Alleyne,  
5 Mod. 63.  
101.  
1 Salk. 228.

17. A testator gave all the rents of certain lands to a married woman, during her life; to be paid by his executors into her own hands, without the intermeddling of her husband.

Lord Chief Justice Holt was of opinion that the executors took the legal estate, as trustees for the wife; but the other Judges were of a contrary opinion. Lord Holt's opinion was however fully established in the following case.

Say & Sele  
v. Jones,  
1 Ab. Eq.  
383.

18. Lands were devised to trustees and their heirs, in trust to pay several legacies and annuities, and then to pay the surplus rents into the proper hands



**f a married woman ; and after her decease, that the trustees should stand seised to the use of the heirs of her body. It was decreed, that this was a use executed in the trustees during the life of the married woman ; but that after her decease, the legal estate vested in the heirs of her body. This decree was affirmed by the House of Lords, after consulting the Judges.**

3 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 113.

**19. In the preceding case, the direction to the trustees to pay annuities, and the trust to pay the surplus, would have justified the decree. But in a modern case sent out of Chancery, an estate was devised to trustees and their heirs, upon trust to permit the testator's niece, who was married, to receive the rents during her life, for her separate use. Lord Kenyon said, that whether this were a use executed in the trustees or not, must depend upon the intention of the deviser. This provision was made to secure to a feme covert a separate allowance, to effectuate which it was essentially necessary that the trustees should take the estate, with the use executed, for otherwise the husband would be entitled to receive the profits, and so defeat the object of the deviser. The court certified that the legal estate, by way of use executed in fee simple, vested in the trustees ; that construction being necessary to give legal effect to the testator's intention ; to secure the beneficial interest to the separate use of the feme covert.**

Harton v.  
Harton,  
7 Term R.  
652.

**20. Where lands are devised to trustees, in trust to sell or mortgage, in order to raise money for payment of debts, and subject thereto in trust for a third person ; the trustees will take the legal estate. For otherwise it would not be in their power to execute the trust.**

Trust to sell  
or to raise  
Money.

Bagshaw v.  
Spencer,  
1 Ves. 142.  
Collect Jur.  
V. I. 378.

21. A person devised all his lands to five trustees their heirs and assigns, in trust that they and their heirs should in the first place, by the rents and profits, or by sale or mortgage of the premises, raise so much money as should be necessary for the payment of his debts; after payment thereof, he gave the same to his trustees for 500 years, without impeachment of waste, upon several trusts. And then proceeded in these words: "And from and after the determination of the said estate for years, then I give and devise all my said lands, &c. unto my said trustees, their heirs and assigns; my mind being, that my said trustees shall be and stand seised of the said premises in trust for the several uses, &c. after declared; viz. as for one moiety of the same premises I give and devise the same to the use and behoof of my nephew T. Bagshaw, for the term of his natural life, &c." One of the questions in this case was, whether the estate devised to the nephew was a legal or a trust estate.

Lord Hardwicke held that the devise to the nephew was merely a trust in equity; the first devise being to the trustees and their heirs, it carried the whole fee in point of law. Part of their trust was to sell the whole or a sufficient part for payment of debts. This would have carried a fee by construction without the word heirs. The consequence of this was, that here being the whole fee, in law, devised to the trustees, no remainder of a legal estate could be limited upon it; and T. Bagshaw took only a trust.

Wright v.  
Pearson,  
Fearne, Cont.  
Rem. 187.

22. This mode of construction is adopted in cases of deeds, as well as in cases of devises.

Keen v.  
Deardon,  
8 East. 248.

23. Lord Byron being tenant for life, with remainder to his son in tail, they suffered recoveries

and conveyed estates in Lancashire and Nottinghamshire to the use of trustees and their heirs, in trust to sell the Nottinghamshire estate for payment of debts. As to the Lancashire estate, in trust to sell it, and to apply the money in the purchase of other lands, to be settled on Lord Byron for life, remainder to his son in fee. With a proviso that the rents should, till sale, be received by the persons who would have been entitled to them, if no recovery had been suffered.

It was held, that the use of the Lancashire estate was executed in the trustees; that as to the proviso that the rents, till sale, should be received as before, that was nothing more 'than the common provision in such cases, and did not carry the legal estate.

24. In the case of a devise to trustees for particular purposes, the courts will consider the legal estate as vested in the trustees, as long as the execution of the trust requires it, and no longer: and will therefore, as soon as the trusts are satisfied, consider the legal estate as vested in the persons who are beneficially entitled to it.

25. Thus, in the case of *Say and Sele v. Jones*, the legal estate was held to be vested in the trustees during the life of the married woman. But upon her decease, it was considered as vested in the heirs of her body. ante, § 18.

26. So, where a person devised to trustees all his real estates, arrears of rent, and a bond and judgment; in trust, out of the rents and profits and arrears due, to pay an annuity of 50 l. to his sister H. for her life, and another annuity of 50 l. to his sister D. for life; after payment thereof, then in trust, out of the residue of the rents, to pay to his brother and nephew 800 l. in trust for the benefit of the children of another brother. After payment of the annuities, Doe v. Simpson, 5 East. 162.

and the sum of 800 *l.* he devised his estates to his brother W. for life, &c. The testator further gave the trustees a power to grant building and other leases.

It was resolved, that the trustees took the legal estate for the lives of the annuitants; with such a term for years in remainder as was necessary to raise the 800 *l.*; and that, subject thereto, the limitation for life to W. took effect as a legal limitation.

27. Where lands are devised to trustees, charged with the payment of debts, upon trust for a third person, the trustees will not take the legal estate.

Kenrick v.  
Beauclerc,  
3 Bos. & Pull.  
175.

28. A person devised his real estates, and also his personal estate, to trustees and their heirs; to the intent that they should, in the first place, apply his personal estate in payment of his debts; and as to his real estates, subject to his debts, he devised the same to R. P. for and during his life, &c.

The Court of Common Pleas held that this was a mere devise charged with the payment of debts; for it did not appear that the testator intended the trustees should be active in paying the debts. It would be more convenient that the legal estate should be vested in the trustees; but this was only an argument *ab inconvenienti*, from which they could not construe the testator to have said, what in fact he had not said.

Or for any  
other Pur-  
pose to which  
a Seisin is  
necessary.

29. It is now settled, that where an estate is devised to one, for the benefit of another, the courts will execute the use in the first or second devisee, as appears best to suit with the intention of the testator: from which it follows, that whenever an estate is devised to trustees, and they are required to do any act, to which the seisin and possession of the legal estate is necessary, although they be directed to permit the rents and profits to be received by another

Fearne's Op.  
422.

erson, still that person will only be entitled to a trust estate ; for otherwise the trustees would not have the means of executing the trust.

30. J. B. devised all his real and personal estate to three trustees, their heirs and assigns, in trust to pay his son Isaac 37 l. quarterly ; and if he married with consent, then double the sum : if he should have any children, he gave the residue of the rents of his said trust estate, to be applied, during the life of his son, for the education of such child or children : he then gave one moiety of the trust estate to such child or children of his son as he should leave, and the other moiety to the child or children of his grandson J. D.

*Chapman v. Blisset, Forrest R. 145.*

Lord Talbot said, the whole depended on the testator's intent, as to the continuance of the estate devised to the trustees ; whether he intended the whole legal estate to continue in them, or whether only for a particular time or purpose. If an estate were limited to A. and his heirs, in trust for B. and his heirs, there it is executed in B. and his heirs. But where particular things are to be done by the trustees ; as in this case, the several payments that were to be made to the several persons ; it was necessary that the estate should remain in them ; so long at least as those particular purposes required it.

31. Lands were devised to trustees, upon trust that they should, every year, after deducting rates, taxes, repairs, and expences, pay such clear sum as should remain to A. B. Lord Thurlow held that the trustees, being to pay the taxes and repairs, must have an interest in the premises ; therefore that the legal estate was vested in them.

*Shapland v. Smith, 1 Bro. R. 75. Fearne's Op. 421.*

*Vide 2 Cox's Rep. 145.*

32. A person devised lands to trustees and their heirs, upon trust to take and receive the rents and profits thereof, and to apply the same for the

*Silvester v. Wilson, 2 Term R. 444.*

subsistence and maintenance of his son, ~~during~~ his life.. It was determined that the son had only a trust.

A Trust  
Estate  
limited after  
Payment of  
Debts vests  
immediately.

33. Where an estate is conveyed or devised to trustees and their heirs, upon trust to pay debts generally, or debts particularly specified; and after payment of such debts, in trust for A. B., or in trust to convey such parts of the premises to A. B. as shall remain unsold; A. B. has an immediate trust estate in the surplus, upon the execution of the deed, or the death of the testator. For in cases of this kind, the payment of the debts is not a condition precedent, which must be performed before the subsequent limitation or devise can take effect; but an interest commencing at the same time, and concurrent with the estate given to the trustees. For the words, “after payment of debts,” or, “when the debts are paid,” only denote the order or course in which the several interests shall take place, in point of actual possession, and perception of profits; without preventing the subsequent estates, whether legal or equitable, from being vested in interest, at the same time with those which are prior to them in point of limitation.

Collect. Jur.  
Vol. 1. 214.  
and Tit. 36.  
c. 8.

Terms for  
Years limited  
in Trust.  
Dyer, 369 a.

34. The third mode of creating a trust estate arises from the answer of all the Judges in 22 Eliz. upon a question put to them by the Lord Chancellor, that where a term for years was granted to A. to the use of, or in trust for B., the legal estate in the term remained in A., and was not executed in B. by the statute of uses. For the words of the statute are, “Where any person is *seised* to the use of another.”

Bac. Read.  
42.

Tit. 8. c. 1.  
§ 23.

Whereas in this case, A. is not *seised*, not having a freehold, but is only possessed of the term, the word *seised* being only applicable to a freehold estate. So that in cases of this kind the person to whose use the term was declared, was driven into the Court of

hancery for his remedy; where the trustee was compelled to account with him for the rents and profits of the term; and to assign it to him, when required\*.

35. By the statute 29 Cha. II. c. 3. § 7. it is enacted, “that all declarations or creations of trusts or confidences, of any lands, tenements, or hereditaments, shall be manifested and proved by some writing, signed by the party who is by law enabled to declare such trust; or by his last will in writing; or else they shall be utterly void and of none effect.”

How Trusts may be declared.

Tit. 38. c. 10.

36. A declaration of trust requires no particular form, provided it be proved or manifested in writing: therefore a letter from a trustee, disclosing the trust, will be sufficient.

In a modern case Lord Alvanley, M. R. said it was not required by the statute that a trust should be created by writing; for the words of the statute were very particular in the clause respecting declarations of trust. It did not by any means require that all trusts should be created only by writing; but that they should be manifested and proved by writing. Plainly meaning that there should be evidence in writing, proving that there was such a trust. Therefore unquestionably it was not necessarily to be created by writing, but it must be evidenced by writing; then the statute was complied with, and the great danger of parol declarations, against which the statute was intended to guard, was entirely taken away; it must however be proved *in toto*; not only that there was a trust, but what it was.

Forster v. Pittal,  
3 Ves. Jun.  
696.

12 Ves. 74.

---

\* There may be a trust of a rent, as well as of land; of which an account will be given in Title XXVIII. Rents.



37. Where a trust is confessed in an answer in Chancery, it will be sufficient.

Hampton v. Spencer,  
2 Vern. 288.

38. A. in consideration of 80*l.* conveyed land to B. absolutely. A. brought a bill to redeem. B. by his answer insisted that the conveyance was absolute; but confessed, that after the 80*l.* was paid with interest, it was to be in trust for the plaintiff's wife and children. This was held to be a sufficient declaration of trust.

Cottington v. Fletcher,  
2 Atk. 155.

Resulting  
or implied  
Trusts.

39. Besides the above-mentioned direct modes of creating trust estates, there are several other cases where trusts arise from the evident intention of the parties, and the nature of the transaction; which are enforced in equity, and usually called resulting trusts, or trusts by implication. These are expressly saved by a clause in the statute of frauds, § 8, by which it is provided, "that where any conveyance shall be made of any lands or tenements, by which a trust or confidence shall or may arise, or result by implication, or construction of law, or be transferred or extinguished by an act or operation of law; then and in every such case, such trust or confidence shall be of the like force and effect, as the same would have been if the statute had not been made."

1 P. Wms.  
112.

It has been held by Lord Cowper, that this clause must relate to trusts, and equitable interests, and cannot relate to a use, which is now a legal estate.

Contract for  
a Purchase,  
1 Cha. Ca.  
39.  
9 Mod. 78.  
Ripley v.  
Waterworth,  
7 Ves. 425.

40. Where a contract is entered into for the purchase of a real estate, a trust immediately results to the purchaser; the vendor becomes a trustee for him till a conveyance of the legal estate is made; and his interest becomes personalty, consisting merely of a right to the purchase money.

Purchase in  
the Name of  
a Stranger.

41. Where an estate is purchased in the name of one person, and the consideration is given or paid by



another; there is a resulting trust in favour of the person who gave or paid the consideration.

42. Thus it was resolved by the Court of Chancery in 35 Cha. II. that where a man bought land in another's name, and paid the money, it would be a trust for him, who paid the money, though no deed declaring the trust; for the statute 29 Cha. II. did not extend to trusts raised by operation of law.

Anon.  
2 Vent. 361.  
1 Vern. 109.  
2 Atk. 71.  
150.  
Dyer v. Dyer,  
1 Watk. Cop.  
216.

43. Lord Hardwicke has said, that where a purchase is made, the purchase money being paid by one, and the conveyance taken in the name of another, there was a resulting trust for the person who paid the consideration. This was where the whole consideration moved from such person. But he never knew it, where the consideration moved from several persons; for that would introduce all the mischiefs which the statute of frauds was intended to prevent. Suppose several persons agreed to purchase an estate in the name of one, and the purchase money by the deed appeared to be paid by him only; he did not know any case where such persons should come into the Court of Chancery, and say, they paid the purchase money; but it was expected there should be a declaration of trust.

44. In all cases of this kind the payment of the money must be proved by clear and undoubted evidence; for otherwise a court of equity will not interfere. But evidence of any kind, even parol evidence, is admissible to rebut a resulting trust, and to shew a purchaser's intention, that the estate should belong to the person in whose name the conveyance was taken; upon the same principle that parol evidence is admissible to rebut a resulting use.

Finch v.  
Finch,  
15 Ves. 43.

Tit. 11. c. 4.

45. Thus, in a case in 1693, the counsel contended, that where there was an express trust declared,

Bellasis v.  
Compton,  
2 Vern. 294.

though but by parol, there could be no resulting trust; for resulting trusts were saved indeed by the statute of frauds, but only as they were before that act. Now a bare declaration by parol, before the act, would prevent any resulting trust. The Court seemed to be of that opinion.

Lamplugh v.  
Lamplugh  
1 P. Wms.  
111.

46. A father purchased lands in the names of his younger son and nephew; but in the conveyance the whole purchase money was mentioned to be paid by the father; who took the profits during his life, and died, leaving the younger son an infant. The eldest son brought his bill against the younger son, and the nephew; insisting that the money being mentioned in the deed to have been paid by the father, this made the defendants trustees for the father; consequently for the plaintiff.

It was resolved that parol evidence should be admitted to show the intention of the father, that this conveyance was for the benefit and advancement of the younger son: because it concurred with the conveyance, and was only to rebut a pretended resulting trust.

Purchase  
with Trust  
Money.

47. It was formerly doubted, whether in the case of a purchase made by a trustee with trust money, a resulting trust would arise to the person entitled to the money; because that would be to contradict the deed by parol evidence, in direct opposition to the statute of frauds. It has however been since determined, that evidence *aliunde* is admissible to show that the purchase was made with trust money. And where that circumstance has been clearly proved, a trust will result to the owner of the money.

Ryal v. Ryal,  
Amb. 413.

48. A bill was brought by the legatees of John Ryal against the executrix and heir at law of

**Jonathan Ryal**, for satisfaction out of his assets, and as against the heir at law, to have satisfaction out of an estate purchased by Jonathan Ryal, as the plaintiff insisted, with the assets of John Ryal the original testator. The defendant the executrix admitted, that as to one particular estate, it appeared by her testator's papers, that it was purchased with 250*l.* of the testator's money: proof was read that Jonathan Ryal, after the testator's death, purchased several estates; and before that time was a poor person, not able to pay for them out of his own money. The counsel for the plaintiff insisted that the heir at law was to be considered as a trustee for them, as far as the estate appeared to be purchased with the assets of John Ryal. On the other side it was contended that money could not be followed into land.

Lord Hardwicke said, the Court had been very cautious in following money into land, but had done it in some cases. No one would say but the Court would, if it was actually proved that the money was laid out in land. The doubt with the Court in these cases had been on the proof. There was difficulty in admitting proof; parol proof might let in perjury: but it had always been done, when the fact had been admitted in the answer of the person laying it out. If the executor of John Ryal had been a party, and admitted it, there would have been no doubt; but the admission was by his representative, which, though it did not bind the heir, was ground for inquiry. The way of charging the heir was by considering him as a trustee; as when lands were purchased by one, in the name of another, it was a resulting trust by law, and out of the statute; and upon inquiry a little would do to make it a charge *pro tanto*.

It was referred to the Master to inquire whether the estate was purchased with 250*l.* of the testator's money, or not.

49. Although a trustee for a purchase should buy land, yet it will not be liable to the trust, unless there are circumstances affording a strong presumption that the land was bought with the trust money.

Perry v.  
Phillips,  
4 Ves. 108.

50. T. Lockyer having a considerable property devised to him, in trust to lay it out in the purchase of lands, bought several real estates, but died without personal assets. A bill was filed by those who would have been entitled to the estates directed to be purchased, praying that the deficiency of the personal estate of Lockyer should be made good out of the real estates which he had purchased. There was no evidence that the lands were purchased with the trust money. It was contended, on behalf of the plaintiffs, that where a man is bound to do an act, and does what may enable him to do it, he shall be taken to have done that, in pursuance of what he was bound to do; and that between representatives.

Lord Rosslyn declared that the plaintiffs had no lien on the estates purchased by Lockyer; being creditors by simple contract only. If there had been any ground to presume that the purchase had been made with the trust money, it would have been otherwise.

17 Ves. 173.

On a bill of review, the decree was affirmed by Lord Eldon.

Conveyance  
without Con-  
sideration.

51. Where the legal estate in lands is conveyed to a stranger, without any consideration, there is a resulting trust to the original owner; in conformity to the old doctrine, that where a feoffment was made without consideration, the use resulted to the feoffor.

Tit. 11. c. 4.

52. The Duke of Norfolk executed a grant of the next avoidance of a church to a clergyman, who was much employed by him: but the grantee knew nothing of it; and being examined in a cause, deposed that he did not purchase it of the duke. It was decreed to be a resulting trust for the grantor; there being no trust declared.

Norfolk v. Browne,  
1 Ab. Eq.  
381.  
Prec. in Cha.  
80.

53. In the case of voluntary settlements and wills, if there is no declaration of the trust of a term, it results to the settlor: otherwise where it is a settlement for a valuable consideration, and in the nature of a contract for the benefit of a wife, or children.

1 Atk. 191.

54. Where the legal estate in lands is conveyed to a trustee, and a trust is declared, as to part only, nothing being said of the rest; what remains undisposed of results to the original owner.

A Trust  
declared  
in Part.  
Lloyd v.  
Spillett,  
2 Atk. 150.

55. Lord Foley devised his estates to trustees for a term of 99 years, remainder to his eldest son for life, remainder to his first and other sons in tail, remainder to his second son in the same manner. The trust of the term for years was to pay off certain scheduled debts, and to make an annual allowance to his two sons for their support. The scheduled debts being stated to be paid; a bill was filed by other creditors of the sons of the testator, against the trustees, praying that the term might be declared to be attendant on the inheritance, and the trustees restrained from setting up the term to defeat any ejectment or other remedy which the plaintiffs might be advised to pursue for recovery of their debts.

Davidson  
v. Foley,  
2 Bro. R.  
203.

Lord Thurlow said, the rule of law was, that where the trusts of a term were exhausted, a trust resulted, for want of a further disposition, to the legal tenants. In his judgement these must be resulting trusts, and therefore must go to the tenant for life.

Habergham  
v. Vincent,  
2 Ves. Jun.  
204.

Or which  
cannot take  
Effect.

Prec. in Cha.  
162—541.  
3 P. Wms.  
20.  
Gravenor  
v. Hallum,  
Amb. 643.

Digby v.  
Legard,  
3 P. Wms.  
22. n.

Ackroyd v.  
Smithson,  
1 Bro. R.  
503. 2d Edit.

Exception.

Hill v. Epis.  
London,  
1 Atk. 618.

56. In the same manner, where the whole of an estate is conveyed for particular purposes, or on particular trusts only, which by accident or otherwise cannot take effect, a trust will result to the original owner, or his heir: as where a testator devises real estates to trustees, in trust to sell, and to apply the purchase money in a particular manner, and such purpose cannot be effected; the fund, though money, will be considered as land, and result to the heir.

57. A woman devised her real and personal estate to trustees, in trust to sell and pay debts and legacies; and to pay the residue to five persons, to be equally divided between them. One of the residuary legatees died in the lifetime of the testatrix, by which her legacy became lapsed.

It was decreed by Lord Bathurst, that this was a resulting trust, as to the share of the person who died in the lifetime of the testatrix, for the benefit of the heir.

58. The rule, that where lands are devised for a particular purpose, what remains after that purpose is satisfied, results to the heir, admits of several exceptions.

59. R. Smith devised an advowson to Grace Smith, willing and desiring her to sell and dispose of the same to Eton College; and on their refusal, to Trinity College, Oxford, &c. Soon after the death of the testator, Grace Smith presented a person to the living; upon which the heirs at law of the testator filed their bill, praying that the Bishop might be enjoined from accepting the presentee of Grace Smith; insisting that the testator did not intend the then avoidance should go to Grace Smith; but that she ought to be considered altogether as a trustee for the heirs at law of the testator.

Lord Hardwicke said, the general question was, whether there was a resulting trust or not: on the first hearing he inclined to think there was, but he had changed his opinion entirely. The general rule, that where lands were devised for a particular purpose, what remained resulted, admitted of several exceptions. If J. S. devised lands to A. to sell them to B. for the particular advantage of B., that advantage is the only purpose to be served, according to the intent of the testator; and to be satisfied by the mere act of selling, let the money go where it will. Yet there was no precedent of a resulting trust, in such a case. Nor was there any warrant from the words or intent of the testator to say, the devise severed the beneficial interest, but was only an injunction on the devisee to enjoy the thing devised in a particular manner. If A. devised lands to J. S., to sell for the best price to B., or to lease for three years at such a fine; there was no resulting trust. So that the devise here amounted to no more than this: the testator gave the advowson to G. Smith; but if such or such a college would buy it, then he laid an injunction upon her to sell; therefore there were two objects of the testator's benevolence; Grace Smith, and the Colleges.

King v. Dennison, 1 Ves. & Beam. 260.

60. Where a person makes a conveyance of the legal estate to trustees, upon such trusts, and for such intents and purposes as he shall appoint, and never makes an appointment, there will be a resulting trust to him and his heirs. For the trust in equity must follow the rules of law in the case of a use.

Where no Appointment is made. Fitzg. 223.

Clere's Case, Tit. 11. c. 4.

61. It has been long settled, that where a trustee takes a renewal of a lease in his own name, the renewed lease shall, in equity, be subject to the former trust.

Renewal of a Lease by a Trustee.



1 Cha. Ca.  
191.  
1 Vern. 276.  
484.

This doctrine is founded on general policy, to prevent fraud : for as the trustee's situation in respect to the estate, gives him access to the landlord, it would be dangerous to permit him to make use of that access for his own benefit.

Keech v.  
Sandford,  
Sel. Ca. in  
Cha. 61.

62. A lease of the profits of Rumford market was devised to a trustee, in trust for an infant ; before the expiration of the term, the trustee applied to the lessor for a renewal, for the benefit of the infant, which he refused ; in regard that it being only the profits of a market, there could be no distress ; and the only security for payment of the rent would be a covenant, which the infant could not enter into. The trustee then took a lease for his own benefit.

Blewett v.  
Millett,  
7 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 367.  
Killick v.  
Flexney,  
4 Bro. R.  
161.  
James v.  
Dean,  
11 Ves. 383.  
Fitzgibbon  
v. Scanlan,  
1 Dow. 261.

It was decreed by Lord King, that the lease should be assigned to the infant : that the trustee should account for the profits, since the renewal, and be indemnified from the covenants in the lease. He said he must consider this as a trust for the infant ; for if a trustee, on a refusal to renew, might have a lease to himself, few trust estates would be renewed by the *cestui que trust*. That the trustee should rather have let it run out, than have taken a lease himself. It might seem hard that the trustee was the only person of all mankind who could not have the lease ; but it was very proper that rule should be strictly pursued, and not in the least relaxed. For it was very obvious what would be the consequence of letting trustees take leases, on a refusal to renew to the *cestui que trust*.

Or by a Per-  
son having a  
particular  
Estate.

63. This doctrine has been extended to the case of persons having only a particular and limited interest in a leasehold.



**64.** Thus where a tenant for life of a crown lease, under a marriage settlement, got a reversionary renewal of the lease ; it was decreed by Sir T. Sewell, M. R., that it should go to the uses of the settlement ; and the decree was affirmed by Lord Camden.

*Taster v. Marriot,*  
Amb. 668.  
734.  
*Lee v. Vernon,*  
5 Bro. Parl. Ca. 10.

**65.** Where any fraud is committed in obtaining a conveyance, the grantee in such conveyance will be considered in equity as a trustee for the person who has been defrauded.

*Where there is Fraud.*  
2 Atk. 150.

**66.** It has been stated that the statute of uses does not extend to copyhold estates : therefore if a copyhold is surrendered to A. to the use of B., the legal estate will not be transferred to B. ; but he will be entitled in equity to the rents and profits, and to call upon A. for a surrender of the estate.

*Trusts of Copyholds.*

**67.** It appears to have been held in a modern case, that copyholds are not within the seventh section of the statute of frauds, for this applies only to cases where the legal and equitable estates are separated. But there may be a resulting or implied trust of a copyhold, as well as of a freehold estate.

*Doe v. Danvers,*  
7 East, 299.

**68.** Thus where copyhold estates are granted for lives, the person who pays the consideration will be deemed the real owner ; and the other persons whose names are inserted in the grant, trustees for him.

*Howe v. Howe,*  
1 Vern. 415.  
*Right v. Bawden,*  
3 East, 260.

**69.** Copyhold lands were granted to husband and wife, and J. S., for their several lives, *successive* ; but by the copy it appeared that the fine was the money of the husband and wife.

*Benger v. Drew,*  
1 P. Wms. 780.

Lord Macclesfield said, the third person (J. S.) was but a trustee for the husband and wife, by whom the purchase money was paid.

Withers v.  
Withers,  
Amb. 151.

70. By the custom of the manor of A., copyholds were grantable for three lives, *successivè sicut nominatur*. One Price being the last life in an old copy, the lord of the manor advised him to renew; upon that he inquired, after two healthy young persons, and named the defendants Harris and Bowles; a copy was granted, to hold to them *successivè*. It also appeared on the copy, that the fine, which was 120 L was paid by Price; and that the defendants were strangers to Price.

Smith v.  
Baker,  
1 Atk. 385.

Lord Hardwicke was of opinion, that resulting trusts of copyholds, as well as of freeholds, were within the eighth section of the statute of frauds; therefore that the representatives of Price were entitled to the copyhold, by operation of law.

2 Black. R.  
694.

71. In a modern case the Court of King's Bench observed, that in the West it was usual, upon copyholds for lives, for the *cestuis que trust* to take, in the order in which they stood in the copy: but the person who put in the lives, and paid the fine, had a power to dispose of the estate.

A Purchase  
in the Name  
of a Child is  
an Advance-  
ment.

Grey v. Grey,  
1 Cha. Ca.  
296.  
Finch R.  
341.

72. Where a father purchases lands in the name of his infant child, without any declaration of trust, and takes the profits during the minority of the child, such purchase will be considered in equity as an advancement of the child, and not as a trust for the father. Because between a father and his child, blood is a sufficient consideration to raise a use. And herein the law of trusts does, as it ought to do, agree with the law of uses. For if before the statute 27 Hen. VIII. a father had made a feoffment to his son, without any consideration, no use would have resulted to the father, because blood was a sufficient consideration to have vested the use in the son. Besides, as a father is bound by the law of nature to

provide for his child, the purchasing in his name will be construed in a court of equity to be a performance of that obligation; and the taking of the rents during the minority of the child, only implies that the father acted as guardian to his son.

73. J. Mumma purchased a copyhold in the name of his eldest son, an infant about eleven years old; laid out 400*l.* in improvements, paid the purchase money and the fines, and enjoyed it during his life. He surrendered to the use of his will, devised it to his wife for life, remainder to his younger children; and made other provisions for his eldest son. Upon the death of the father, the eldest son recovered this copyhold in ejectment. The widow brought a bill to be relieved, upon the principle that the eldest son was a trustee for the father.

*Mumma v. Mumma*,  
2 Vern. 19.

Lord Chancellor Jefferies declared, that as the eldest son was but an infant at the time of the purchase, though the father did enjoy during his life, it must be considered as an advancement for the son; and not a trust for the father.

74. In the case of *Lamplugh v. Lamplugh*, it was resolved, that if the purchase had been made in the younger son's name only, it had been plainly an advancement for him, and no trust. That the case did not differ, in regard the persons named by him did disclaim; especially since prudential reasons might be given why those persons were joined: namely, that they might help and protect the infant younger son; also to prevent the estates descending to a remote relation, in case the younger son died before his father. For in such case a court of equity would have said, if the father were to come for the estate; though this would have been an advancement, in case the younger son had lived to have enjoyed it,

*ante*, § 46.

yet the younger son dying, the trustees should, in equity, have conveyed it back to the father. And this might be the use and intention of naming these trustees. Besides, the younger son being but eight years old, was unfit to be a trustee; therefore must be intended to have been named for his own benefit.

*Taylor v. Taylor*,  
1 Atk. 380.

75. A father purchased copyhold lands in his son's name, who was then eighteen years of age, and continued in possession till his death.

ante, § 73.

Lord Hardwicke.—“I am of opinion that it should be considered as an advancement for the son; and found my opinion greatly on the case of *Mumma v. Mumma*: and though two receipts are produced under the son's hand, for the use of the father, I think that will not alter the case. For the son, being then under age, could give no other receipt in discharge of the tenants; who held by lease from the father. And in this case I am of opinion that parol evidence may be admitted, though indeed improper when offered against the legal operation of a will, or an implied trust; but here it is in support of law, and equity too.”

*Dyer v. Dyer*,  
2 Cox's R.  
92.

*Scroop v. Scroop*,  
1 Cha. Ca.  
27.

76. A purchase by a father in his own name and that of his son, has, in some cases, been deemed an advancement for the son; not a trust for the father. But this doctrine has been altered; and it has been held, that in such a case, a moiety of the estate will be subject to the father's debts.

*Stileman v. Ashdown*,  
2 Atk. 477.

77. A father made a purchase of land in his own name, and that of his eldest son, and their heirs; and a similar purchase in his own name and that of his younger son. The father paid the purchase money, and continued in possession till the time of his death. A judgement creditor of the father's brought his

bill to have satisfaction of his debt out of those estates. It was insisted that the sons took them to their own use, as an advancement, and were not trustees for their father.

Lord Hardwicke said,—The general rule had been admitted, and had been long the doctrine of the Court, that notwithstanding the father paid the whole money, yet if the purchase was made in the name of a younger son, the heir of the father should not insist it was a trust for the father. But this case differed from that rule, or any other that he remembered; and if he could find any material difference, he should, in his own judgement, be inclined to relieve the creditor. For though it might be proper *stare decisis*, yet he thought the cases had gone far enough in favour of advancements; and he ought not to carry it farther. It must be admitted, that in some cases which had been before the Court, the father had continued in possession, where the purchase had been made singly in the name of the son, and yet held an advancement for the son; and for this reason, because the father was the natural guardian of the sons, during their minority. Here the purchase was in the names of the father and sons, as joint tenants; now this did not answer the purpose of an advancement, for it entitled the father to the possession of the whole, till a division, and to a moiety absolutely, even after a division; besides the father's taking a chance to himself of being a survivor of the other moiety. If the son had died during his minority, the father would have been entitled to the whole, by survivorship, and the son could not have prevented it by severance, he being an infant. Suppose a stronger case, that the father had taken an estate by purchase, to himself for life, with remainder to his son in fee,

should this prevail against the creditors? No certainly. For the defendant's father having the profits for life, and the son only a remainder, the estate would have been liable. A material consideration for the plaintiffs, that the father might have other reason was for the purchasing in joint tenancy, namely, to prevent dower on the estate, and other charges. Then consider how it stood in respect to the creditor. A father here was in possession of the whole estate, and must necessarily appear to be the visible owner of it, and the creditor would have had a right, by virtue of an *elegit*, to have laid hold of a moiety; so that it differed extremely from all the other cases. Now it was very proper that the Court of Chancery should let itself loose, as far as possible, in order to relieve a creditor, and ought to be governed by particular circumstances of cases: and what could be more favourable to the plaintiff than that every foot of the estate was covered by these purchases; and unless the Court let him in upon these estates, the plaintiff had no possibility of being paid. Decreed, that a moiety of these purchases was liable to the debt.

Ebrand v.  
Dancer,  
2 Cha. Ca.  
26.

Lloyd v.  
Read,  
1 P. Wms.  
608.

Fearn's Op.  
327.

78. A purchase by a grandfather in the name of his grandchild, provided the father be dead, in which case the grandchildren are in the immediate care of the grandfather, will be deemed an advancement for the grandchild, not a trust for the grandfather.

79. Where a person purchased a copyhold estate in the names, and for the lives, of his three natural children, who were admitted, and described as his daughters in the admission. Mr. Fearn inclined to the opinion that the daughters were entitled to the estate for their own use: because every man is under a natural obligation to provide for such children.

80. It is said by Lord Nottingham, in the case of *Grey v. Grey*, that where a son is married in the life of his father, and by him fully advanced, and emancipated, there a purchase by the father, in the name of his son, may be a trust for the father, as much as if it had been in the name of a stranger; because in that case all presumptions or obligations of advancement cease. But where the son is not advanced, or but advanced, or emancipated, in part, there is no room for any construction of a trust by implication; and without clear proofs to the contrary, it ought to be taken as an advancement of the son.

Exception,  
Children  
emancipated.  
Finch R. 341.  
Elliot v.  
Elliot,  
2 Cha. Ca.  
231.  
Pole v. Pole,  
1 Ves. 76.

81. It is also said by Lord Chief Baron Gilbert, that if a father purchases in the name of his son, who is of full age, which by the English law is an emancipation out of the power of the father; there if the father takes the profits, or lets leases, or acts in any other manner as the owner of the estate, the son will be considered as a trustee for the father: because there is the same resulting trust, as if the son were a stranger, since it was purchased with the father's money. But if the father had let the son continue in possession, from the time of the purchase, without acting as owner, it would be an advancement. For the legal interest being in the son, and the father permitting him to act as owner of the estate, from the time of the purchase, did as much declare the trust for the advancement of the son, as if it had been declared in express words in the deed.

Lex prætoria,  
271.

82. A wife cannot be a trustee for her husband. Therefore if a husband purchases lands in the name of his wife, it shall be presumed in the first instance to be an advancement, and provision for the wife.

And also  
a Wife.



Kingdom v.  
Bridges,  
2 Vern. 67.

83. A married man purchased a walk in a chase, and took the patent to himself and his wife, and J. S. for their lives, and the life of the longest liver of them. Lord Chancellor Jefferies held that this should be presumed an advancement and provision for the wife; for she could not be a trustee for her husband. Decreed to the wife for life, and if J. S. should survive her, then to be a trust for the executors of the husband.

Back v.  
Andrews,  
Prec. in  
Cha. 1.  
2 Vern. 120.

84. A husband purchased a copyhold, to himself, his wife and daughter, and their heirs. It was held to be an advancement, and not a trust. And that a mortgage by the husband should not bind the lands after his decease, in the lifetime of the wife and daughter.

No Trust  
between  
Lessor and  
Lessee.

Pilkington  
v. Bayley,  
7 Bro. Parl.  
Ca. 383.

85. There can be no resulting or implied trust between a lessor and lessee; because every lessee is a purchaser by his contract, and his covenants: which excludes all possibility of implying a trust for the lessor. Therefore, if in that case there be any trust at all, it must be declared in writing.

Hutchins  
v. Lee,  
1 Atk. 447.

86. There may however be a resulting or implied trust between the assignor and assignee of a leasehold estate.

All Trusts  
are execu-  
tory.

Collect. Jur.  
Vol. I. 413.

87. There formerly prevailed a distinction between trusts executed and executory. But it is said by Lord Hardwicke, in the case of *Bagshaw v Spencer*, that all trusts are in the notion of law executory, and to be executed by *subpœna*, as the old books speak. At common law every use was a trust; then came the statute 27 Hen. VIII. which executed the legal estate to the use, and conjoined them together. The statute mentions trusts, as well as uses; and a trust executed is, in strictness, now a legal estate: therefore, in order to bring it into the jurisdiction of



the Chancery, it must be executory ; that is, the legal estate must want to be executed to the trust, and a conveyance to be decreed. So that one essential part of the trust is, that the trustee is to convey the estate at some time or other ; sometimes it is to be done sooner, sometimes later : and this whether the testator has directed it or not ; so much every testator is presumed to know. One may therefore reasonably doubt how it can make any substantial difference, whether the testator has in words directed a conveyance or not ; since the law, that is, the course of the court, takes notice that the testator could not intend his estate should always remain in the trustees ; but that one principal confidence reposed in them was to convey."

88. A distinction has however been frequently admitted between a trust, created without any reference to a farther execution of it, by a conveyance directed to be made ; and a trust whose effect is referred to another conveyance, directed to be made for its final execution. Of which an account will be given hereafter.

Tit. 32. c. 19.  
Tit. 38. c. 14.

89. When trusts were first introduced, it was held that none but those who were capable of being seised to a use, could be trustees. This has been altered ; and it is now settled, that the king may be a trustee ; but the remedy against him is in the Court of Exchequer.

Who may be  
Trustees.  
1 Ves. 453.  
3 Comm. 428.

90. A corporation may be a trustee, not only for its own members, but also for third persons. And where a corporation is a trustee, the Court of Chancery has the same jurisdiction over it, as over a private person.

Mayor of Co-  
ventry v. Att.  
Gen. 7 Bro.  
Parl Ca. 235.  
2 Ves. Jun.  
46.

91. When once a trust is sufficiently created, it will fasten itself on the estate. Therefore if a con-

1 Ves. 468.

veyance or devise, by which a trust is created, becomes void by the incapacity or death of the grantee or devisee; still the Court of Chancery will decree the trust to be carried into execution. The relief is administered by considering the land, in whatever person vested, as bound by the trust; and compelling the heir, or other person having the legal estate, to perform it.

*Bennet v.  
Davis, 2. P.  
Wms. 316.*

92. A person devised lands to his daughter, a married woman, for her separate use. It was held that the husband should be a trustee for his wife. For as the testator had a power to devise the premises to trustees for the separate use of his wife, the Court of Chancery, in compliance with his declared intention, would supply the want of them.

*Sonley v.  
Clock Makers  
Company  
1 Bro. R. 81.*

*Tit. 38. c. 2.*

93. An estate was devised to the Clock Makers Company, upon certain trusts. Decreed, that though the devise was void, the Clock Makers Company not being capable of taking, yet that the trust was sufficiently created to fasten itself upon any estate the law might raise; therefore that the heir at law was a trustee for the uses of the will.

## TITLE XII.

## TRUST.

## CHAPTER II.

*Of the Rules by which Trust Estates of Freehold are governed.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                     |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>1. <i>A Trust is equivalent to the legal Ownership.</i></p> <p>5. <i>Trusts are alienable.</i></p> <p>8. <i>Devisable and descendible.</i></p> <p>9. <i>May be entailed.</i></p> <p>10. <i>And also limited for life.</i></p> <p>11. <i>Subject to Curtesy.</i></p> <p>15. <i>But not to Dower.</i></p> <p>22. <i>Nor to Freebench.</i></p> <p>25. <i>Subject to Forfeiture for Treason.</i></p> | <p>27. <i>But not for Felony.</i></p> <p>29. <i>Not subject to Escheat.</i></p> <p>30. <i>Liable to Crown Debts.</i></p> <p>31. <i>And to Debts due to private Persons.</i></p> <p>35. <i>Merge in the Legal Estate.</i></p> <p>37. <i>Where a Legal Estate is a Bar in Ejectment.</i></p> <p>40. <i>Where a Reconveyance will be presumed.</i></p> |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**W**E have seen that trust estates owe their origin to the strict construction given by the courts of law to the statute of uses ; in consequence of which the Court of Chancery interposed its authority. But in the exercise of this jurisdiction, the inconveniences with which uses were attended have been avoided ; for although the court first laid it down that a trust, being in fact a use not executed by the statute, ought to be regulated by the rules which had been established respecting uses, before they were changed into legal estates ; yet this was, in many instances, departed from ; it being found much more convenient to consider a trust estate as equivalent to the legal ownership ; and to regulate it in the same manner as the legal estate.

A Trust is equivalent to the legal Ownership.

1 Ves. 357.

Burgess v.  
Wheate,  
Tit. 30.

Watts v. Ball,  
infra.

1 Bro R. 271.

Tit. 11. c. 2.  
§ 8.

infra, c. 4.

1 Black R.  
155.

Tit. 30.

Trusts are  
alienable.

2. Lord Mansfield has laid it down that, in the consideration of a court of equity, the *cestui que trust* is actually and absolutely seised of the freehold. That the legal consequences of an actual seisin shall ensue : it being a maxim that equity follows the law, which was a safe, as well as a fixed principle ; as it made the substantial rules of property certain and uniform. And Lord Thurlow has said that, in many acts of parliament, an equitable estate was considered the same as if it were a legal estate. That the words, seised in law or in equity, in the qualification act, showed that the word seised was applicable to both. And that the word seisin extended to being seised in equity.

3. A trust estate still however retains some few qualities of a use. Thus confidence in the person is necessary to the existence of a trust : so that even at this day if a trustee sells the land, for a valuable consideration, to a person who has no notice of the trust, the purchaser will not be compelled, in Chancery, to execute it.

4. As for privity of estate, it was formerly held to be as necessary, as confidence in the person. But this seems to be now altered ; for Lord Mansfield has said, “ that part of the old law which did not allow any relief to be given for or against any estates in the *post*, does not now bind, by its authority, in the case of trusts.”

It seems however to be understood, that a lord by escheat is not bound to execute a trust.

5. Any disposition of a trust estate by the *cestui que trust* was formerly binding on the trustees, in a court of equity. But it is enacted by the statute of frauds, § 9, “ that all grants and assignments of any trust or confidence shall be in writing, signed by the

party granting or assigning the same, or else shall be utterly void and of none effect."

6. Although by the statute 1 Rich. III. c. 1. the conveyance of a person, having only a use, was made good against the feoffees to use; yet it does not appear to have been ever held that a *cestui que trust* could convey any thing more than a trust; and in all those cases where there has been a conveyance from a *cestui que trust*, the legal estate has been considered as still remaining in the trustee.

Tit. 11. c. 2.  
§ 42.

8 Term R.  
494.

7. It was laid down by Lord Nottingham in 33 Cha. II. as a general rule, "that any legal conveyance or assurance, by a *cestui que trust*, shall have the same effect and operation upon a trust, as it should have had upon the estate in law, in case the trustees had executed their trust."

2 Cha. Ca.  
78.

8. Trust estates are also devisable, as will be shown hereafter: where they are not devised, they will descend to the heir of the person who was last entitled to them, in the same manner as legal estates.

Devisable and  
Decendible.  
Tit 38. c. 3.

Tit. 29. c. 3.

9. It was formerly held, that a trust estate, being merely the creature of a court of equity, was not within the statute *De Donis*: therefore, that where a trust estate was limited to a person and the heirs of his body, he might, after issue had, bar such issue by a feoffment, bargain and sale, or will: this is now altered, and it is fully settled that a trust estate may be entailed in the same manner as a legal one; and that such entail can only be barred by fine or recovery; which will have the same effect on a trust estate tail, as on a legal one.

May be  
entailed.  
1 Ab. Eq.  
256.

Bowater  
v. Ellis,  
2 Vern. 344.

Kirkham,  
v. Smith,  
Amb. 518.  
Tit. 35 & 36.

10. A trust estate may also be limited to a person for life: but in such case no fine, or other assurance, by the *cestui que trust* for life, will operate as a forfeiture of his estate.

And also  
limited for  
Life.

Subject to  
Curtesy.  
Tit. 11. c. 2.  
§ 34.

11. Although no person could be tenant by the curtesy of a use, before the statute 27 Henry VIII., because the wife could have no seisin of a use, yet it has been determined by the Court of Chancery, that a husband may now be tenant by the curtesy of a trust estate of freehold.

Watts v.  
Ball,  
1 P. Wms.  
108.

12. A person having two daughters, devised his lands to trustees and their heirs, in trust to pay his debts, and to convey the surplus to his daughters equally. The eldest daughter brought her bill for a partition; and the only question was, whether the husband of the youngest daughter should have an estate for life conveyed to him, as tenant by the curtesy. The husband, in his answer, had sworn that he married the younger daughter upon a presumption that she was seised in fee of a legal estate in the moiety: that at the time of the marriage she was in the receipt of the profits of such moiety; and it was admitted that this trust was not discovered till after the death of the younger daughter. Lord Cowper decreed that trust estates ought to be governed by the same rules, and were within the same reason, as legal estates. That as the husband should have been tenant by the curtesy, had it been a legal estate, so should he be of a trust estate. And if there were not the same rules of property in all courts, all things would be as it were at sea; and under the greatest uncertainty.

3 P. Wms.  
234.  
Cashborne  
v. Inglis,  
Tit. 15. c. 3.

13. Where an estate is vested in trustees, for the sole and separate use of a married woman, her husband will not be entitled to curtesy. For in that case it is the evident intention of the parties to exclude the husband from any interest in the estate.

Hearle v.  
Greenbank,

14. Lands were devised to trustees and their heirs, in trust to apply the rents and profits to the sole and

separate use of the testator's daughter, Mrs. Winsmore, during her life, and to permit and suffer her to dispose of the lands to such persons as she should appoint. Her husband claimed to be tenant by the curtesy, because the inheritance descended to Mrs. W. until appointment; and therefore she had a trust estate in fee. 1 Ves. 298.  
3 Atk. 695.  
Tit. 32. c. 13.

Lord Hardwicke said that Mr. Winsmore could not be considered as tenant by the curtesy. Under the will, the rents and profits were to be applied to the sole and separate use of Mrs. W. with power to dispose of the land. What was the effect of this? The whole legal estate of inheritance was in the trustees. However, it was said, a husband might be tenant by the curtesy of a trust. But consider what was necessary to make a tenant by the curtesy; the wife must have the inheritance, and there must be likewise a seisin in deed in the wife, during coverture. It was true she had the inheritance, because it descended, till the execution of the power. But then the father, whose estate it was, had made the daughter a feme sole, and had given the profits to her separate use; therefore what seisin could the husband have during the coverture: he could neither come at the possession, nor the profits. Was there any equitable seisin of the husband, none at all; and to admit there was, would be directly contrary to the father's intention; therefore neither in law or equity was the husband tenant by the curtesy.\*

---

\* In the case of *Roberts v. Dixwell*, 1 Atk. 607. determined ten years before this one, Lord Hardwicke appears to have held a different opinion from that which he laid down here. But it may be fairly presumed that the authority of the last case would be preferred.

But not to  
Dower.

15. It might have been expected, that where the Court of Chancery deviated so far from the old law of uses, as to allow a tenancy by the curtesy of a trust estate, it would have extended the same indulgence to dower, being a right strongly favoured by the common law.. Yet it has been long settled that a widow is not dowable of a trust estate: whether the husband himself has parted with the legal estate; or a trust estate has descended upon, or been limited to him.

Colt v. Colt,  
1 Cha. R.  
134.

16. The first time this point appears to have been determined, was in 12 Cha. II.; and though this doctrine has been followed by subsequent Chancellors, yet they have always expressed their regret at being bound by such a precedent. But so many cases of this kind have arisen, and the determinations have been so uniform, against the claim of dower out of a trust estate, that it is not probable any alteration will be made in this respect.

Bottomley  
v. Fairfax,  
Prec. in Cha.  
336.

17. A husband before marriage conveyed his estate to trustees and their heirs, in such manner as to put the legal estate out of him. It was determined, that though the trust estate was limited to him and his heirs, yet his widow should not be endowed of it: that the court had never gone so far as to allow dower in such a case.

Ambrose v.  
Ambrose,  
1 P. Wms.  
321.

Printed  
Cases, 1717.

18. A. purchased an estate in the names of two trustees, who acknowledged the trust after his death. Upon a claim made by his widow to dower, it was decreed that she was not dowable. The decree was affirmed in the House of Lords.

Tit. 28. c. 2.

19. In the case of Chaplin v. Chaplin, a question arose, whether the widow of the *cestui que trust* of a rent-charge was entitled to dower out of it. Lord Talbot observed, that by the preamble of the statute



if uses it was recited, that by means of those uses, the wife was defeated of her dower; by which it appeared that the wife of *cestui que use* was not dowerable at common law; if so then, as at common law, a use was the same as a trust was now, it followed that the wife could no more be endowed of a trust now, than at common law, and before the statute, she could be endowed of a use; so that there was the opinion of the whole Parliament on the point. That it had been the common practice of conveyancers, agreeable thereto, to place the legal estate in trustees, on purpose to prevent dower; wherefore it would be of most dangerous consequence to titles, and throw things into confusion, contrary to former opinions, and the advice of so many learned and eminent men, to let in the claim of dower upon trust estates. He took it to be settled that the husband should be tenant by the curtesy of a trust, though the wife could not have dower thereof; for which diversity, as he could see no reason, so neither should he have made it; but since it had prevailed, he would not alter it. That there did not appear to be so much as one single case, where, abstracting from all circumstances, it had been determined there should be dower of a trust. Att. Gen<sup>l</sup> v. Scott, Forrest 138.

20. Sir J. Jekyll has attempted to distinguish between the case of a trust created by the husband himself, and a trust created by another person. In the first case he admits it to be a settled point, from the authority of the preceding cases, that the wife cannot have dower; because it must be presumed the trust was created for the sole purpose of barring dower. Accordingly it had been the common practice for purchasers to take a conveyance of the legal estate in a trustee's name, to prevent dower. But 2 P. Wms. 708.

Goodwin v.  
Winsmore.

in the second case, where a trust estate descended, or came to the husband from another person it was different. This distinction has however been exploded by Lord Hardwicke, in a case which will be stated hereafter.

Banks v.  
Sutton,  
2 P. Wms.  
706.

21. It is also laid down by Sir Joseph Jekyll, that where a particular time is appointed for conveying the legal estate to the husband, and he outlives that time, without obtaining such conveyance, his widow shall notwithstanding be entitled to dower in equity; for where an act is to be done by a trustee, that is looked on as done, which ought to have been done. But this doctrine is not supported by the decree in the case referred to, without the additional proposition, that a widow was dowable of an equity of redemption in fee. It was a mortgage in fee, and not paid off during the coverture. If the trustee therefore had conveyed, he would have conveyed an equity of redemption only, subject to a mortgage in fee; and the widow would not have been entitled to dower, unless she was dowable out of such equity of redemption, which she was not. This therefore, though said, will not support the decree; and the proposition is too important, and contradicted by too many analogies, to be hazarded upon this *dictum* alone.

Dixon v.  
Saville,  
Tit. 15. c. 3.

Nor to Free  
Bench.

22. It is said in the case of *Otway v. Hudson*, 2 Vern. 583. that the widow of a *cestui que trust* of a copyhold ought to have her free bench, as well as if the husband had the legal estate in him. But this doctrine has been contradicted in the following cases.

Goodwin v.  
Winsmore,  
2 Atk. 525.

23. A bill was brought by a widow for a customary estate. The husband's father bought the lands, which were conveyed to him and D. and the heirs of the father. The father devised the lands to the

husband in tail; and D. survived the husband. The custom was laid for the wife to have the whole, as her free bench.

Lord Hardwicke—"It is an established doctrine now, that a wife is not dowable of a trust estate. Indeed a distinction is taken by Sir J. Jekyll, in *Banks v. Sutton*, in respect to a trust, where it descends or comes to a husband from another, and is not created by himself; but I think there is no ground for such a distinction; for it is going on suppositions which will hold on both sides; and at the latter end of the report, Sir J. J. seems to be very diffident of it, and rested chiefly on another point in equity; so that it is no authority in this case. But there is a late authority in direct contradiction to the distinction above taken in *Banks v. Sutton*; the case of the Attorney General *v. Scott*. The only case for the plaintiff is that of *Otway v. Hudson*, 2 Vern. 583; there it was free bench, and is so called here; but it appears plain to be only customary dower. Free bench is merely a widow's estate in such lands as the husband dies seised of, not that he is seised of during the coverture; as dower is. There were many circumstances in the case of *Otway v. Hudson*; it was decreed on the endeavour of the husband to get the legal estate surrendered, and the refusal of the trustees; and grounded on his will: but as to the general doctrine at the latter end, it is not warranted by the decree." The bill was dismissed.

*Forrest 138.*

*Tit. 10. c. 3.*

*Forder v. Wade, 4 Bro. R. 521.*

24. Where a man, immediately before his marriage, privately and secretly conveys his estate to a trustee for himself, in order to defeat his wife of dower, such conveyance will be deemed fraudulent and void.

*Tit. 32. c. 26.*

25. Before the statute of uses, the king was not entitled to any use upon an attainder for high

*Subject to Forfeiture for Treason.*

treason of the *cestui que use*, as is mentioned in the preamble of that statute : so that afterwards trusts were, by an analogy drawn from uses, also protected from forfeiture, upon an attainder of the *cestui que trust* for high treason. By the statute 33 Hen. VIII. c. 20. it is enacted, “ that if any person shall be attainted or convicted of high treason, the king shall have as much benefit and advantage by such attainder as well of uses, rights, entries, and conditions, as of possessions, reversions, remainders, and all other things, as if it had been done and declared by authority of parliament.”

1 P. C. 248.

26. Lord Hale has observed, that at the time when this statute was made, there could be no use but that which is now called a trust ; and although it was determined in Abingdon's case, that a trust estate of freehold was not forfeited by attainder of treason, yet that resolution could not be reconciled with the statute 33 Henry VIII., as the uses there mentioned could be nothing but trusts ; therefore he was of opinion, that upon an attainder for high treason of the *cestui que trust* of an inheritance, the equity or trust was forfeited ; though possibly the land itself was not forfeited.

But not for  
Felony.

27. Whatever may be the case in an attainder for high treason, it has been determined that an attainder for felony is not within the statute 33 Henry VIII. Therefore, in such a case, neither the land, nor the trust becomes forfeited ; for the king has his tenant as before, namely the trustee.

Att. Gen<sup>l</sup>  
v. Sands,  
1 Hale, P. C.  
249.

28. Freeman Sands being attainted of felony, for the murder of his brother, and having a trust estate in lands held of the King, of which Sir George Sands had the legal estate ; the Attorney General preferred an information in the Exchequer against Sir G. Sands,

to have a conveyance of the legal estate to the King. The Court resolved, that although Freeman Sands had the trust of the land at the time of his attainder, yet inasmuch as Sir G. Sands continued seised of the lands, and so was tenant to the King, though subject to the trust, yet the trust was not forfeited to the Crown ; but that Sir G. Sands should hold the lands for his own benefit, discharged from the trust.

29. A trust estate of inheritance does not escheat to the Crown by the death of the *cestui que trust* without heirs. But the trustee will hold the land discharged from the trust.

Not subject to Escheat.  
Burgess v. Wheate,  
Tit. 30.

30. It is somewhat doubtful whether trusts were originally liable to Crown debts. But by the statute 13 Eliz: c. 4. § 5. it is enacted, that if any person who is an accountant, or indebted to the Crown, shall purchase any lands in the names of other persons, to his own use ; all such lands shall be taken for the satisfaction of the debts due by such persons to the Crown.

Liable to Crown Debts,  
3 Cha. R. 20.

31. When trust estates of freehold were established by the Court of Chancery, it was there held, by analogy from the old law of uses, that they were not subject to debts, nor assets in the hands of the debtors heirs.

Tit. 14.

And to Debts due to Private Persons.  
Bennet v. Box,  
1 Cha. Ca. 12.

32. To remedy this, it was enacted by the statute of frauds, “ That it shall and may be lawful for every sheriff or other officer, to whom any writ or precept shall be directed, upon any judgement, statute, or recognizance, to do, make. and deliver execution unto the party in that behalf suing, of all such lands, tenements, &c. as any other person or persons shall be seised or possessed in trust for him against whom execution is so sued, like as the sheriff or other officer might or ought to have done if the said party against

29 Cha. II.  
c. 3. § 10.

whom execution shall be so sued had been seised of such lands, tenements, &c. of such estate as they be seised of in trust for him at the time of the said execution sued, which lands tenements, &c., by force and virtue of such execution, shall accordingly be held and enjoyed freed and discharged from all incumbrances of such person or persons as shall be so seised or possessed in trust for the person against whom such execution shall be sued: and if any *cestui que trust* shall die leaving a trust in fee simple to descend to his heir, then and in every such case, such trust shall be deemed and taken, and is hereby declared to be, assets by descent; and the heir shall be liable to and chargeable with the obligation of his ancestors, for and by reason of such assets, as fully and amply as he might or ought to have been, if the estate in law had descended to him in possession, in like manner as the trust descended."

Tit. 14. § 71. 33. It has been held, that if a trustee has conveyed away the lands, by the direction of the *cestui que trust*, before execution sued, they cannot be taken in execution.

2 Atk. 293. 34. Where a trust estate descends on the heir at law, though it may be necessary to resort to equity to reduce it into possession, yet it will be considered as legal, and not equitable assets: a trust estate being made assets by the statute.

Merge in the legal Estate. 35. Trust estates are in all cases subject to merge in the legal estate, whenever both estates come to the same person: for a man cannot be a trustee for himself. And in a modern case Lord Thurlow said it was universally true, that where the estates unite, the equitable must merge in the legal.

Wade v.  
Paget,  
1 Bro. R. 363.  
Goodright  
v. Wells,  
Tit. 29. c. 3.  
3 Ves. Jun.  
126.

36. In a subsequent case Lord Alvanley said, "Another position was maintained in a latitude that would

create infinite confusion. That where there is in the same person a legal and equitable interest, the former absorbs the latter. I admit that where he has the same interest in both, he ceases to have the equitable estate, and has the legal estate, upon which this court will not act, but leaves it to the rules of law. But it must be understood always with this restriction, that it holds only where the legal and equitable estates are co-extensive, and commensurate; but I do not by any means admit, that where he has the whole legal estate and a partial equitable estate, the latter sinks into the former; for it would be a disadvantage to him."

37. It is a rule of law, that in an ejectment, the plaintiff must recover upon the strength of his own title; and cannot found his claim on the weakness of that of the defendant; for possession gives the defendant a right against every man who cannot show a good title. The party who would change the possession, must first establish a legal title in himself: therefore where it can be shown by the defendant that the legal title is not in the plaintiff, he cannot recover in the action.

Where a legal Estate is a Bar in Ejectment.

38. It was formerly held that an outstanding legal estate should not be set up as a bar in ejectment, to the *cestui que trust*, where he was entitled to the benefit of the whole legal estate. But Lord Mansfield has said, the rule only was, that the legal estate should not be set up, to defeat the *cestui que trust*, in a clear case; for where the trust was perfectly manifest, the rule stood upon strong and beneficial principles; because in ejectment the question was, who was entitled to the possession. But if a trust was doubtful, a court of law would not decide upon it in

3 Burr. 1901.  
Cowp. 46.  
Doug. 721.



an ejectment ; it must be put into another way of inquiry.

8 Term R.  
122.

39. This doctrine has been denied by Lord Kényon, who has said, that “ if it appear in a special verdict, or a special case, that the legal estate is outstanding in another person, the party not clothed with that legal estate, cannot recover in a court of law. And in this respect I cannot distinguish between the case of an ejectment brought by a trustee against the *cestui que trust*, and an ejectment brought by any other person.

Where a Re-  
conveyance  
will be pre-  
sumed.  
3 Burr. 1901.  
Doug. 721.

40. In the case of Lade v. Holford it appears to have been agreed, that where the beneficial occupation of an estate, by the possessor, has given reason to suppose that possibly there may have been a conveyance of the legal estate, to the person who is equitably entitled to it ; a jury may be advised to presume a conveyance of the legal estate. And this doctrine is confirmed by the following case.

Hilary v.  
Waller,  
12 Ves. 239.

41. Upon a bill in Chancery for the specific performance of an agreement to purchase a farm, the defendant objected to the title. The estate appeared to have been conveyed in 1664 by way of indemnity : and as to one moiety of the estate, there was no provision for reconveying it ; as to the other moiety there was such a provision after the death of two persons then living, and eleven years after. In a family settlement executed in 1694, the conveyance of 1664 was excepted. From that time no notice was taken of it ; but the estate was conveyed by the persons in possession, as if they were seised of the legal estate. So that the owners had acted as proprietors of the fee simple for a hundred and forty years ; and no claim appeared to have ever been



made on the estate, under the deed of indemnity. The objection to the title was founded on the legal estate's being outstanding. To which it was answered, that a reconveyance of it ought to be presumed.

Sir W. Grant said, that length of time did not, of itself, furnish the same sort of presumption, in this case, that it did in a case of adverse possession. Long continued possession implied title; as, if there was, a different right, the probability was, that it would have been asserted. But undisturbed enjoyment did not show whether the title was equitable or legal. It did not follow however that a conveyance of the legal estate could not be the subject of presumption; though the presumption was made upon a different ground. Lord Kenyon, though disinclined to permit ejectments to be maintained upon equitable titles, always admitted that it might be left to the jury to presume a conveyance of the legal estate. On what ground was such presumption to be made? On this, that what ought to have been done, should be presumed to have been done: when the purpose was answered for which the legal estate was conveyed, it ought to be reconveyed. Presumptions did not always proceed on a belief that the thing presumed, had actually taken place. Grants were frequently presumed, as Lord Mansfield *Cowp. 215.* had said, merely for the purpose, and from a principle of quieting the possession. There was as much occasion for presuming conveyances of legal estates: as otherwise titles must for ever remain imperfect, and in many respects unavailable; when, from length of time, it became impossible to discover in whom the legal estate, if outstanding, was actually vested. If it could be ascertained at what period the

legal estate ought to have been reconveyed, he saw no reason why the presumption of its being reconveyed, at that period, should not be made. The difficulty was, that by the deed of 1664 it was only as to a moiety of the estate, that any time was limited for the reconveyance. It could not however be meant that the legal estate in any part should continue outstanding for ever. The conveyance of it was made for a purpose that must have some limit. It was by way of security against the eviction of another estate. At what precise moment the danger of eviction ceased, it was impossible to say; but if the time that had elapsed without claim, one hundred and forty years, did not furnish the inference that none could be made, he did not know what period would be sufficient for that purpose. Mere possibilities ought not to be regarded. The Court, as Lord Hardwicke said in the case of *Lyddall v. Weston*, “must govern itself by a moral certainty; for it is impossible, in the nature of things, there should be a mathematical certainty of a good title.” The evidence of actual reconveyance was slight, and inconclusive. But on the general grounds he had before stated, he conceived there was no court before which a question concerning this title could come, that would not, under all the circumstances of the case, presume, or direct a jury to presume, that the legal estate had been reconveyed. It was therefore such a title as a purchaser might safely take. And decreed accordingly.

2 Atk. 19.

The decree was affirmed by Lord Erskine.

## TITLE XII.

## TRUST.

## CHAP. III.

*Of the Rules by which Trust Terms are governed.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p>2. <i>Terms in Gross.</i></p> <p>7. <i>Terms attendant on the Inheritance.</i></p> <p>10. <i>How Terms become attendant.</i></p> <p>22. <i>When a Term is in Gross.</i></p> <p>27. <i>A Term attendant may become a Term in Gross.</i></p> <p>29. <i>A Term attendant is Part of the Inheritance.</i></p> <p>31. <i>Is real Assets.</i></p> <p>32. <i>Not forfeited for Felony.</i></p> <p>33. <i>Trust Terms protect Purchasers from mesne Incumbrances.</i></p> | <p>40. <i>And also from Dower.</i></p> <p>43. <i>Must be assigned to a Trustee for the Purchaser.</i></p> <p>45. <i>A Term will not protect the Heir against Dower.</i></p> <p>48. <i>Nor the Assignees of a Bankrupt.</i></p> <p>49. <i>Neither Jointure nor Curtesy barred by a Term.</i></p> <p>51. <i>Where a Term is a Bar in Ejectment.</i></p> |
|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**T**HE principles upon which terms for years are held not to be affected by the statute of uses, Ante, c. l. § 34. have been already explained; it will now therefore only be necessary to state the rules by which they are governed.

2. Terms for years are either vested in trustees for the use of particular persons, or for particular purposes; or else upon trust to attend the inheritance. Terms in Gross. In the first case they are called terms in gross; and the persons entitled to the beneficial interest, have a right in equity to call on the trustees, or persons possessed of the legal estate in the term, for the rents

and profits; and also for an assignment for the term itself.

Tit. 11. c. 2.  
§ 24.  
1 Sanders on  
Uses, 41.

3. The *cestui que trust* of a term has the same power of alienating and devising it, as if he had the legal estate. But it should be observed, that the stat. 1 Rich. III. does not extend to trust terms; therefore the assignment of the trust of a term, by the *cestui que trust*, will not pass the legal estate in the term.

Tit. 8. c. 1.  
§ 28.  
Prec. in Cha.  
418.  
1 Inst. 351 a.  
n. 1.

4. The right to a trust term in gross, vests in the executors or administrators of the *cestui que trust*; and where a married woman is *cestui que trust* of a term, her husband has the same rights as if she had the legal estate.

King v. Bal-  
let, 2 Vern.  
248.

5. It is said in Vernon's Reports, that the trust of a term is not assets at law, within the statute of frauds, for that statute only extends to a trust of lands held in fee simple. But it is equitable assets, in the hands of the executor.

Creditors of;  
Sir C. Cox.  
Tit. 15. c. 3.

6. Terms of this kind are in general governed by the same rules as legal ones; except that trust terms in gross are capable of being settled in a manner not allowed in the limitation of legal terms; of which an account will be given hereafter.

Terms at-  
tendant on  
the Inherit-  
ance.

7. With respect to terms attendant on the inheritance, they owe their existence to the following circumstances:—When terms for years became fully established, and the interest of the termor was secured against the effect of fictitious recoveries, long terms for years were frequently created; and although the purposes for which such terms had been raised were fully satisfied, still the terms continued to exist, the legal interest remaining in the personal representatives of the persons to whom they were originally limited. But as the owners of the inheritance were

entitled to the benefit of them, the terms became in fact united to the inheritance, and acquired the name of terms attendant on the inheritance; for otherwise the right to such terms would have gone to the executors or administrators of the persons entitled to the trust of them, as part of their personal estate; and the freehold and inheritance would descend to the heir at law.

8. Thus Lord Hardwicke has said, “The attendancy of terms for years upon the inheritance, is the creation of a court of equity; invented partly to protect real property, and partly to keep it in the right channel. In order to it, this Court framed the distinction between such attendant terms, and terms in gross; notwithstanding that in the consideration of the common law they are both the same, and equally keep out the owner of the fee, so long as they subsist. But as equity always considers who has the right in conscience to the land, and on that ground makes one man a trustee for another; and as the common law allows the possession of the tenant for years to be the possession of the owner of the freehold; this Court said, where the tenant for years is but a trustee for the owner of the inheritance, he shall not keep out his *cestui que trust*; nor, *pari ratione*, obstruct him in doing any acts of ownership, or in making any assurances of his estate. Therefore, in equity, such a term for years shall yield, ply, and be moulded, according to the uses, estates, or charges which the owner of the inheritance declares or carves out of the fee. Thus the dominion of real property was kept entire.”

Willoughby v. Willoughby, 1 Term R. 763.

9. Mr. Fearne has also observed, that “without such attendancy, property in the same lands, united

Collect Jur. Vol. 2. N. 6.

in the same owner, would take different channels ; the dominion of real estates, instead of being entire, become split and divided, between the personal and real representatives ; and indeed leave the real representatives very little but the mere name of property. For an inheritance expectant on a term of any considerable duration, is of very little value. So necessary therefore is the attendancy of terms, under the circumstances above mentioned, to keep real estates in a right channel, that the very existence of real property, as distinguished from the personal, seems in a great measure to depend upon it. For as there are few estates in which there are not such terms, if they are not to be considered as attendant, the whole substance and value of the estate would in them devolve to the executor, as personal property ; whilst the heir or real representative would be left destitute of every thing but the shadow of the inheritance."

How Terms  
become at-  
tendant.

10. A term may become attendant on the inheritance, either by an express declaration of trust, or by implication of law. Thus, where a satisfied term is assigned to a trustee, upon an express trust to attend the inheritance, the owner of such inheritance acquires a right to the term, by the declaration of the parties. But there are many cases where no such declaration is made ; it then becomes a question in equity, whether it is a term in gross, or a term attendant.

Francis Max.  
in Eq. 21, 22.  
Treat. of Eq.  
B. 2. c. 4 § 5.

11. In consequence of the maxim in equity that " That should have the satisfaction, which has sustained the loss ;" it has been often determined, that where a term is carved out of the inheritance for any particular purpose, when that purpose is satisfied, the

term becomes attendant on the inheritance ; for the inheritance sustains the loss, by keeping the term on foot, and therefore should have it in satisfaction.

12. A woman before marriage raised a term of 1,000 years, upon trust that her intended husband should receive the profits during their joint lives ; if they should have any children, in trust for such children during the residue of the term. The husband died without children ; the wife survived, married another husband, who survived, and took out administration to her. The question was, whether the term should go to the husband, or attend the inheritance. Lord Cowper said, this was only an unskilful declaration, not the intent of the party : the particular purpose being served, it must attend the inheritance. If the term and inheritance had been in the same hands, it would have merged ; so here it should be attendant in equity.

Best v. Stampford, 3 P. Wins. 374.

13. Lord and Lady Huntingdon settled lands which were the estate of Lady H. to the use of Lady H. for life, remainder to their eldest son in tail ; with a power to Lord and Lady H. to revoke and limit new uses. Lord H. prevailed on Lady H. to exercise this power so far as to demise the premises for 1,000 years by way of mortgage, for raising 4,500*l.* for Lord H., who covenanted to pay off the money. Lord H. paid off the mortgage, took an assignment of the term to a trustee for himself ; and devised it for the benefit of his younger children. Upon the death of Lord H. his eldest son, who took the inheritance, filed his bill against the personal representatives of his father, and the trustees of the term, praying that it might be assigned to attend the inheritance, free from incumbrances. Lord K. Wright decreed that the plaintiff must redeem the mortgage.

Huntingdon v. Huntingdon, 2 Bro. Parl. Ca. 1.

Davidson v.  
Foley, ante,  
c. l. § 55.

But on an appeal to the House of Lords, the decree was reversed, and the term directed to be assigned to the appellant; because, when Lord H. paid off the mortgage, the purpose for which the term was created being satisfied, it became attendant on the inheritance.

14. Where a person purchases the freehold and inheritance of lands in his own name, and obtains an assignment of an outstanding term to a trustee for himself; such term will be considered as attendant on the inheritance.

Tiffin v.  
Tiffin,  
1 Vern. 1.  
Whitchurch  
v. Whit-  
church, 2 P.  
Wms. 236.  
9 Mod. 124.  
Goodright  
v. Shales,  
2 Wils. R.  
329.

15. R. Tiffin purchased a freehold estate, took the conveyance in his own name, and an assignment of a mortgage term for years in the names of two trustees. Lord Nottingham held that this term was attendant on the inheritance.

16. J. Hoole took an assignment of a term for years, which was in mortgage to one Shepherd, who was a trustee for him; and afterwards purchased the inheritance of the same premises, in his own name. Lord C. J. Wilmot said, when Hoole purchased the fee, he became both the hand to receive, and the hand to pay off the mortgage money. It wrought an extinguishment of the debt due on the mortgage, and the term was gone; though not extinguished in point of law, because it was in Shepherd. Yet it became attendant on the inheritance, and must follow it in point of law, as much as if it had been made to do so by the act of the party.

17. Where a person takes a conveyance of the freehold in the name of a trustee, and an assignment of the term in his own name, the consequence is the same.

—v. Lang-  
ton, 2 Cha.  
Ca. 156.

18. A woman took a mortgage for 1000 years in the name of her brother, afterwards purchased the



inheritance in the name of another, and the term of years was assigned to her. The question was, whether this term belonged to the heir, or the personal representative. A difference was taken at the bar, namely, that if she had first purchased the fee, and afterwards the lease, it should wait on the inheritance; but here the lease was first in her.

Lord K. North said, there was no difference in reason; and decreed that the heir should have the lease, to attend the inheritance.

19. A citizen and freeman of London, possessed of a lease of lands, bought the reversion and inheritance, and died. The question was, whether, as there was no declaration that this lease should attend the inheritance, it was part of the personal estate of the purchaser. Decreed that it was attendant upon the inheritance; and, upon a re-hearing, the decree was affirmed by Lord K. North.

*Dowse v.  
Derivall,  
1 Vern. 104.*

20. It may be collected from the preceding cases, that whenever a term would merge in the inheritance, if both were in the same person, it shall be considered as attendant on the inheritance. And in the following modern case it was resolved, that where a person having a term for years, contracted for the purchase of the inheritance, and died without having a conveyance of it, the term was attendant.

21. A bill was filed by residuary devisees and legatees, praying that the will might be established, &c.; that the plaintiffs might be declared entitled to the benefit of a contract by the testator, to purchase an estate, and the contract completed. The testator had entered into the contract, after the execution of his will, for the purchase of the inheritance of the

*Capel v.  
Girdler,  
9 Ves. 509.*

estate, being at that time lessee of the premises for a term of years; and died before any conveyance was made. The plaintiffs therefore, if the Court should be of opinion that they were not entitled to the benefit of the contract, claimed the residue of the term, as residuary legatees. The defendant, the heir at law, claimed the inheritance of the estate contracted for, praying that the purchase might be completed out of the personal estate; insisting that the testator became seised of the inheritance from the date of the contract, and that the term was attendant upon the inheritance.

Sir W. Grant, M. R.—“I take the case to be this: the testator had a lease in his own name; had contracted for the purchase of the inheritance, and died before the conveyance to him was completed. Having contracted for the purchase of the inheritance, he became complete owner of the whole estate. For it is clear in this Court, a party, who has contracted for the purchase of an estate, is equitable owner; the vendor is a trustee for him. If he had, by his will, afterwards disposed of all his lands, this estate would have passed by that will. I thought it had been long established, that where the same person has the inheritance and the term in himself, though he has in one the equitable interest, and the legal estate in the other, the inheritance draws to itself the term, and makes it attendant. That appears from *Whitchurch v. Whitchurch*, *Goodright and Shales*, and many other cases. Declare the heir at law entitled to the premises described in the term.”

When a  
Term is in  
Gross.

22. The trust of a term for years may however belong to the person seised of, or entitled to, the inheritance, and yet the term may not be attendant. For

**Where** a person indicates in any manner an intention of separating a term from the inheritance, it will be considered as a term in gross.

**23.** A. being seised in fee, demised his estate to a trustee for 99 years, in trust for himself and his wife for their lives, and the life of the survivor, and afterwards in trust for the heirs of their bodies; in default of such issue, to the heirs of the body of the husband, remainder to the heirs of the survivor. They had issue a son; the husband died; after which the son died in the lifetime of his mother, who took out administration to her husband and son, and assigned the term.

Hayter v.  
Rodd, 1 P.  
Wms. 362.

After the death of the wife, it was contended by the heir of A. that all the trusts of this term either became void by accident, or were so in their creation; so that the term had no subsistence for the benefit of the personal representatives of any of the parties; but should be considered as attendant on the inheritance. It was, however, decreed by Sir J. Jekyll, that this term should not be attendant on the inheritance; for that the party who raised it, and had power to sever it from the inheritance, showed his intention to do so, by limiting the trust to the survivor of him and his wife, and the heirs of the survivor; which, though it was a void limitation, yet sufficed to show his intent to sever such term from the reversion.

**24.** Where there is an intervening legal estate, and beneficial interest, between the term and the inheritance; the term will be considered as a term in gross; because in that case it would not merge in the inheritance.

**25.** Sir A. Chadwick purchased an estate in fee simple from Mrs. Rudger. There being an outstanding term in a trustee, a derivative lease of it was

Scott v.  
Fenhouillet,  
1 Bro. R. 69,

granted to a trustee for Sir A. C., with a nominal reversion of eleven days to the trustee of Mrs. R. The question was, whether this term was in gross, or attendant.

Lord Thurlow said, every term standing out was, at law, a term in gross. If it was different in equity, it must be by affecting the person holding the term, with a trust, to attend the inheritance. This might be by two ways; by express declaration; and then, whether the term would, or would not merge, and whether the reversion were real, or only nominal, it must be attendant on the inheritance. Here it was not upon express declaration; then it must arise from implication of law, founded on the statute of frauds, which forbids any trust, except by writing or implication of law. It was said to be extremely plain that Sir A. C. meant to consolidate the interests: this was begging the question. It was true, he meant to take the largest interest he could; but it was by no means apparent that he meant to consolidate the interests. *He laid no stress on the days of reversion, for it was meant only as a nominal reversion: during that time the rent would be to the original lessor; but they did not mean to reserve a substantial interest.*

It would be necessary there should be an express trust to make this attendant on the inheritance. The transaction did not supply a necessary construction of law. It was a very nice and new point, whether the intent to purchase the whole interest was sufficient to make the term attendant upon the inheritance. *The impossibility he was under of purchasing the whole, rendered an express declaration necessary to make it attend the inheritance.*

Law of Vend.  
3d ed. 317.  
9 Ves. 510.  
Collect. Jur.  
v. 2. 297.

26. Mr. Sugden has observed on this case, that it seemed impossible to reconcile those parts of the judgement which are printed in Italics. But that it

appeared from an opinion of Mr. Fearne's, in consequence of which the cause was reheard, that rents were reserved upon the leases granted by the trustees to Sir A. C., and the usual covenants were entered into by him; the trustees being restrained to that mode of making a title by their trust, which required a reservation of rent, and the usual covenants: this fact at once reconciled every part of the judgement. Lord Thurlow was of opinion, that the reversion itself was immaterial; but that the rents reserved by the leases rendered an express declaration necessary, to make the terms attend the inheritance. Mr. Fearne was also of opinion, that the terms would not be attendant, if there was any intervening estate, and beneficial interest, in any third person; to divide the ownership of the term from the inheritance. But as he was told that the rents reserved to the trustees upon the terms, were afterwards purchased by Sir A. C., he thought the terms did attend the inheritance, although there was not an express declaration for that purpose; and he expressly delivered his opinion, subject to this fact, which he had learned from verbal information only. By Lord Thurlow's decree on the rehearing, it appears clearly that the rents were not purchased; and consequently that Mr. Fearne was misinformed.

27. In the case of Willoughby v. Willoughby, Lord Hardwicke says—"A term attendant on the inheritance may be disannexed, and turned into a term in gross, by the absolute owner of the inheritance; and so it is admitted by Serjeant Maynard in the Duke of Norfolk's case: or it may be made to become a term in gross, upon a contingency; according to the resolution in that case."

A Term Attendant may become a Term in Gross.

3 Cha. Ca. 46.  
Tit. 38. c. 19.

28. So it is said by Lord Com<sup>r</sup> Raymond, that where 9 Mod. 127.  
a man has a term for years, which, by intendment of

law only, attends the inheritance, certainly he has a power to sever such a term from the inheritance, if he should assign it to one man, and mortgage the inheritance to another; in such case the term would not attend the inheritance, but become a term in gross.

A Term attendant is Part of the Inheritance.  
1 Vent. 194.  
Collect. Jur. V. 1. 297.

29. Terms attendant on the inheritance are considered as absolutely annexed to the inheritance, and constituting part of it; and are therefore not subject to those rules by which terms in gross are governed. They follow the descent to the heir, and all alienations made by him. They are capable of being entailed, and limited over after a general failure of issue, provided the inheritance on which they are attendant is limited in the same manner. And where, in cases of this kind, a common recovery is suffered of the inheritance, it will bar the entail, and remainders over of the term, as well as those of the freehold; for the term can no longer attend an estate tail which is destroyed, nor can the trustee, who is but an instrument to protect others, have the term to his own use; so that it must thenceforth attend on the inheritance in fee.

1 Term R. 766.

Tit. 38. c. 5.

30. A term attendant on the inheritance is so fully considered as part of the inheritance, and not as a chattel real, that it does not pass by a will of chattels, but only by a will executed in such a manner as is necessary to pass real estates.

Is real Assets.

Thurston v. Att. Gen.  
1 Vern. 340.

31. A term attendant on the inheritance is real assets, in the hands of the heir, for payment of all such debts as are chargeable on the inheritance; because it is annexed to the inheritance, which is real assets. Where the inheritance is in trustees, and a person has a term in his own right, which is limited to attend the inheritance, and dies indebted; the term will be liable to his debts; for it is assets at law, and equity follows the law.

Dowse v. Derival,  
1 Vern. 104.

**32.** It was determined, in the case of the Attorney General v. Sir G. Sands, that the trust of a term attendant on the inheritance was not forfeited by the attainder for felony of the *cestui que trust*; because it was no more than an accessory to the inheritance, which was not forfeited.

Not forfeited for Felony. ante, c. 2. § 28.

**33.** One of the great objects of the common law, is to protect and secure honest purchasers. It is to this principle that fines and nonclaim, descents which take away entries, and collateral warranties, owe their origin and effect. The courts of equity, whose duty it is to follow the common law, soon adopted the same doctrine; and laid it down as a rule, that an honest purchaser, without notice of any defect in his title, or of any incumbrance on the estate, at the time of his purchase, shall not have his title impeached in equity; neither shall he be compelled to discover any writings or other things, which may weaken his title: nor will the Court of Chancery take any advantage from him, by which he may defend himself at law.

Trust Terms protect Purchasers from Mesne Incumbrances.

1 Ab. Eq. 333. 2 P. Wms. 491.

Shirley v. Fagg, 1 Cha. Ca. 68. 1 Vern. 52. Jerrard v. Saunders, 2 Ves. Jun. 454.

**34.** In consequence of these principles, it has been long settled by the Court of Chancery, that where a person purchases an estate, without having notice, at the time of his purchase, of any incumbrance affecting it; if he afterwards finds out that there are incumbrances, and upon such discovery, obtains an assignment of a prior outstanding term for years, whether in gross or attendant, to a trustee for himself; the Court of Chancery will not interfere, to set aside such a term, though it be a satisfied one; so that the purchaser, having a good title at law, by means of the term, will be thereby secured from such mesne incumbrance.

Treat. of Eq. B. 3. c. 3. § 1, 2, 3.

**35.** The reason is, that the circumstance of his purchasing without notice gives him equal equity with

Vide Wortley v. Birkhead, Tit. 15. c. 5.



Francis, 61.

Finch's R.  
103.

the mesne incumbrancer ; and by obtaining an assignment of a prior term, he acquires the legal estate ; so that he comes within the maxim, that where equity is equal, the law must prevail. Besides, the mesne incumbrancer having only a title in equity, cannot prevail against one who has an equal title in equity, and also the legal estate ; it being a maxim in Chancery, that *in aequali jure melior est conditio possidentis*. Lord Nottingham has said, that precedents of this kind are very ancient and numerous, where the Court has refused to give assistance against a purchaser, either in favour of the heir or the widow, the fatherless or creditors ; or to one purchaser against another. \*

---

\* Lord Hardwicke has thus explained this doctrine : “ As to the equity of this Court, that a third incumbrancer, having taken his security or mortgage without notice of the second incumbrance, and then, being *puise*, taking in the first incumbrance, shall squeeze out, and have satisfaction before the second. That equity is certainly established in general, and was so in *Marsh v. Lee*, (Tit. 15. c. 5. § 29.) by a very solemn determination by Lord Hale, who gave it the term of the creditor's *tabula in naufragio* : that is the leading case. Perhaps it might be going a good way at first ; but it has been followed ever since, and I believe was rightly settled, only on this foundation, by the particular constitution of the law of this country. It could not happen in any other country but this, because the jurisdiction of law and equity is administered here, in different courts, and creates different kinds of rights in estates. As courts of equity break in upon the common law, where necessity and conscience require it, still they allow superior force and strength to a legal title to estates ; therefore, when there is a legal title, and equity of one side, this Court never thought fit that by reason of a prior equity against a man who had a legal title, that man should be hurt ; and this by reason of that force this Court necessarily and rightly allows to the common law, and to legal titles. But if this had happened in any other country, it could never have been made a question. For if the law and equity are administered by the same jurisdiction, the rule, *qui prior est tempore, potior est in jure*, must hold. 2 Vesey, 573.



36. In the case of Willoughby v. Willoughby, Lord <sup>1 Term R.</sup> Hardwicke, after stating the origin and nature of <sup>763.</sup> trust terms for years, proceeds in these words:—

“ What kind of grantee or owner of the inheritance <sup>ante, § 7.</sup> is entitled in this Court to the protection of such a term? or in other words, in whose hands such a term shall be allowed to protect the inheritance? In the first place, he must be a purchaser for a price paid, or for a valuable consideration; he must be a purchaser *bonæ fidei*, not affected with any fraud or collusion; he must be a purchaser without notice of the prior conveyance, or of the prior charge or incumbrance; for notice makes him come in fraudulently. If he has no notice, and happens to take a defective conveyance of the inheritance; defective either by reason of some prior conveyance, or of some prior charge or incumbrance; and if he also take an assignment of the term to a trustee for him; or to himself, where he takes the conveyance of the inheritance to his trustee; in both these cases he shall have the benefit of the term to protect him. That is, he may make use of the legal estate of the term to defend his possession; or if he has lost the possession, to recover it at common law, notwithstanding that his adversary may at law have the strict title to the inheritance. This made me say, that in those cases the Court often disannexes the trust of the term from the legal fee; but still in support of right. For if a man come in fairly and *bonâ fide*, and has paid a price for the land, and acquired an estate in it, which the law will support, (a plank by which at law he may save himself from sinking), there can be no ground in equity or conscience to take it from him. This is the meaning of what is generally expressed by saying, that where a man has

both law and equity on his side, he shall not be hurt in a court of equity. It was once doubted, whether, if the term were vested in a third person, a trustee generally, and not in the party himself, he should be allowed the benefit of it in equity; because the Court ought to determine for whom the stranger was a trustee; and then the rule is, *qui prior est tempore, potior est jure*. But this was settled by Lord Cowper, in the case of Wilker v. Boddington. He lays it down to be a rule in equity, that where a man is a purchaser for a valuable consideration, without notice, he shall not be annoyed in equity; not only where he has a prior legal estate, but where he has a better right to call for the legal estate than his adversary."

2 Vern. 599.

37. Where a term for years is vested in a trustee, upon an express trust, a purchaser shall not protect himself by taking an assignment of such term, after notice of the trust.

Saunders v. Dehew,  
2 Vern. 271.

38. Ann Bayley being possessed of a term for years, made a voluntary settlement thereof, in trust for herself for life, remainder to her daughter Isabella for life, remainder to her children. Isabella mortgaged the lands in question for £200 to the plaintiff, who pretended he had no notice of the settlement; but hearing of it after, he got an assignment of the term from the trustees.

*Per cur.*—Though a purchaser may buy in an incumbrance, or lay hold of any plank to protect himself, yet he shall not protect himself by the taking a conveyance from a trustee, after he had notice of the trust. For by taking a conveyance with notice of the trust, he himself becomes the trustee; and must not, to get a plank to save himself, be guilty of a breach of trust.

Vide Tit. 15.  
c. 5.

39. An assignment of a term for years will not protect a purchaser from a crown debt; of which an account will be given hereafter.

Tit. 32. c. 26.

40. A term for years will protect a purchaser for a valuable consideration against the claim of dower: although such purchaser had notice of the marriage at the time of his purchase.

And also  
from Dower.

41. Lady Radnor's husband was seised in tail of the lands in question. But there was a term of 99 years prior to his estate, which was created for the performance of several trusts in the Earl of Warwick's will, all which were performed, and after, in trust to attend the inheritance. Lord Radnor having barred the entail, sold the estate to Vandebendy; and assigned the term to a trustee for him. After the death of Lord Radnor, his widow recovered dower, with a *cessat executio* during the term: and brought her bill in the Court of Chancery to have the term removed, that she might have the benefit of her judgement at law. Lord C. Jeffries inclined to give relief; but Lord Somers held, that this being against a purchaser, equity ought not to give any relief; and dismissed the bill.

Radnor v.  
Vandebendy,  
Show. Parl.  
Ca. 69.

On an appeal to the House of Lords, it was argued for Lady Radnor, that equity did entitle her to the third of this term. That a tenant by the curtesy would be entitled to it, and by the same reason a tenant in dower. That the term was to attend all the estates created by Lord Warwick's will, and in trust for such persons as should claim under it; which the appellant did, as well as the respondent. That the purchaser had notice of the incumbrance of dower, the vendor being married when he sold the estate; and that Lady Radnor claimed under her husband, who had the benefit of the whole trust.

On the other side it was said, that dower was an interest or right at the common law only; that no title could be maintained to dower, but where the common law gave it; and if a term were in being, no woman was ever let in, until after the determination of that term. That this was the first pretence set up for dower in equity. The right was only to the thirds of the rent reserved on any term. That it had always been the opinion of conveyancers, that a term or statute prevented dower: and that the consequence of an alteration would be much more dangerous than the continuance of the old rules. The decree was affirmed.

42. The doctrine established in this case is contrary to the general principles of equity, which has never extended its protection in any other instance to purchasers with notice of incumbrances, at the time of their purchase. The true and only reason on which it was founded, was the silent uniform course of practice, uninterrupted, but at the same time unsupported, by legal decisions: an opinion having been generally adopted by the conveyancers, that a satisfied term would protect a purchaser from the claim of dower; and many estates having been purchased under this opinion. It is now, however, fully established, that a purchaser for a valuable consideration may, by the assignment of an outstanding term to a trustee, protect himself against the claim of dower.

Swannock v. Lifford.  
1 Inst. 208 a.  
n. 1.  
Hill v. Adams,  
2 Atk. 208.  
S. C.  
Wynn v. Williams,  
5 Ves. 134.  
10 Ves. 271.

Must be assigned to a Trustee for the Purchaser.

43. A term standing out in a trustee to attend the inheritance, will not however protect a purchaser from the claim of dower, unless it is actually assigned to a trustee for him.

Maundrell v. Maundrell,  
7 Ves. 567.

44. R. M. being seised in fee of certain lands, with an outstanding term vested in a trustee, upon an

**express** trust to attend the inheritance, conveyed the **estate** to a purchaser for a valuable consideration ; **but** no assignment of the term was made.

Upon the death of R. M. his widow claimed dower in Chancery ; the purchaser contended that she was barred by the term.

Sir W. Grant, sitting for the Lord Chancellor, declared his opinion to be, that without an assignment to a trustee for the purchaser, the term did not exclude the claim to dower. He observed, that at law all terms were considered as terms in gross ; therefore every existing term, without regard to the purpose for which it was created, prevented a dowress from having any legal benefit from her recovery in dower, for she recovered with stay of execution during the term. But equity regarded the purpose for which the term was created and subsisted ; and if it was only for the benefit of the owner of the inheritance, it was considered as part of the inheritance ; not indeed absolutely merged, but so attendant upon, as to follow and accompany it, and every right and interest growing out of it, either by operation of law, or by voluntary agreement of the parties. Equity ought not therefore to permit such a term to be in any case used against the owner, either of the whole or of a part of the inheritance ; for the uses adapted and accommodated themselves to all the interests which arose out of that inheritance ; with which, in contemplation of equity, the term for most purposes was considered as incorporated. Every description therefore of ownership should, in its order, design, and proportion, have a use in the term, commensurable with the interest existing in the inheritance. Therefore when dower arose, the term, in a proportion, was just as much attendant upon the interest

*infra*, § 46.

growing out of the inheritance, as before it was attendant upon the inheritance during the husband's life. The heir therefore, though he could avail himself of the term at law, was not allowed in equity to defeat the widow's claim to dower; for having a certain quantity of interest, equity must consider her as having a correspondent interest in the term. When the husband conveyed to a purchaser, and the wife did not by fine join, nothing passed but the estate the husband had, that is, an estate subject to dower; the right to dower remained just where it was; the purchaser stood precisely in the place of the husband. The outstanding term would accompany the inheritance, thus conveyed, in the mode and manner in which it was attendant upon the same inheritance before it was conveyed. The term being a mere accessory, the operation of the conveyance was purely derivative and consequential. It was not possible that a greater interest could be incidentally acquired under the term, than directly in the freehold. That the whole doctrine upon this subject was discussed by Lord Hardwicke in *Willoughby v. Willoughby*, in which he noticed the opinion of some conveyancers, that where there was a term, of which the trust was already declared to attend the inheritance, it was not necessary to disturb it, and take an assignment to new trustees; and showed that not to be generally true. But if there were antecedent incumbrances, nothing but an assignment could protect against them; and he conceived dower to be such an interest as could be guarded against only by an assignment.

10 Ves. 246.

Upon a rehearing before Lord Eldon, it appeared that neither the deeds creating or assigning the term, were delivered to the purchaser. He concurred in opinion with the Master of the Rolls.

45. The doctrine that an outstanding term of years shall protect a purchaser from the claim of dower, was carried still farther: for it was determined that a satisfied term should protect an heir at law from dower. This was however soon over-ruled; and it was resolved, that an outstanding term should not protect an heir from dower.

A Term will not protect the Heir against Dower.

*Brown v. Gibbs, 2 P. Wms. 707.*

46. A term was raised in Black Acre, in trust to indemnify a person against incumbrances that might affect White Acre, which he had purchased. The defendant Lady Williams brought a writ of dower of Black Acre against the plaintiff, who was an infant; his guardian had let her take judgment at law, without setting up the term, or taking any notice of it. So the bill was brought by the infant heir, to be relieved against the judgment.

*Wray v. Williams, Prec. in Cha. 151.*

It was said, by Lord K. Wright, that this case was the same with Lady Radnor's; and if she could not be relieved as plaintiff, it must be for want of equity; therefore, the plaintiff must be relieved against her, when she was defendant. And Lady Radnor's case having been affirmed in the House of Lords, the authority was so great that it could not be got over.

At a rehearing of this cause before Lord Harcourt, Lady Williams's counsel insisted that the heir, who was but a volunteer, should not in equity, be relieved against the dowress; and that this case was different from that of Lady Radnor, in regard Vandebendy was a purchaser. To which it was answered, that if Lady Williams had been plaintiff in the original bill in equity, she could not have been relieved; as the term must have subsisted, for the benefit of the heir at law. That this was the same in reason with Lady Radnor's case; that the term was prior to the marriage, and so the husband only seised of the reversion.

*1 P. Wms. 137.*



in fee during the coverture. That as to Vandebendy's being a purchaser, he was so with full notice of dower, and got in the term to protect himself against the dowress; and therefore having notice, was to be considered as a volunteer.

The decree was reversed; and it was ordered that the plaintiff Lady Williams, having recovered dower at law, the trust term should not stand in her way in equity.

ante, § 42.

47. Lord Harcourt's doctrine has been fully assented to by Lord Hardwicke, who, in the case of *Swannock v. Lifford*, said, "If the husband dies, and there is a satisfied term continuing, the wife would be entitled to come into this Court, against the heir, to set that term out of the way, in order to have the benefit of her dower."

Nor the Assignees of a Bankrupt.

*Squire v. Compton*,  
9 Vin. Ab.  
227.

48. In a case in Chancery, 10 Geo. I., stated by Mr. Viner, the question was, whether the assignees of a bankrupt, by taking an assignment of a mortgage term, prior to the title of dower, should protect their estate from dower. It was insisted that the creditors and assignees stood only in the place of the bankrupt; and since such an assignment to the bankrupt himself, or his heir, would not protect the estate from dower, in the hands of the heir, neither should it protect the estate in the hands of the creditors of the bankrupt, or the assignees. That this differed the case from that of *Radnor v. Vandebendy*, where it was held that such a prior term should protect the estate from dower, in the hands of a purchaser. It was decreed that the widow should be let into her dower.

Neither Jointure nor Curtesy barred by a Term.

49. It has been stated, that the Court of Chancery will set aside a term for years in favour of a jointress. A tenant by the curtesy is also entitled to the aid of



equity against a trust term, assigned to attend the inheritance, and set up against him by the heir. Tit. 7. c. 2.

50. The plaintiff, as tenant by the curtesy, brought his bill to be relieved against a term for years, that was assigned in trust to attend the inheritance, and had been set up by the heir at law, in bar to his title. Decreed, that the term should not be made use of against him by the heir at law. Snell v. Clay, 2 Vern. 324.

51. In consequence of the doctrine stated in ch. ii. § 37. if a defendant in ejectment can show that there is an outstanding term for years, vested in a third person, to the possession of which the plaintiff is not entitled, he cannot recover. So where a defendant can show that there is an outstanding term, of which the trusts are not completely satisfied; this will also operate as a bar to the plaintiff. Where a Term is a Bar in Ejectment.

52. Lord Mansfield held, that though there was an unsatisfied outstanding term, yet if the plaintiff admitted the charge for which the term was created, and only claimed subject to such charge, the trustees of the term not asserting their right, he should recover. This doctrine was, however, rejected by Lord Kenyon; who held that a satisfied term might be presumed to have been surrendered. But that an unsatisfied term, raised for the purpose of securing an annuity, might be set up, during the life of the annuitant, as a bar to a plaintiff in ejectment, even though he claim subject to the charge. Doe v. Pegg, 1 Term R. 758. n.

53. In another case, Lord Kenyon directed a jury to presume, that an old satisfied term was surrendered; saying, that he grounded himself upon the doctrine laid down by Lord Mansfield in the case of Lade v. Holford; which was not, as had been supposed, that an ejectment might be maintained upon a mere equitable title, for that would remove ancient Doe v. Staple, 2 Term R. 684.

Doe v. Sybourn, 7 Term R. 2.

Bull. N P. 110.

ante, c. 2.  
§ 40.

land-marks in the law, and create great confusion ; but that in all cases where trustees ought to convey to the beneficial owner, he would leave it to the jury to presume, where such presumption might be reasonably made, that they had conveyed accordingly ; in order to prevent a just title from being defeated by a matter of form.

Goodtitle v.  
Jones,  
7 Term R.  
47.

54. In a subsequent case, he said, that though, under certain circumstances, a jury might presume a satisfied term to have been surrendered ; yet if no such presumption was made, and it appeared in a special verdict in ejectment, that such a term was still outstanding in a trustee, who was not joined in bringing the ejectment, the *cestui que trust* could not recover.

Doe v. Scott,  
11 East. 478.

55. Where an old mortgage term of 1,000 years, created in 1727, was recognized in a marriage settlement of the owner of the inheritance in 1751, by which a sum of money was appropriated to its discharge ; and no further notice of it was had till 1802 ; when a deed to which the then owner of the inheritance, and the representatives of the termors were parties, reciting that the term was still subsisting, conveyed it to others, to secure a mortgage : Mr. Baron Thompson, at the trial, and the Court of K. B. upon a motion to set aside the verdict, held that it could not be presumed to have been surrendered against the owner of the inheritance, who was interested in upholding it.

## TITLE XII.

## TRUST.

## CHAPTER IV.

*Of the Estate and Duty of Trustees.*

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                 |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| 1. <i>Estate of Trustees.</i><br>4. <i>Duty of Trustees.</i><br>9. <i>Their Acts shall not prejudice the Trust.</i><br>10. <i>Exception—Conveyance without Notice.</i><br>15. <i>Where Purchasers are bound to see Trusts performed.</i><br>22. <i>Where they are not bound.</i><br>30. <i>Where the Receipt of the Trustee is sufficient.</i><br>36. <i>Trustees have equal Power, &amp;c.</i> | 38. <i>Can derive no Benefit from the Trust.</i><br>39. <i>Bound to reimburse the Cestui que trust.</i><br>42. <i>Have no Allowance for Trouble.</i><br>44. <i>But allowed all Costs and Expences.</i><br>48. <i>Trustees seldom permitted to purchase the Trust Estate.</i><br>58. <i>Refusing to act, must release or disclaim.</i><br>59. <i>Discharged, and others appointed.</i> |
|-------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## SECTION 1.

**A** TRUST being considered, in some respects, as Estate of Trustees. similar to a use before the statute 27 Hen. VIII. it follows that trustees are nearly in the same situation as feoffees to uses formerly were. But the Court of Chancery, in the exercise of their jurisdiction over trusts, has avoided the mischiefs that arose from uses.

2. One of the principal of these was, that the estates of the feoffees to uses became subject to all their legal incumbrances. But upon the establishment of trusts it was settled, that in equity the estate of the trustees shall not be subject to the specialty or judge- 1 P. Wms. 278.  
2 — 318.

Noell v.  
Jevon,  
2 Freem. 43.

ment debts of the trustee : to the dower of his wife, or the curtesy of the husband of a female trustee.

Carter R. 67.

Hard. 465.  
Lane, 39. 54.

3. Where a trustee is attainted of felony, the legal estate is forfeited ; but the *cestui que trust* is entitled to relief in equity. In the case of attainder for treason it does not appear to have been settled whether the *cestui que trust* has any remedy against the Crown. And where a trustee dies without heirs, by which the lands escheat, it is doubtful whether the lord is subject to the trust.

Duty of  
Trustees.  
Tit. 11. c. 2.

4. With respect to the duty of trustees, it is still held, in conformity to the old law of uses, that permanency of the profits, execution of estates, and defence of the land, are the three great properties of a trust. So that the Court of Chancery will compel trustees, 1. To permit the *cestui que trust* to receive the rents and profits of the land ; 2. To execute such conveyances as the *cestui que trust* shall direct. 3. To defend the title of the land in any court of law or equity.

ante, c. 2. § 6.

5. The necessity that the trustee should execute conveyances of the land, arises from this circumstance ; that as the legal estate is vested in him, and he is considered, in the courts of law, as the real owner, it follows, that although the *cestui que trust* can alone dispose of his equitable interest, yet he cannot convey the legal estate, without the concurrence of the trustee. But where the *cestui que trust* has the absolute interest in the trust, he can compel the trustee to convey the legal estate, either to himself, or to any other person in fee simple.

2 P. Wms.  
134.

6. The *cestui que trust* is only entitled to a conveyance where the whole of the trust belongs to him. For if lands are devised to trustees, in trust to pay annuities ; and subject thereto, in trust for A. B. ; the

legal estate cannot be taken from the trustees while the annuities are subsisting.

7. Where there is a *cestui que trust* in tail, he may call on the trustee to convey the legal estate to him. And no one can afterwards prevent him from barring the entail; or the trustee may join with the *cestui que trust* in barring the entail. But where the *cestui que trust* is only entitled to an estate tail, the trustee ought not to convey to him in fee simple.

1 Ab. Eq.  
384.  
2 P. Wms.  
134.  
Boteler v.  
Allington,  
1 Bro. R. 72.

8. Infant trustees are enabled, by statute 7 Ann. c. 19, to convey lands whereof they are seised in trust, under the direction of the Court of Chancery.

Tit. 32. c. 2.

9. It is a rule in equity, that no act of a trustee shall prejudice the *cestui que trust*; nor shall the forbearance of trustees, in not doing what it was their duty to have done, affect the *cestui que trust*; since in that case it would be in the power of trustees, by delaying to do their duty, to affect the rights of other persons. Wherefore the rule in all such cases is, that what ought to have been done shall be considered as done. And so powerful is this rule, as to alter the very nature of things; to make money land, and land money.

Their Acts  
shall not pre-  
judice the  
Trust.  
3 P. Wms.  
215.  
2 — 706.

10. There is however one exception to this rule; for if a trustee be in the actual possession of the estate, which however is a case that seldom happens; and conveys it, for a valuable consideration, to a purchaser, who has no notice of the trust, such purchaser will be entitled to hold the estate against the *cestui que trust*: because confidence in the person is still deemed necessary to a trust; and it is a rule in equity, that an innocent person shall not, in general, have his title impeached.

Allen v. Sayer,  
Tit. 35. c. 14.

Exception—  
Conveyance  
without  
Notice.

Millard's  
Case.  
2 Freem. 43.

11. If a trustee mortgages the estate to a person who has no notice of the trust, the mortgagee will be

1 P. Wms.  
278.

allowed to hold against the *cestui que trust*; because mortgagees are considered as purchasers; and as having a specific lien on the estate: whereas it has been observed that estates held in trust are not subject to the specialty or judgement debts of the trustee.

**Bovey v. Smith,**  
Tit. 35. c. 14.

12. If a trustee sells to a stranger, who has no notice of the trust, and afterwards repurchases from the stranger for a valuable consideration, he will again become liable to the trust.

**Mansell v. Mansell,**  
Tit. 16. c. 7.  
3 Atk. 238.

13. Where a purchaser has notice of the trust, though he pays a valuable consideration, he shall be subject to it. For, as Lord Hardwicke says, “If a person will purchase with notice of another’s right, his giving a consideration will not avail him; for he throws away his money voluntarily, and of his own free will.”

2 Salk. 680.  
1 Vern. 149.

14. So if a trustee conveys an estate to a stranger, without any consideration; though the person to whom it is conveyed, has no notice of the trust, yet he will be liable to it. \*

Where Purchasers are bound to see Trusts performed.

15. We have seen that a purchase from a trustee, with notice of the trust, is a fraud, even though the purchaser should pay a valuable consideration. Where a trustee is authorized to sell, such a purchase cannot be fraudulent: there are, however, many cases in which a purchaser, with notice of a trust, is answerable for the trustee, and therefore bound to see that his money is applied in execution of the trust.

**Dunch v. Kent,**  
1 Vern. 260.  
**Spalding v. Shalmer,**  
Id. 301.

16. Thus, where a person conveys or devises his estate to trustees, upon trust to sell it, for payment of certain debts specified in the deed or will, or in

---

\* With respect to trustees appointed to preserve contingent remainders, their duty will be stated in Tit. 16. *Remainder*.

any schedule thereto annexed; a purchaser will in that case be bound to see that his money is applied in payment of those debts.

17. So where a decree was made for the sale of mortgage of an estate; with a direction that the money should be applied in payment of debts which were ascertained by the report of the Master; Lord Hardwicke held, that a purchaser under that decree, was bound to see to the application of his money. Lloyd v. Baldwin,  
1 Ves. 173.

18. Legacies stand upon the same ground, as specified or scheduled debts; therefore a purchaser must see that his money is applied in payment of them.

19. It is the same where estates are conveyed or devised to trustees, upon trust to sell, and apply the money for any particular or specific purpose: a purchaser of the estate, with notice of the trust, is bound to see to the application of the money. For if the purposes to which it is directed are not fulfilled by the trustees, the estate will still be liable to them, in the hands of the purchaser.

20. Lands were vested in trustees by act of parliament, to raise a sum of money to rebuild a printing house. It was decreed that the mortgagee was bound to see the money applied accordingly. Cottrell v. Hampton,  
2 Vern. 5.

21. It is a very common practice to direct the money arising from the sale of lands, to be invested in the funds in the names of the trustees, upon several trusts; nor does it appear to have ever been judicially settled, to what extent a purchaser is bound to see to the performance of such a trust. In a case of this kind, the late Mr. Booth says—"I am of opinion that all that will be incumbent on the purchaser to see done in this case, will be to see that the trustees do invest the purchase money in their own names in some of the public stocks or funds, or Cases and Opin. V. 2.  
114.

on government securities. And in such case, the purchaser will not be answerable for any non-application (after such investing of the money) of any monies which may arise by the dividends or interest, or by any disposition of such funds, stocks, or securities: it not being possible that the testator should expect, from any purchaser, any further degree of care or circumspection, than during the time that the transaction for the purchase was carrying on. And therefore the testator must be supposed to place his sole confidence in the trustees. And this is the settled practice in these cases. And I have often advised so much, and no more, to be done; and particularly in the case of the trustees under the Duchess of Marlborough's will." Mr. Wilbraham is said to have been of the same opinion.

Where they  
are not  
bound,  
1 Vern. 261.  
Smith v.  
Guyon,  
1 Bro. R.  
186.  
Williamson  
v. Curtis,  
3 Bro. R. 96.  
Amb. 677.  
6 Ves. 654. n.  
7 — 323.

22. On the other hand, it has long been fully established, that where lands are vested in trustees to be sold, for payment of debts generally, without any specification of such debts, a purchaser is not bound to see to the application of his purchase money.

23. It is the same where lands are charged with the payment of debts generally. Lord Eldon has said, that a charge is a devise of the estate, in substance and effect, *pro tanto*, upon trust to pay the debts. And in another case he said, it had been long settled, that where a man by deed or will charges, or orders an estate to be sold, for payment of debts generally, and then makes specific dispositions, the purchaser is not bound to see to the application.

24. It has been stated that a purchaser is bound to see to the payment of legacies. But where a trust is created for the payment of debts and legacies, a purchaser is not bound to see that his money is applied in payment of the legacies,



25. A person devised his real estates to trustees, upon trust to sell the same, and out of the money arising from such sale to pay his own and his father's debts and legacies. Lord Hardwicke said—"The subjecting the estate to the payment of legacies, will not make the purchaser answerable for the disposition of the money; because the legacies cannot be paid without the debts: and they are not specified."

Rogers v.  
Shellicorne,  
Amb. 188.

26. In a modern case Lord Thurlow said, that where debts and legacies are charged on lands, the purchaser will hold free from the claim of the legatees; for not being bound to see to the discharge of debts, he cannot be expected to see to the discharge of legacies; which cannot be paid till after the debts.

Jebb. v.  
Abbot,  
1 Bro. R.  
186. n. 2d ed.

27. Where a person devised his real estates to his executors, to be sold for payment of debts, in case his personal estate should prove deficient; it was held that a purchaser was not bound to inquire whether there was a deficiency of the personal estate or not. For if the personal estate was sufficient, yet he should hold the lands purchased, against the heir; and the heir should have his remedy against the executor. But if there be a *lis pendens* between the heir and executor, to have an account; it is sufficient notice in law, without actual notice of the suit; so that a purchaser takes it at his peril.

Culpeper v.  
Aston, 2 Cha.  
Ca. 115.  
Vide Fearn's  
Opin. 121.  
contra.

28. It has been long settled, that where lands are conveyed to trustees, in trust to sell and pay debts, if more is sold than is sufficient to pay the debts, that shall not turn to the prejudice of the purchaser; for he is not obliged to enter into the account; and the trustees cannot sell just as much as is sufficient to pay the debts.

1 Vern. 303.

Lutwych v.  
Winford,  
2 Bro. R. 248.

29. In a case where lands were directed by will to be sold for payment of debts; and a decree made in Chancery, that the estate should be sold for that purpose; a purchaser under the decree refused to complete his purchase, because more of the estate was sold than was necessary. Lord Thurlow said—  
“ If the Master, in selling the whole, has consulted the convenience of the estate; he has acted right. The power given to the trustees was to sell the whole, or such part as might be expedient. The Court has decreed in the same way; and the Master, with the consent of the parties interested, has sold the whole. A purchaser cannot come in to object to it.” The objection was over-ruled.

Where the  
Receipt of  
the Trustee  
is sufficient.

30. An opinion has long prevailed, that in all cases where land is vested in a trustee to be sold, the trustee is competent to give a discharge for the purchase money: that the rule affecting a purchaser with misapplication of the trust money, only applies where there is no hand appointed to receive it. As in the case of a specific charge on the lands, in the hands of the heir or devisee; there a purchaser dealing with such heir or devisee, is bound to see that such charge is satisfied. This opinion is founded on the following authorities.

Anon.  
1 Salk. 153.

31. A person limited an estate to trustees, for payment of debts and legacies. The trustees raised the whole money; and the heir prayed to have the land. This was opposed, because the trustees had not applied the money, but converted it to their own use; so that the debts and legacies remained unpaid. It was determined by the House of Lords, that the heir should have the land discharged; and the legatees should take their remedy against the trustees. For the estate was debtor for the debts and legacies,

But not for the faults of the trustees: therefore was only liable so long as the debts and legacies might be paid. Where the land had once borne its burthen, and the money was raised, it was discharged; and the trustees liable.

32. A purchaser objected to the title to an estate which was vested in a trustee, in trust to sell, and to divide the money amongst the children of certain persons; on the ground that he would be liable to encounter the inconveniences of seeing to the application of his purchase money. Lord Thurlow decreed a specific performance of the agreement; and refused to give the purchaser his costs.

*Cuthbert v. Baker, Trin. 1790. Sugd. Vend. 378. 3d ed.*

33. Lord Kenyon, when Master of the Rolls, inclined strongly to the opinion, that where trustees have power to sell, they must have the power incident to the character, namely, the power to give a discharge for the purchase money. And in a late case, where a purchaser objected to a title, on the ground that he was bound to see to the application of the money, Sir W. Grant over-ruled the objection upon another ground. But said—"I think the doctrine upon that point has been carried farther than any sound equitable principle will warrant. Where the act is a breach of duty in the trustee, it is very fit that those who deal with him should be affected by an act tending to defeat the trust of which they have notice. But where the sale is made by the trustee in performance of his duty, it seems extraordinary that he should not be able to do what one should think incidental to the right exercise of his power: that is, to give a valid discharge for the purchase money.

*4 Ves. 99.*

*Balfour v. Welland, 16 Ves. 151.*

34. It is the usual practice to insert a clause in all deeds and wills, by which trustees are enabled to

sell lands, declaring that their receipts shall be a sufficient discharge to the purchasers; who shall not be answerable or accountable for the misapplication or non-application of the purchase money. And it is fully settled, that where a clause of this kind is inserted in a deed or will, by which trusts are created, trustees may make a good title to a purchaser. But in a case of this kind, all the trustees must join in the receipt.

Crewe v.  
Dicken,  
4 Ves. 97.

35. Mrs. Crewe conveyed an estate to the use of herself for life, remainder to three persons, their heirs and assigns, in trust to sell; with a proviso that the receipts of those three persons should be a sufficient discharge to the purchasers. One of the trustees died; another refusing to act, conveyed his interest to the remaining trustee, who sold the estate. The purchaser refused to take the title, unless the trustee who had conveyed his interest would join in the receipt for the purchase money, which he declined.

Lord Rosslyn said, he must allow the objection: if the trustee had renounced, he might dissent; for then the whole estate would have been in the remaining trustee. But according to the way they had managed it, he had accepted the trust, and conveyed away the estate. That part of the trust that consisted in the application of the money, he could not convey away. The purchaser taking the title with the knowledge of the trust, would be bound to see to the application of the money.

Trustees have  
equal Power,  
&c.

Fellows v.  
Mitchell.

1 P. Wms. 81.

Vide Treat.  
of Eq. B. 2.

c. 7. § 5.

36. Trustees have all equal power, interest, and authority; they cannot act separately, but must all join, both in conveyances and receipts. But although two trustees join in a receipt, where the money is in fact paid to one of them only, yet the trustee who

actually received the money will in general only be accountable.

37. In all deeds by which trusts are created, a clause is inserted, that each trustee shall be accountable for such sums only, as shall actually come to his hands. And it has been determined, in a modern case, that this does not bind the trustees as a covenant, but is a clause of indemnity : and the sense of it is this, that the trustees and their heirs shall not be accountable for more than they receive.

Bartlett v. Hodgson, 1 Term. R. 42.

38. The Court of Chancery will not in any case permit a trustee to derive any benefit from the trust. Therefore if a trustee compounds a debt, or buys it for less than is due upon it, he shall not derive any advantage to himself from such a transaction. But where a trustee releases or compounds a debt, if it appear to have been done for the benefit of the trust, the trustee will be excused.

Can derive no Benefit from the Trust.

3 P. Wms. 251. Forbes v. Ross, 1 Bro. R. 130.

39. Wherever trustees are guilty of a breach of trust, the Court of Chancery will compel them to reimburse the *cestui que trust* for any loss which he may have sustained. Thus if a trustee sells the estate, he will be compelled in equity to make a full compensation to the *cestui que trust* : and if a trustee conceals any act done by his co-trustee, which amounts to a breach of trust, he will thereby make himself equally liable.

Bound to reimburse the Cestui que Trust. Smith v. French, 2 Atk. 243.

Boardman v. Mossman, 1 Bro. R. 68.

40. Lord Hobart is said to have been of opinion, that an action at law might be maintained against a trustee for breach of trust. This is not consistent with Lord Hardwicke's definition of a trust ; namely, that it is such a confidence between parties, that no action at law will lie ; but is merely a case for the consideration of a court of equity. It is however observable that even in equity the *cestui que trust* is considered only as a

1 Ab. Eq. 384.

2 Atk. 612.

Forrest, 109.  
2 Atk. 19.  
Perry v.  
Philips,  
ante, c. 1.

simple contract creditor, in respect of such breach of trust ; unless the trustee has acknowledged the debt to the trust estate, under his hand and seal.

Montfort v.  
Cadogan,  
17 Ves. 485.

41. It is usual to insert in all deeds by which trusts are created, 'a clause that the trustees shall not be answerable for any misfortune, loss, or damage, which may happen in the execution of the trusts, unless they arise from their own wilful default. But courts of equity charge trustees, and also their representatives, with the consequences of a breach of trust, whether they derive a benefit from the trust or not.

Have no Al-  
lowance for  
Trouble.  
Treat. of Eq.  
B. 2. c. 7. § 3.

42. It is an established rule that a trustee shall have no allowance for his care and trouble in the execution of the trust ; for on pretences of this kind the trust estate might be impoverished ; besides the great difficulty there might be in adjusting the *quantum* of such allowances ; as one man's time may be more valuable than another's. Nor can there be any hardship in this ; because every person who is appointed a trustee, may choose whether he will accept the trust or not.

Ellison v.  
Airey,  
1 Ves. 112.

43. But in a case where there was a direction in a will that the trustees should be paid for their trouble, as well as expence ; and it being objected that this might be of general prejudice, Lord Hardwicke said, this was a legacy to the trustees, to whom the testator might give satisfaction, if he pleased. In Serjeant Hall's will, Sir Richard Hopkins's, and the Duchess of Marlborough's, there was a great allowance made to the trustees for their trouble, and no inconvenience : because it could carry it no farther than where there were particular directions. The Master was therefore directed to inquire what the trustees might reasonably deserve for their trouble.

44. A trustee will however be allowed all costs and expences which he has been put to in the execution of his trust; unless he has been guilty of improper conduct.

But allowed all Costs and Expences. Treat. of Eq. Id.

45. Thus if a trustee sues in Chancery for the trust estate, and obtains a decree, with costs; and afterwards the *cestui que trust* exhibits a bill against him for an account of the trust estate; the trustee will be allowed in his disbursements his full costs, and will not be concluded by the costs that were taxed.

Amand v. Bradburn, 2 Cha. Ca. 128. Trott v. Danson, 1 P. Wms. 780. 7 Bro. Parl. Ca. 266.

46. It is said by Lord King to be a rule that the *cestui que trust* ought to save the trustee harmless, as to all damages relating to the trust: therefore where a trustee has honestly and fairly, without any probability of being a gainer, laid down money, by which the *cestui que trust* is benefited, he ought to be repaid.

2 P. Wms. 455.

47. In all modern deeds whereby trusts are created, there is a clause authorizing the trustees to reimburse themselves all costs and expences which they shall be put to in the execution of their trust.

48. It was formerly held, that a trustee should not purchase any part of the trust estate for himself, on account of the dangerous consequences that might ensue from such a practice.

Trustees seldom permitted to purchase the Trust Estate.

Thus it was declared by Lord Hardwicke, that the Court of Chancery will not suffer a trustee to purchase the estate of the *cestui que trust*, during his minority; though the transaction were fair and honest, and as high, or a higher price given than any other person would give. This the Court had always discountenanced, upon account of the general inconvenience that might happen from bargains of this kind. But where there was a decree for sale of a

Davison v. Gardner, MSS. R. 1743.



trust estate, and an open bidding before the Master, there the Court had permitted the trustee to purchase ; for that was an open auction of the estate. At the same time, he said, the rule of the Court against trustees purchasing, did not extend to trusts for persons of full age.

Whelpdale  
v. Cookson,  
1 Ves. 9.

49. In another case, where on a devise to sell for payment of debts, the trustee himself purchased part ; Lord Hardwicke said, he would not allow it to stand good ; although another person, being the best bidder, bought it for him at a public sale ; for he knew the dangerous consequence. Nor was it enough for the trustee to say, you cannot prove any fraud ; as it was in his own power to conceal it. But if the majority of the creditors agreed to allow it, he should not be afraid of making the precedent.

Vide 6 Ves.  
628.

Killick v.  
Flexney,  
4 Bro. R.  
161.

50. A trustee, who had acted improperly in other respects, bought a lease, which was part of the trust property, at an appraisement ; and afterwards renewed it in his own name. Decreed, that he should be a trustee only, and account for what he purchased.

51. In a subsequent case it was held, there was no general rule that a trustee to sell should not himself be the purchaser ; but he should not thereby acquire a profit.

Whichcote  
v. Lawrence,  
3 Ves. Jun.  
740.

52. An estate was conveyed to six persons, in trust to sell for the benefit of creditors. The estate was put up to auction, and purchased by one of the trustees, who afterwards sold it at a profit. Upon a bill filed by some of the creditors, praying that this purchase by the trustee might be for the benefit of the creditors ; Lord Rosslyn said, it was a plain point of equity, and a principle of clear reasoning, that he who undertakes to act for another in any matter,



shall not, in the same matter, act for himself. Therefore a trustee to sell shall not gain any advantage by being himself the person to buy. He is not acting with that want of interest, that total absence of temptation, that duty imposed upon him, that he shall gain no profit. The consequence is beyond doubt, that in whatever shape that profit redounds to him, whether by management, which is the common way, or by superior good fortune, it is not fit that benefit should remain in him. It ought to be communicated to those whose interests, being put under his care, afforded him the means of gaining that advantage. The trustee was decreed to account for the profits, with costs. 8 Ves. 345.

53. In another case it was resolved, that where a trustee purchases the trust estate, however fair the transaction, it must be subject to an option in the *cestui que trust*, if he comes in a reasonable time, to have a resale.

54. A person devised his estate to two trustees, upon trust to sell. One of the trustees purchased part of the estate at auction. A bill was filed by the residuary legatees, praying that the sale might be set aside, and the premises resold. It appeared upon the evidence, that the sale was perfectly fair and open. Campbell v. Walker, 5 Ves. 678:

Sir R. P. Arden, M. R. said he would lay it down as a rule, that any trustee, purchasing the trust property, was liable to have the purchase set aside, if in any reasonable time the *cestui que trust* chose to say he was not satisfied. The trustee purchased, subject to that equity. And referred it to a Master to inquire whether it was for the benefit of the plaintiffs that the premises should be resold. If the Master should be of opinion that it would be for their benefit, then it was declared that they should be resold. 6 Ves. 625.

Coles v.  
Trecothick,  
9 Ves. 234.

55. In another case, however, Lord Eldon allowed of a purchase, under a trust for payment of debts, by the trustee, as agent for his father, both creditors in partnership, chiefly because the *cestui que trust* had full information, and the sole management of the sale; making surveys, settling the particulars, fixing the prices, &c. His Lordship said, that a *cestui que trust* may deal with his trustee, so that the trustee may become the purchaser of the estate. But though permitted, it was a transaction of great delicacy, and which the Court would watch with the utmost diligence; so much, that it was very hazardous for a trustee to engage in such a transaction. A trustee might buy from the *cestui que trust*, provided there was a distinct and clear contract, ascertained to be such, after a jealous and scrupulous examination of all the circumstances; that the *cestui que trust* intended the trustee should buy; and there was no fraud, no concealment, no advantage taken by the trustee, of information acquired by him in the character of trustee.

Morse v.  
Royal,  
12 Ves. 355.

56. In a subsequent case Lord Erskine confirmed a purchase made by a trustee from the *cestui que trust*, under particular circumstances, with the confirmation and acquiescence of the *cestui que trust*.

Ante, § 54.  
13 Ves. 601.

57. The case of Campbell v. Walker came before Lord Eldon, on an appeal from the Rolls, who affirmed the decree with costs; but said—"The principle has often been laid down, that a trustee for sale may be the purchaser in this sense; that he may contract with his *cestui que trust*; that with reference to the contract of purchase, they shall no longer stand in the relative situation of trustee and *cestui que trust*. And the trustee having, through the medium of that sort of bargain, evidently, distinctly, and

honestly proved that he had removed himself from the character of trustee, his purchase may be sustained."

58. Where a trustee refuses to accept a trust, the usual practice is to require him to release all his estate and interest to the other trustees; or to execute a deed of disclaimer. Where he releases, he is considered as having, in the first instance, accepted the trust; and therefore, as to that part of such trust as consists of personal confidence, he cannot transfer it to the other trustees.

Refusing to act, must release or disclaim.  
Tit. 32. c. 26.  
Crewe v. Dicken, ante, § 35.

59. It has been stated that the Court of Chancery will not suffer a trust to fail, for want of a proper trustee: therefore if a trustee refuses to accept of a trust, the Court will interpose, and either appoint a new trustee, or take upon itself the execution of the trust.

Discharged, and others appointed. ante, c. 1. § 91.

60. A person devised all his lands to two trustees, upon trust to sell and pay his debts. One of the trustees desired to relinquish the trust, and the other was willing to accept it. The Court of Chancery directed that the trustee, who desired to relinquish, should release to the other.

Travel v. Danvers, Finch, 380.

61. In a subsequent case the Court of Chancery removed a trustee, though he was willing to act: his co-trustees having refused to join with him in the execution of the trust.

Uvedale v. Ettrick. 2 Cha. Ca. 20.

62. In a late case a decree was made that a woman who was a trustee, but who had married a foreigner, should be discharged from the trust, though she denied any intention of quitting the kingdom, and desired to continue in the trust. The Court said there was great inconvenience in a married woman's being a trustee.

Lake v. Delambert, 4 Ves. 592.

63. In all modern deeds of trust, there is a proviso, that in case of any of the trustees dying, or being

desirous of relinquishing the trust, or becoming incapable of acting, a new trustee shall be appointed, either by the *cestui que trust*, or the other trustees; and that the property shall be conveyed to such new trustees, jointly with the remaining trustees. Where this clause is omitted, the Court of Chancery will appoint a new trustee.

Buchanan v.  
Hamilton,  
5 Ves. 722.

64. By a private act of parliament, estates were vested in three trustees, upon trust to sell, &c. Mr. Scott, one of the trustees, being appointed attorney-general of Upper Canada, executed a release. A bill was filed against the two remaining trustees, praying a reference to the Master to appoint a new trustee. It was said to be a common case; and the Court referred it to a Master to appoint a new trustee.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.















Stanford Law Library



3 6105 063 042 985

